

# KONJIKI NO WORD MASTER

---

## Chapter 100 After Half a Year

---

Upon leaving the desert, an immense forest lay in front of them.

“By the way, Aka-Loli” (Hiiro)

“What?” (Liliyn)

“I’m letting you be the guide, but I’m wondering, how long will it take to get to the 【Demon Capital】 ?” (Hiiro)

“Aa? Well, that place is our final destination. However, the demon continent is larger than you think. So be prepared because it will take quite a while to get there.” (Liliyn)

Apparently they had to stop at various locations before arriving at the 【Demon Capital】 . The demon continent is much larger than the other continents and contains many settlements. It is clear that, it will take them a very long time if they want to explore all of it.

Contrary to his words, Hiiro wasn’t in a rush to complete his journey, nor did he have any objections to Liliyn’s idea of wandering around the demon continent.

“I don’t care how many months it will take. It’s more whether or not it would be interesting.” (Hiiro)

“Hohou, Do you think it’s even possible to experience it all in a few months?” (Liliyn)

“ ..... Anyway, I said I’d leave it to you and I have no intentions of changing my mind.  
“ (Hiiro)

“I see, so you are ready to go, then we are leaving.” (Liliyn)

“Hey, don’t say things like that one after the other.” (Hiiro)

" Leave me alone! Wasn’t this all your idea!? " (Liliyn)

While talking and riding on Mikazuki, Hiiro seemed to have a bit of an attitude. As a result, Liliyn ended up getting angry and yelling at him.

" Nofofofofo! I am deeply moved. To be able to see ojousama so delighted. Nofofofo!"  
(Silva)

" Where did delighted come from! Are you asking for another piledriver, you Damned Pervert! " (Liliyn)

" Nofofofofo! That was harsh! " (Silva)

" W-we should all be nice to each other! " (Shamoe)

Hiiro lets out a small sigh.

" ... Let's go, Drool Bird. " (Hiiro)

" Kui... " (Mikazuki)

Hiiro ignored the shouts of the two people there with Liliyn and forged ahead. This convinced him that no matter what adventure lay ahead, it would not be peaceful.

( How long until we reach the 【Demon Capital】 )... (Hiiro)

While considering that, he looked up at the clear sky. Unexpectedly, he wondered whether or not the skies over the 『Humas』 and 『Gabranth』 continents had been as tranquil as this. Looking forward to the day he returns to those places, he continued his journey.

## Evila's Perspective

About half a year had passed since Hiiro's party left the 【Ashura Tribe's】 village.

And now, both the 『Humas』 and 『Evila』 had arrived at a major crossroads. Meanwhile in the 【Demon Capital Xaos】 , the ruler was having a meeting with the leaders of the 『Evila』 .

" Then, let us start the 『Evila』 conference. Naturally, we are here to let everyone discuss their position on the conference with the 『Humas』 which will happen two weeks from today. " (Kiria)

The one who indifferently declared that was the aide standing alone next to Demon Lord Eveam, Kiria. Although her face was unreadable, somehow there was a feeling of tension around her.

" At last! It has come to this. " (Eveam)

Eveam said thus with her eyes closed, emphasizing the heavy emotions in her voice. She slowly raised her eyelids, with her golden eyes fixed on the 『Cruel』 Brigade.

" If this conference goes smoothly...we will be one step closer to peace. " (Eveam)

"n~ That might be so, but My Queen ~m " (Shublarz )

It was Shublarz 《Rank 5》 who replied in a seductive tone while crossing her arms under her unrealistically full yet firm inhuman orbs.

" What's wrong? " (Eveam)

"Are you really sure it's safe? ~m " (Shublarz )

Everyone seemed to agree with Shublarz's words and looked to Eveam, waiting for her response.

" Of course it's risky. The conference will take place in the 『Humas』 continent, and the number of guards I can bring is limited. So, on the appointed day, only Aquinas, Kiria and Marione will accompany me to the conference with the 『Humas』 . " (Eveam)

" Well since the holders of 《Rank 1》 and 《Rank 2》 are going, along with the self-styled strongest aide Kiria-chan, then it might be safe after all. " (Greyald)

《Rank 6》 , the dark-skinned Greyald, said those words.

" By the wa~y, I wonder if Teckil has something to say about this? " (Shublarz)

Like usual, Teckil seemed to be absent this time.

" Well, his detailed report has been received. He heard that the king is planning something dangerous. " (Eveam)

" Wai...wait a minute. Is that really oka~y? " (Shublarz)

Shublarz's eyes opened in shock as she asked this.

" If it's about that, it's alright. Don't you agree, Kiria? " (Eveam)

" Yes, perhaps this is in regards to the previous matter, the reason why we are completely untrusted. Therefore, as soon as we attempt to do something, they will have a strategy to apprehend us immediately. However, if we don't do anything, they are unlikely to execute their plan. " (Kiria)

" And you rea~lly believe that? " (Shublarz)

Although it was a natural response for Shublarz, it was Marione who scoffed and denied those words.

" fun~, I don't know what the lowly 『Humas』 are hiding, but as the guard, I will put an end to them if by any chance I obtain information of what they are planning to do." (Marione)

" Ooh Very nicely said, I just hope you will not cause any trouble for Her Majesty when you're in the Humas continent. " (Greyald)

" Oi Greyald, do not say such careless things. " (Ornoth)

It was 《Rank 4》 , Ornoth, who chided him for his words.

" Yeah, yeah, but it would be nice if things weren't too boring, right? " (Greyald)

After saying this, he fell prostrate onto the table, maybe because things had become tiresome to handle. Laying there, it seemed he was done talking about this.

" I know Greyald is very worried. However, I believe in the 『Humas』 " (Eveam)  
No one showed any reaction to these words. Still, just for a little Eveam had a slightly

sad expression.

" And above all, I believe in all of you. No matter what happens, it'll be alright if everyone is with me. " (Eveam)

Although everyone kept quiet this time too, her fearless atmosphere was transferred to everyone else. Their expressions seemed to convey that goes without saying.

" It is clear that nothing will happen if we don't take the first step. I'm doubtful that this conference will lead immediately to peace but it will allow us to learn more about each other. Thus, as a representative of the 『Evila』 I will not show an ashamed appearance. It is an opportunity to show them who we really are. " (Eve am)

Everyone faintly returned a nod to Eveam's unwavering conviction.

" Well then, I will explain how the appointed day will go. " (Eveam)

## Humas Perspective

On the side of 【Victorias】 , a similar meeting took place. The meeting was, as expected to discuss the conference.

The members gathered there were all well known and influential. King Rudolph, Minister Dennis and Judom Lancaster, commanding officer of the 《Humas Armed Forces》 and 《Guild Master》 , were attending. Additionally, the four heroes summoned by the country were attending.

As Minister Dennis was managing the meeting, he was the first to speak.

" I expect that each of you understands the reason we have gathered here today. Two weeks from now, we will finally have the conference with the 『Evila』 . However, we don't think that it will go smoothly. Like the last time we did this, they may betray us. No - I think the possibility of that is high. " (Dennis)

" One second, Minister Dennis - " (Judom)

It was Judom who stopped Dennis's speech. Dennis unpleasantly turned his gaze on the

one who stopped his speech.

( So he's the 《Guild Master》 , Judom Lancaster...) (Taishi)

Aoyama Taishi, one of the heroes, quietly watched Judom.

(Although he's sitting there, I didn't realize his aura was this oppressive. Moreover, what's with him, is this person really retired.....) (Taishi)

Taishi heard about him from the stories of Vale Kimble, the commanding officer of the second armed forces. Seeing Judom in person made Taishi understand he needed to take more notice of him.

Judom was a retired adventurer. Although he heard that he was an amazing man in the old times, he also heard that he became the 《Guild Master》 and then retired from the frontlines. Therefore, he hadn't expected him to be the same person anymore, but right now, even though Judom was suppressing them, Taishi could feel open ambition and hidden fighting spirit leaking out from him.

His huge arms were like logs, it was not hard to imagine being crushed by those strong arms. Three more people had similar thoughts and swallowed nervously while watching Judom.

" It's true that before, we were betrayed when we acquiesced to the demands of the 『Evila』 for a conference. However this time, the intention of the successor of the Demon Lord was concluded to be based on the need for world peace" (Judom)

"Although that seems to be your answer, isn't that just wishful thinking on your part?" (Dennis)

"That's right. Hopes, ideals, dreams, and many more. Aren't people beings that support each other to grow? If you do not believe that there is hope, we won't advance at all." (Judom)

" ..... " (Dennis)

Seeming annoyed, the minister glared at Judom while clenching his teeth.

" Try to believe in your partner. Everything starts from there, wouldn't you agree? "

(Judom)

" What will you do supposing the partner betrayed you? " (Dennis)

" But isn't that the reason why I'm here? Haven't I said to the king many times that I'll protect him no matter what happens? " (Judom)

King Rudolph had quietly shut his eyes, but now he slowly opened them.

" For that reason, you were called here. " (Rudolph)

Having said that, he once more shut his eyes. Although Judom and Rudolph are old friends, Judom frowned anxiously at the attitude of his friend Rudolph.

(What are you planning Rudolph...) (Judom)

Although he had been observing Rudolph intently, Judom's next question was addressed to Dennis.

" There must be something else you want to say, right? " (Judom)

" ... There is only one thing I will say. As instructed, I will manage this meeting to make sure it succeeds without fail. " (Dennis)

Even though he isn't a part of the royal family, he was able to plainly express his opinion. Having seen this, Taishi was flabbergasted.

(What in the world is with that person's presence....) (Taishi)

He had obviously been overwhelmed by Judom's existence. However, the same could be said of the other commanders present. Those who knew the legends caught their breath in silence. Needless to say, Vale was also fidgeting anxiously.

After those events, the meeting advanced relatively smoothly. Before, the meeting was adjourned, they discussed the timetable for the appointed day, the deployment of the soldiers, how to deal with abnormal situations and other similar topics.

After it ended, Vale faced the heroes, his cheek still cramped due to his anxiety about the back and forth arguing of Judom and the minister.

" Anyway, although it was my first time seeing Judom up close, he was quite an

outrageous person. " (Taishi)

" Ahaha, did Taishi-sama also think so? It's probably because he is the king's best friend, that's probably the reason he was able to have that kind of attitude... " (Vale)

Certainly, Vale knew that he was that kind of rash character, that is why he was fearful of what would happen at the meeting.

" Setting that aside, it's finally happening~ " (Shinobu)

Those words were put out by the hero with cat-like eyes and a Kansai dialect, Akamori Shinobu.

" Yes, in any case in this meeting , something will definitely change. " (Vale)

" Since about a month ago the atmosphere in the castle has been tense, but right now something doesn't feel right. " (Chika)

It was another of the heroes, Suzumiya Chika, who pouted while saying those words. As she said, there might be a war with the 『Evila』 if we do something imprudent at the conference. In that case it would be stranger if the atmosphere in the castle had not changed. Rather, Vale slowly realized that Chika noticed the problem in a calm manner.

" Chika-sama, in two weeks, I believe your power will be greatly needed by the King. To get where you are, you have overcome many battles and quests, and I'm certain you have become stronger as a result. If we are betrayed, then please protect our King with your strength. " (Vale)

In response to Vale's earnest plea for her assistance, Chika stared blankly back at him, but then smiled after a while and answered his words with a nod.

そしてウェルに気づかれないように大志に耳打ちをする。

And then, a person whispered to Taishi in a manner unnoticed by Vale.

"Ne, nee, if Vale's saying that, was he not informed? " (Chika)

" It doesn't look like it. Although the king didn't say who he did or didn't tell, since he wasn't informed, I don't think we should say anything. " (Taishi)

" Is that so? Then, this one is off-the-record, alright Shuri? " (Chika)



" I...I understand. " (Shuri)

Suddenly perplexed by her words, Minamoto Shuri, who is one of the heroes, replied while watching Shinobu. Although right now Vale was talking with Shinobu, Shuri was relieved because Shinobu is not someone who indiscreetly discloses information.

" However, I will never approve of the 『Evila』 . " (Taishi)

" Yeah, we'll definitely win, right Taishi, Shuri? " (Chika)

" Ou! " (Taishi)

" H...Hai! " (Shuri)

The three people all looked at the determined expressions of the others.

# KONJIKI NO WORD MASTER

---

## Chapter 101 Prelude to the Meeting

---

Around that time, King Rudolf and the Cabinet Minister Dennis met in a room. Both were feeling the tension in the air and wore stern facial expressions. However, Dennis was the first to speak

. “I hope that this would go well but...” (Dennis)

“Yes...and to achieve that we trained the heroes for 6 months...”(Rudolf)

“As a trump card...?”

Rudolf then shook his head a little.

“No, The Evila knows about the existence of the Heroes, we must be cautious, which is why the Heroes should hidden as much as possible” (Rudolf)

“You’re right, its possible that the Evila cannot do anything about it. But, what do you think that man is planning” (Dennis)

“Judom?” (Rudolf)

“Indeed” (Dennis)

Rudolf let out a weak laugh

“That guy thinks that I am soft, but he is the one who is soft, in a week’s time you’ll see.” (Rudolf)

“But he was once the strongest adventurer. I heard that he can break a man’s head with just his bare hands. What a feat” (Dennis)

Dennis doesn’t often think about Judom but his reputation and abilities were no errors in judgment. But as what is expected of the Cabinet Minister, he only supports the king.

“Though I have faith in him, the Evila will undoubtedly make a move. That time will come and I will be right.” (Rudolf)

“Within these two weeks, we must make our move” (Dennis)

“Aahh , we were talking about our Hero trump card earlier, but our real trump card is...” (Rudolf)

While they were talking

\*Sound of footsteps\*

Footsteps can be heard from behind, a certain person was standing behind the two people in the room, but they weren't surprised at all, because he is an acquaintance he was given permission to be in the room. The person then looked at Rudolf

"This guy is the real one." (Rudolf)

He was just standing there, grinning sinisterly.

After a few days had passed, a young person who was self-reflecting came into view; he tilts his head looking at the sight before him.

(So, those are the heroes...where are you going at this hour?)

He had unkempt blue hair and long bangs that covered his round glasses. This young man was at the Victorias' birthday festival, the painter that Aoyama Taishi met, Nazaar Skride.

He came early in the morning to the vicinity of the castle. He had his sketchbook in hand, seemingly for the purpose of drawing. But it was only a disguise to cover his real intentions: monitoring and surveillance.

Very soon, the meeting between the Humas and the Evila would take place. However, there seems to be someone plotting to interfere with the meeting which has to be someone with a degree of influence over the meeting. Because of that information, he had to go on surveillance. But since it was early in the morning, there were not many people leaving the castle. He was then surprised to find the heroes leaving the castle, he thought that he did the right move getting there early.

(What does King Rudolf intend to do? There are still 10 days till the meeting, yet, what is he planning to do?)

After the heroes went out, Nazaar immediately hid himself from their view. The heroes then proceed to go into town.

(I wonder what's going on here)

As Nazaar thought those things, he began drawing on the paper. It was a drawing of a small bird. Then, the small bird unexpectedly came to life and rose out of the paper and began flying through the air. It eventually landed on Nazaar's shoulder.

"Immediately report this to Kiri-chan, please."

"Chi chi chi" (Small Bird)

Chirping loudly, as if saying that the small bird had already understood, it then proceeded to fly away again towards the sky.

(I'm interested with the way things are moving, for now I'll prioritize the heroes)

That was what Nazaar thought , he faced the direction Taishi and the others were headed to and began following them determined to find out what they were planning to do.

"Your Majesty, Its terrible!" (Kiria)

Seeing her own aide, Kiria, suddenly barged into her room with a terrible expression, the devil king Eveam, instinctively knitted her eyebrows and asked.

"Why are you in such a rush Kiria?" (Eveam)

While catching her breath Kiria faced Eveam and lowered her head.

"Please forgive my sudden entrance upon your room, but your Majesty needs to hear this immediately" (Kiria)

"What happened?" (Eveam)

Eveam listened intently.

"Yes, the truth is..." (Kiria)

As Kiria was concerned of the people that might be around, she began whispering to Eveam. As soon as Eveam heard the information, she had a grim look on her face.

"What did you say!? But no... I see, so the Humas began making their move." (Eveam)

Eveam bit her lip as her fists were shaking.

"But your Majesty, they might also have a reason for being cautious" (Kiria)

"...You might be right, there was a case of last time too. We should be more cautious as well, the heroes begun to move after all, their target would probably be..." (Eveam)

"Yes"

Kiria's throat produced a gulping sound.

"To destroy the border" (Eveam)

"You're saying... they'll destroy the bridge" (Kiria)

"Yes... Now that our border with the Gabranth is gone, it is the only thing that maintains peace." (Eveam)

"If the meeting has evoked tension among the Humas, then there would be an intention to bring down the bridge" (Eveam)

“The Humas’ trump card. Considering that Evila’s greatest adversary are the four heroes, once they are deployed, it wouldn’t be wrong to think that way.” (Kiria)

In truth, Eveam expected that the Humas would make their move. In the event that the meeting with the Evila don’t go well, then immediately destroying the bridge wouldn’t allow the possibility of an alliance. The direction of the discussions would turn and be about war and the annihilation of the Evila. Eveam foresaw that that must be what the Humas are planning.

“However, for the meeting to proceed, Eveam-sama must choose a few but elite persons to accompany you. The Cruel’s First and Second should go. I will also be at your side, if the other side starts an all-out war, I am strong enough not to be killed easily.” (Kiria)

Yes, there is a given limit as to how many people can go, however if Evila’s strongest be there as an escort, even if a fight breaks out there is no way they could lose.

“No matter how many powerful people Victorias be prepared with, without the Heroes, there wouldn’t be a problem.” (Kiria)

Kiria’s words were accurate. Even the Victorias’ renowned military would be a disappointing match for the Evila’s top.

“...but for the Heroes to confidently go to the bridge, they must have a plan in hand don’t they?” (Kiria)

“I wonder, no, If I remember correctly, the place of the meeting is...” (Eveam)

“Aah, Its at the <Ordine Grand Temple> (TL: Could be Sanctuary/Shrine). In a sacred place separated from Victorias the <Ordine Holy Ground> (TL: Could also be Holy Land) the place where god rests, It will be held at a place called the <Room of Sanctuary>” (TL: Can also be Sacred precinct) (Kiria)

“If I’m correct, it was once before, the place where Humas went to seek aid in times of misfortunes and calamities, It was said to be the place where the hero turned savior perished. Worshipping that hero eventually gave rise to the <Holy Ground>.” (Eveam)

“Indeed, there the Hero’s power is still lingering, I’ve heard that the power to seal demons <Holy Ground> is being hidden there. Moreover, the <Room of Sanctuary> has the power to prevent the use of magic; it seems that the power to seal demons is strong there.” (Kiria)

“If that is the place chosen, then in the worst case scenario we would not be able to use our magic.” (Eveam)

“Yes, probably, also if we brought weapons it will only instigate trouble so we cannot do that. In short we will be going there completely unarmed.” (Kiria)

“So you’re thinking that we’d all be murdered...is that right?” (Eveam)

Kiria was a bit uneasy.

“You...can say that, if the Humas sensed hostility within us, we’d all die in an instant” (Kiria)

For a while only silence followed, It was then that Kiria spoke.

“Maybe it’s best to discontinue the meeting.” (Kiria)

No matter how you think about it, the Evila is at a disadvantageous situation, while in terms of physical strength the Evila is superior to the Humas however when magic cannot be used, those that have the numbers advantage will have the upper hand. The small numbered Evila would be up against the stronghold-like enemy force. If a large number of people simultaneously attacked, then protecting Eveam would be a serious concern.

But as Eveam was thinking, Kiria said those words, she began shaking her head in denial.

“No, even in the beginning I didn’t think it would go smoothly, at any rate I will break the curse like chains that has plagued us since ancient times. Though I understand that it will be difficult to accomplish” (Eveam)

“your Majesty...” (Kiria)

“Even so I’ve decided. In order for peace to triumph, the establishment of an alliance is necessary.”(Eveam)

“.....”

“I do not expect the Humas to fight recklessly on purpose. I think that nobody has the desire to kill anyone. But the Humas won’t believe that so easily, I am afraid of both. Which is why it was natural to place my hand on various things. ”

The Humas also think that it will be to beneficial if the establishment of the alliance end peacefully. However, they still can’t completely trust the Evila. Until the establishment, no, even after the establishment of the alliance, it will still probably take a long time for them to trust again.

There is great distrust being held. That is why it was natural to accept the outlook that the meeting would fail. And when it fails, even a little, the Evila would not be taken for granted.

“That is why, for them to trust us even a little, it will be good not to make moves that would create strife, we will only convey the alliance’s purpose, if that happens I’m sure they’ll understand. We must, we must do that in order for the alliance to go well!”  
(Eveam)

Kiria managed to make a faint smile seeing Eveam speak her decision straight forwardly and in a calm manner.

“As expected of our majesty. Then I too pledge to offer my heart, body, soul and dedicate it for peace.”

Kiria said those words as she was kneeling on one knee.

“Aa, I’m counting on you, Kiria. I am placing my trust in you the most, it is because you are at my side, I able to move forward. Let’s attain peace together.”

“With pleasure.”

## Chapter 102

### The Demon Lord, To The Human World

---

The 『Humas-Evila Conference』 was one week away and Nazaar had been following the four heroes for three days. He was currently dismayed by the scene that lay before him.

They had arrived at the bridge connecting 『Humas』 and 『Evila』. In other words, the continental border, and presently on the bridge stood a demon deployed by the 『Evila』 tasked with safeguarding the bridge from the 『Humas』.

The deployed 『Evila』, Iraora, was a former member of 『Cruel』. Therefore, the 『Humas』 should have known of his extraordinary strength and that of the other people stationed there. It was because of this that the bridge hadn't been destroyed yet.

However, Nazaar was most surprised when the heroes began to cross the bridge without hesitation, with the Conference drawing near, Nazaar was dumbfounded by their reckless actions which might call out such violence.

Curious, Nazaar let a bird drawn from his sketchbook fly near the heroes to examine the situation. He used the bird as his eyes and ears for short-range surveillance and information gathering. Naturally, the heroes were unaware of this fact.

As the heroes continued across the bridge, they gradually approached Iraora, who stood at the center of the bridge. And Nazaar was shocked by the words that the heroes proceeded to say in his presence.

"Are you Iraora?" (Taishi)

"Yes, that's me." (Iraora)



"I see, so you are one of their accomplices then?" (Taishi)

What did he just say? Nazaar ruminated those words several times in his head.

(Ac....Accomplice? E....eh?.....Wait a minute~su..... speaking of accomplice... what does he mean~su?) (Nazaar)

Nazaar became more perplexed as he was unable to understand the meaning of the shocking words that came from Iraora.

"Those guys are already inside. Hey, guide them." (Iraora)

After Iraora issued the command to one of his subordinates, that person urged the heroes to follow him.

Iraora let the heroes pass through as he has given them consent to cross over the bridge and across the 『Evila』 border. In other words, Iraora let them set foot on the 『Evila』 continent.

(Those guys....? Who are those guy~su?) Nazaar

Before he realized it, Nazaar was sweating profusely. He felt thirsty as he groaned in anxiousness. The situation had pushed him his wits' end.

"What is the meaning of thi~su? Why did Iraora let the heroes pass? Moreover, who are those guy~su.....?" (Nazaar)

Though confused, he nevertheless drew a picture in his sketchbook.

"A..-Anyway the situation has escalated abnormally ~su! If I do not pass on this information as soon as possible, I have a bad feeling something dangerous will happen in 『Evila』 ~su!" (Nazaar)

Suddenly, his neck was seized from behind.

" --!? " (Nazaar)

Nazaar had not sensed anything. Certainly, he might not have been able to think calmly due to the situation at hand, but even so he was confident that he was not so weak as to be defeated by just anyone.

Teckil's abilities were specialized for covert operations which required that he erase his presence, using this ability, he should have been able to sense his enemy before being assaulted. However, Teckil had not been able to detect the attack's approach and was now caught by an unknown assailant. He was now experiencing his worst nightmare.

" .....Who...are....yo~su? " (Nazaar)

Somehow he managed to squeeze out a few words. As he turned around to look at his assailant, he heard a muffled voice.

" Your role ends here. Now sleep.....Teckil " (???)

Gasping for air, he was shocked by these words.

" hah....ha-hah.... you ~su-eem to know about me..... I'm honored~su..." (Teckil?)

While pretending to be tough by forcing a smile, he quietly moved his hands. Then,

\*gusa!

All of a sudden, a sword rushed out from his textbook, impaling the head of the person behind him. He used this chance to slip out of its hold, then he scrutinized his opponent.

"Fuu, Unpreparedness is one's greatest enemy. Don't think badly of me~su. I cannot afford to die in such a place like thi~su." (Teckil?)

Since the robed opponent had covered its face with a hood, he decided to remove it first. Although the opponent was completely silent, blood continued to flow from its head. He approached the unmoving existence, intending to remove its hood. However,

gashi!

His arms were grabbed

"Na-!?" (Teckil?)

He forcefully pushed away the arms of what seemed to be of a dead person, managing to slip out of its restraint and retreated back. Then, he examined his opponent at a distance. It pulled the sword that was stuck in its head while swaying like a ghost. Although blood spouts with a slosh on his head, it throws the sword on the ground nonchalantly.

(It responded~su.... Moreover, Is there a creature that can remain so composed after having its head pierced~su... ?) (Teckil?)

He felt his spine shiver from the eeriness of the opponent.

"As one would expect of 《Rank 3》 Teckil of 『Cruel』 . I was surprised when you killed me that time" (???)

" ..... It appears that you are mistaking me for someone el~su " (Teckil?)

He readied his stance as his opponent knows completely about his identity. He plans to remove the fluttering hood to see it's identity. But a mumbling laughter was heard as he considered whether his intention was conveyed to the opponent.

" Apparently, you seemed to be concerned of my identity. In respect for the honor of killing me that time, I will show it to you " (???)

As it said so, the hood was slowly raised. Nazaar who is now named Teckil watched with a stern expression, he stiffened as his face saw an unbelievable one.

" i.....i.... impossible... why..... why are you here in this pla~su...!?" (Teckil)

While Teckil is still stiffened from that revelation, his opponent instantly vanished.

" ....Eh?" (Teckil)

Teckil noticed the opponent already behind him.

ton....

Teckil felt the impact on his neck, his consciousness wavering violently at the same time. As his vision gradually whitened Teckil was reminded of the faces of Demon Lord Eveam and his companions.

(At this rate.....everyone will.....) (Teckil)

However, his resistance was futile. Shrouded in darkness, he fainted and collapsed.

## Evila Perspective

The day of the conference was five days away. At the provincial border between 『Humas』 and 『Evila』, Eveam lead the 《Demon Lord Forces》 as she crossed the bridge. On the way, she saw a familiar face at the center of the bridge.

" Iraora, Isn't there any change? " (Eveam)

Iraora who is in charge of guarding the 【Mütich Bridge】 was greeted by Eveam. He had a large build and was probably more than 3 meters tall. He bowed in loyalty to Eveam.

" Ha! As a matter of fact, several days ago the heroes appeared at the 【Mütich Bridge】  
" (Iraora)

" Aa, we were informed of that. And then? Did anything occur? " (Eveam)

Thereupon, Iraora shook his head clearly.

" Nay, They were only watching over the bridge as a precaution " (Iraora)

" So the heroes are on the other side? " (Eveam)

Eveam spoke those words as she watched the long bridge ahead. The 【Mütich Bridge】 has an identical length with the bridges on the other borders. The bridge ten kilometers long, and starting from the center where they are located, there is a distance of five kilometers at the end of the bridge.

" I fear that it's likely that..." (Iraora)

" Is that so..... as i thought, it will really happen, they are planning to destroy the bridge..... Kiria " (Eveam)

" Hai " (Kiria)

Kiria, Eveam's aide, approached Eveam, her snowy white hair swinging.

" The demand of the other party said to only bring the 『Cruel』 to the 『Humas』 . However, Ornoth, Shublarz and Greyald will be left here." (Eveam)

Nearly everyone reacted to Eveam's words, and Iraora who currently had his mouth opened asked back. He was visibly upset by her words.

" Does Her Majesty not believe in me? " (Iraora)

Hearing her words, Iraora was under the impression that Eveam did not trust him with defending the bridge alone. In other words, the mere idea of him being defeated by the puny 『Humas』 offended him.

" No, that is not the case " (Eveam)

" Then, I wonder why? " (Iraora)

" Know your position Iraora! " (Marione)

It was 《Rank 2》 Marione who threw such words with anger.

" Right now you are merely the commanding officer of 《Bridge Security Forces》 . You should refrain from advising your superiors like when you were from 『Cruel』 -! "  
(Marione)

Iraora and Marione momentarily glared at each other, sparks flying between them.

" Enough both of you! " (Eveam)

Her words succeeded in quelling the situation, causing them to avert their eyes from each other. However, based from their expressions, they were not satisfied. Especially Iraora, who was evidently irritated.

" Haa, Listen well both of you. We are of the same kind. Although he may have been demoted, Iraora is clearly contributing for the sake of 『Evila』 . I cannot disregard his opinion as he is an 『Evila』 " (Eveam)

Marione harshly grunted and relented.

" About Iraora's question awhile ago " (Eveam)

" Ha! " (Iraora)

" I fully understand the extent of your power. But I cannot let this bridge be destroyed "  
(Eveam)

" .... " (Iraora)

" Against the usual 『Humas』 , you and your soldiers would have be more than enough. However, this time, there are the heroes whose power is still unknown to us. Although, we investigated on them, especially the past 6 months, the 『Humas』 have been concealing how the heroes fight " (Eveam)

The spy named Teckil was made to invade the 『Humas』 for gathering information, there was no one who knows the hero's strength other than him who have the information. However, Teckil who excelled in covert operations had a hard time on gathering information as the 『Humas』 have greatly covered up their private lives.

The other party doesn't want the current abilities of the heroes to be known. Therefore, as far as the heroes are concerned, it is too risky to leave it all to Iraora as the ability of the heroes are still unknown to them.

" The heroes are an unknown factor. Moreover, all four heroes can use light magic based from the investigation. Although I trust you, I cannot help but become anxious. Please do understand " (Eveam)

" ..... As you will" (Iraora)

Reluctant as he may be, Iraora expressed his acknowledgement by bowing in Eveam's presence.

" Regarding that matter, Ornoth, Shublarz and Greyald I request all of you to please defend the bridge" (Eveam)



" " " Ha-! " " " (Three People from 『Cruel』 )

Eveam nodded in consent as the three people answered her words. Thus, Eveam and her escorts advanced to the bridge. Thereupon, only one person halted and approached Ornoth, he was 《Rank 1》 Aquinas.

" What's wrong Aquinas? " (Ornoth)

Naturally, Ornoth who found his behavior suspicious inquired about it.

" Ornoth, you must return to the country " (Aquinas)

" Ha-? What on earth are you saying? " (Ornoth)

Aquinas examined his surroundings as he lowered his voice, Ornoth did the same.

" Anyway, I have a bad feeling about this " (Aquinas)

" A bad feeling? " (Ornoth)

" Aa, This conference... perhaps will become a rough one. Moreover, an inordinate one.  
" (Aquinas)

" ..... Your basis? " (Ornoth)

" I have already said it, a bad feeling " (Aquinas)

Ornoth quietly watches the eyes of his friend Aquinas. And, he smiled with a puff as he shrugged his shoulders.

"Tentatively, I'm assured that this is the Demon Lord-sama's orders? " (Ornoth)

" I apologize. However, you're the only one rely on this request "(Aquinas)

" ..... Understood " (Ornoth)

" I entrust it to you " (Aquinas)

" However, you must guard Her Majesty without fail. " (Ornoth)

"It goes without saying" (Aquinas)

Aquinas rushed to Eveam's side after saying those words. And Ornoth stared at that back with a stern expression.

(Certainly this conference seems to be too quiet as it conversely gives off a sense of eeriness) (Ornoth)

The anxiety of Ornoth is directed to the 『Gabranth』 . As they will be troubled if this conference is established. There is no way they would stay silent and observe. Although it was Ornoth who thought that, it will not be strange even if they managed to come here and drop the bridge,

(Certainly this would become rough. Aquinas, I entrust Eveam to you) (Ornoth)

While Ornoth thought so, he quietly watched again his friend as they faced their destination.

## Chapter 103

### Humas-Evila Alliance Conference

---

When Eveam and company crossed the bridge and looked at the 『**Humas**』 troops stationed there, her body stiffened. Everyone was looking at each other warily.

(The heroes are...) (Eveam)

Eveam started looking for the heroes who were supposed to be around. Her gaze fell upon a group of four.

A tall boy with brown hair and a handsome face that is likely popular with the ladies. An energetic girl, sporting hair with the same shade of brown. A girl with long black hair that reached down to her waist. A girl with cat-like eyes and slightly wavy black hair that hung over her shoulders.

(So those are the heroes...) (Eveam)

Eveam wore a poker face as she moved only her gaze towards the direction of the 4 heroes. As the other side had noticed her stare, they returned a probing gaze.

She judged that they were the Heroes because she sensed great magical power emanating from them. In the first place she, as the Demon Lord, belonged to a race that excels in sensing magic. Thus, since birth, she had possessed great magical power and precise control over magical elements.

Using this ability, she was able to discern the quality and quantity of the Human's magic simply by observing them.

Eveam stopped walking as a 『**Humas**』 soldier stood before her.

"I presume you must be Demon Lord Eveam?" (Captain)

The soldier before her was most likely a captain. Unlike the grey armor that the others wore, only his had a different shape and color. One other person, like the individual before her, was also wearing red armor. It was likely that the individual was also a captain.

"I am obliged to attend this meeting, My name is Eveam Gran Early Evening, the governing ruler of 【**Demon Capital: Xaos**】 " (Eveam)

After she spoke thus with a dignified countenance, the people nearby couldn't help expressing their admiration. This girl was their enemy, the 『**Evila**』 's ruler. Her

beauty and her ambitions as a ruler, however, had unintentionally captivated the people around her.

According to Aquinas, Eveam was still lacking dignity as a ruler. Even so, the humans were forced to understand that she was an existence that clearly lived in a different world from them.

It was not just Eveam. The presence of the two at her side, Aquinas and Marione, had caused the humans to swallow their breath. As expected of those who held such rank, the captains who wore red armor did not show any change in facial expression. However, beads of sweat could be seen dripping down their forehead.

“You will be guided to the **【Sacred Oldine】** from here. In accordance with the agreement, from here onwards, only 6 『Cruel』 guards will be allowed.” (Captain)

“I understand. From here I will be accompanied by Aquinas, Marione, and Kiria. Only these 3 people. Kiria is not a 『Cruel』 but she is my aide. I wouldn't mind making a separate letter for her approval ” (Eveam)

“I understand. you have brought fewer people than we expected. Please follow me” (Captain)

They proceeded to follow the person in red armor. Eveam walked past the heroes, but Aquinas did not follow suit. He stopped for a moment, looked towards them, and frowned.

“What's wrong?” (Kiria)

The one who asked was Kiria.

“...Nothing, I'm just a little worried.” (Aquinas)

“So those people are the heroes” (Kiria)

Kiria said this while also staring at the four heroes.

“It seems that way, but...” (Aquinas)

“What is it?” (Kiria)

“Nothing... Let's go” (Aquinas)

“Ah, Yes” (Kiria)

Aquinas glanced at the heroes once more before following behind the others.

(Strange... It is certainly strong... Their magical power is strong, however the amount of magical power between the four of them is too equal.) (Aquinas)

What Aquinas felt was an enormous magical power. He felt its strength exceeded even that of 『**Higher Evila**』, but the amount of magical power that the four people had was too equal.

(Are all people from another world like that? Or...) (Aquinas)

The four people's appearances certainly looked different, but something was amiss in terms of their respective magical power. He felt a sense of unease, not only because there were four people with the same amount of magical power but because they were also heroes. However, it was not impossible for four people to have an equal amount of magical power.

(...Ornoth, I'll leave the country to you. In exchange, the princess...) (Aquinas)

A flame quietly flickered in Aquinas' eyes. He still felt uneasy in his heart but he had to proceed to the conference. That was Eveam's will. There was no way of knowing if anything would happen at the conference, but he was determined to protect Eveam at all cost.

Naturally, at this time he had no way of knowing what his decision would bring.

【**Sacred Oldine**】; the place where the hero was summoned into this world, 【**Edea**】, in order to save the 『**Humas**』 who lived there, and the rumored place where the hero lived out the rest of his life.

When the hero died, he transformed his own body into light and poured it down onto the land. The land was originally corrupted; there were poisonous marshes as well as many ferocious monsters crawling about. It is told that the hero, wanting to rid the land of corruption, used the last of his strength in order to purify it.

Thereafter, many plants grew and flowers blossomed onto the land, turning it into a lively and vibrant place overflowing with nature. At the same time, monsters had become unable to approach the land and magic had become unusable in that area.

The people believed this to be a result of the hero's desire for peace, declared the land to be 【**Sacred Ground**】, and constructed a building to praise the hero. That building is called the 《**Oldine Grand Temple**》. It is located in the center of that land, where the hero's power is said to be the strongest.

The first generation head priest and founder was a companion of the Hero. His name was Ronise Gilviti. The 【**Sacred Oldine**】 was made as a symbol of peace. Even now it constantly attracts many worshippers and tourists. Even the upper echelons of society use the place to conduct important discussions and negotiations.

Right now, the **【Sacred Oldine】** would be the place wherein a big turn of events would occur.

This is the place of *The Conference*.

The Conference between the 『**Humas**』 and the 『**Evila**』 to establish an alliance treaty between them.

Inside the Ordine Grand Temple, there is a place called the 《Sacred Room》. It was here that the two representatives of each race would meet.

Overseeing the conference as a neutral party and standing between the two groups was Portnis Gilviti, the current head priestess. As the name would imply, she is a descendant of the First Head Priest Ronise Gilviti

The priestess wore a white robe embroidered with gold thread. In her hand was a staff with a large emerald green ball fitted on the top.

She was a fair-skinned woman envied by women with brownish complexion. She was around the age of 30, possessing a dignified expression appropriate of her age, and a face full of slender contours along with a well-shaped nose. It was as if every part of her body was designed for elegance.

“Well then, as of this moment we shall begin the 『**Humas-Evila Alliance Conference**』 ”  
(Eveam)

Her voice was heard clearly by everyone.

In the 《**Sacred Room**》 was a large round table. The representatives of the two races seated themselves opposite of each other, while Portnis sat down in a position where both parties were in her field of view.

King Rudolph of the Humas and Demon Lord Eveam of the Evila were the only ones who sat down. The other people present were also offered a seat but they remained standing. It is likely they remained standing so that it would be easier to react if something were to happen. Both parties were thinking the same thing.

Rudolph was accompanied by his Cabinet Minister Dennis, Guild Master Judom, as well as 5 other guards, including the Captain that guided Eveam and her companions to the room.

Eveam's party was comprised of her aide Kiria, 『**Cruel**』's 《**Rank 1**》 Aquinas, and 《**Rank 2**》 Marione.

Judom focused his gaze upon Aquinas. Aquinas, likewise, looked back at Judom, and the two of them stared each other down.

(It's been a while, Aquinas) (Judom)

Judom didn't put his thoughts into words, but conveyed it through his gaze. Aquinas, as if he understood what Judom wanted to say...

(You seem to be in good shape, Judom Lankars) (Aquinas)

They conversed using only their eyes, almost as if they were former comrades in arms. They've fought against each other in life or death battles so they knew each other well.

(I didn't think we'd meet again face-to-face like this, but he's definitely changed)  
(Judom)

Judom didn't show it, but he was observing Aquinas. He felt that Aquinas was extraordinary, even among the Evila. Judom wasn't the only one thinking such thoughts.

(Although I had thought so before, you're such an accomplished warrior that I wouldn't have thought of you as a simple 『Humas』 )

Aquinas also had similar sentiments towards Judom. Both also understood that the other had grown much more powerful than the last time they met.

(...This guy has an impressive presence as always. If I was an ordinary guy I would wither in his presence, but...) (Judom)

Judom looked towards the soldiers nearby out of the corner of his eye. As he expected, there were those within the group who were being overwhelmed by Aquinas and Marione's presence.

(Can't be helped... I guess. If there's anyone that could oppose them, it'd be...) (Judom)

As he compared the five soldiers, three of them stood out to him.

(Only these three) (Judom)

There were only three soldiers who were standing tall without wavering, despite facing the strongest of the 『Evila』 .

(Their levels seem to be on the higher side, but... They won't be much help if we have to fight against them) (Judom)

They were likely the best of the best in the 【Victorias】 army, but they still didn't match up to Aquinas and the 《Cruel》 guard. This was true for Judom as well, but on the off chance Aquinas and the others were to go on a rampage he wouldn't be able to handle them alone.



The use of magic and bringing weapons into the 《Sacred Room》 is prohibited so they could only rely on their physical abilities in a fight. Taking that into consideration, Judom still felt that he would only be able to hold off Aquinas alone.

That is why they chose 5 commanding officers. However, the question remained whether or not they were capable of dealing with Marione, the aide, and the Demon Lord herself.

In fact, Judom suggested a plan to include some of his most trusted and skilled adventurers in the conference, but his plan was rejected by both Cabinet Minister Dennis and King Rudolph. King Rudolph stated that he only wanted people he trusted by his side and wouldn't give Judom's plan further consideration.

For now it was important that Judom carry out his mission. That is to be vigilant of their surroundings and to watch the conference closely and attentively.

"This conference is held in mutual agreement by both parties. The purpose of this conference is to form an alliance in order to establish peace. Is this correct?" (Portnis)

Portnis looked at each of the parties involved. Eveam returned a powerful nod towards Portnis in response. Then Portnis looked over to Rudolph's side.

His eyes were closed, but as the silence continued he slowly opened them. As if reflecting on his thoughts, he slowly spoke

"...There is something I would like to ask, Head Priestess" (Rudolph)

## Chapter 104 King Rudolph's Motive

---

“.....what might that be?” (Portnis)

Everyone’s glances gathered upon Rudolf.

“This 《Sacred Room》 is easy to enter, but to exit, it requires the permission of the head priest, correct?” (Rudolf)

“.....that’s how it would appear to be.” (Portnis)

But Portnis wondered why she suddenly asked such a question as she slightly inclined her head.

“And the number of people that can enter, including the Head Priest-dono, is 13 people correct?” (Rudolf)

“.....haa” (Portnis)

“Furthermore, no information at all can enter in from the outside.....it certainly is a room worthy of being called a separating space” (Rudolf)

Judom knitted his eyebrows at Rudolf’s words.

(Rudolf.....just what are you.....?) (Judom)

That was something that everyone here, no, since the Cabinet Minister next to him was faintly smiling, it was likely that he knew something. Even so, nearly everybody was dumbfounded by Rudolf’s strange remarks.

“.....no, I just wanted to confirm it in advance. Sorry for taking up your time” (Rudolf)

“N-no” (Portnis)

He was not entirely aware as to what purpose Rudolf would have to confirm such a thing. However, Judom noticed Aquinas’ eyes had narrowed. Similar to Judom, he had some doubts about Rudolf’s strange conduct.

(.....Rudolf, you.....)(Judom)

Judom didn’t want to believe it but.....as he thought that, he figured he would wait-and-see a little longer while watching over him.

“Now then, let us once again introduce ourselves properly” (Rudolf)

“I am the sole king unifying the 『Humas』 , Rudolf van Strauss Arclaim, the king of 【Victorias】 ” (Rudolf)

After Rudolf introduced himself, Eveam followed suit and opened her mouth.

“I am the lord controlling the 【Evila Capital: Xaos】 , Eveam Gran Early Evening. On this occasion, for having responded to the request of the 『Evila』 , I am truly grateful king of Victorias” (Eveam)

She moved her head and gave a slight nod.

“No, there are also many merits for us if we were to make an alliance” (Rudolf)

Even though their Maou was using polite speech, seeing Rudolf fail to do the same irked Marione, giving him a dubious feeling as he knit his eyebrows in displeasure. However, Aquinas had noticed his displeasure and gave a tiny shake of his head, telling Marione not to draw attention to it.

Eveam herself did not appear to mind at all as she opened her mouth once more.

“I am happy to hear you say that” (Eveam)

“However” (Rudolf)

“.....?” (Eveam)

“There are also those who do not desire this alliance” (Rudolf)

“I am fully aware of that” (Eveam)

“That alone shows how heavy the wounds we have inflicted upon each other are.....and how deep they are” (Rudolf)

“Yes, but I feel that healing those wounds requires not vengeance, but a time of peace” (Eveam)

“.....” (Rudolf)

“We were once at conflict. It is precisely because of this that we so calmly accepted things that could only be described as inhuman. As sadness and hatred simply swelled, it only invited more conflict and strife. This can no longer be allowed. If someone does not break these chains of conflict, a time of peace will never come!” (Eveam)

Everyone listened carefully to her declaration.

(This girl.....so this is the current Maou) (Judom)

Judom heard her idealistic thoughts and felt that she was voicing them in earnest. In the first place, to come to the enemy territory, the human continent, with only these few people was close to suicidal behaviour. Yet, even so, she proceeded with the conference. It was precisely because she truly wanted to establish an alliance that she had come here like this to meet the representative of an enemy country.

Having been given overwhelmingly disadvantageous conditions, if they poorly presented some half-hearted nonsense, the Evila would instantly stir up animosity. In this situation that could potentially lead to further conflict, for her to shoot off such words without a single lie showed how Eveam herself truly believed in them.

(.....hm? Have I seen this girl somewhere.....?) (Judom)

Judom looked at Eveam as he began to have a sense of déjà vu. He had a feeling that he had met her before, yet it had just slipped through his mind. And then-

(I remember now! Oi oi oi oi, don't tell me that the Jou-chan from that time was the Maou?) (Judom)

As his eyes widened in realization, he looked at her once more to confirm it. And with that, he was sure that she matched the girl from his memories.

(.....I see, so the Jou-chan from that time has.....grown up splendidly) (Judom)

It didn't appear that the other side had realized it yet, but Judom had undoubtedly recognized her as someone he had met in the past. Having seen how big and fine she had become, he somehow became very happy. However, now was not the time to be losing himself in nostalgia. Right now he had to concentrate on the conference.

"Even if we were to form an alliance, there will definitely be some resistance towards it. What do you think about that?" (Rudolf)

At Rudolf's query, Eveam answered without any agitation.

"It's true that even if we form an alliance, those who can't accept it will definitely hold some misgivings. In addition, there is also the issue regarding the 『Gabranth』 .

However, if we continue to fight like this, 【Edea】 will be further wounded, and the places where people can live will disappear. As this has actually occurred in the past, I'm sure you too, can understand that" (Eveam)

"....." (Rudolf)

"It is because they couldn't let that happen that our predecessors joined hands to bring about a time of prosperity, and shaped the current world as we know it. It can be said that the reason why we are standing here right now is undoubtedly thanks to the hardships of our predecessors building up the world of today. Do you believe that it is alright for us, their descendants, to destroy that?" (Eveam)

Everyone silently listened to her words, yet, Rudolf merely closed his eyes. The Cabinet Minister Dennis made an extremely complicated expression.

"Peace cannot be easily restored. However, us joining hands may become the foundation for it. I'm sure that there will be many problems, but one day, without fail, it will become a world where anyone can live in and laugh!" (Eveam)

It was a beautiful ideal. A pure ideal. An ideal that anyone would think to be sweet. If realized, it would definitely be the epitome of peace.

(That's wrong.....you were a bit too hasty, Maou-chan) (Judom)

Judom looked at her with a slightly sober expression.

(It's true that it is indeed a magnificent ideal. But, by just a little.....you over-spoke)  
(Judom)

Indeed, it was true that the ideal she spoke of was magnificent. However, she had not properly answered Rudolf's words. The resistance that would be birthed by the alliance. With regards to how to deal with those problems, she had simply enumerated her own ideals.

If one were to rephrase it, when asked about the internal strife that may occur, she had answered, "It's alright, it'll work out somehow" as she had displayed baseless self-confidence.

Judom had also wanted this conference to occur. Naturally, he approved of the alliance. However, for that to occur, he was not indifferent to the problems that would arise from it. That was exactly why he wanted.....prior to making the alliance, he wanted to discuss about the near future.

First they had to come to know each other better. Trust was something that was gained gradually over time. But she was only looking at the pretty parts of the alliance. Honestly speaking, it was dangerous.

If you only listened to the ideal, anyone would want to jump at the contents. However, the other party was the representative of a whole country, someone who was shouldering the fate of an entire species. Seeing her simply being forward with her ideals, even Judom grew slightly anxious.

(Don't be hasty, Maou-chan. You have time. You mustn't be hasty with the alliance. First you have to come to know each other, then prioritize solving each and every problem, one after the other. Today is simply a discussion for that) (Judom)

It was as if Judom was thinking of advice for his own daughter. Seeing her, he unconsciously wanted to help guide her. She was naïve, but mysteriously had something that attracted people. Though she was young, you could understand that she was the Maou.

".....Maou Eveam-dono" (Rudolf)

Suddenly, Rudolf spoke with a murmur.

"Wh-what is it?" (Eveam)

"You.....have you ever lost anyone important to you?" (Rudolf)

".....hah?" (Eveam)

After wondering what he was suddenly asking, she accidentally responded like that.

“From what I’ve seen, you are pure. The previous Maou seems to have been your brother, but your way of thinking is completely different” (Rudolf)

“.....” (Eveam)

“You have some wonderful thoughts. It truly is a pure white.....and beautiful ideal” (Rudolf)

At that moment, the sound of Dennis swallowing nervously could be heard. It appeared that something had made him nervous, but it was likely that the ambition poured into his words had affected him.

“I will ask you one last time. Have you ever lost anyone important to you?” (Rudolf)

“That.....I have. All of the 『Evila』 are my family. There have been many that have died” (Eveam)

“.....I see. Then could it be that, from now on, if any of your family were to be killed, then you would find something like revenge to be meaningless? Would you believe that everything could be resolved with words.....and be able to talk to their murderer while laughing?” (Rudolf)

Rudolf silently opened his eyes and sharply gazed at her. It felt as though his intention was to not let her get away with only a small amount of effort.

After being asked such a question, Eveam’s face darkened slightly at the contents, yet-

“.....I do not know if I would be able to laugh. No, it is likely that I wouldn’t be able to laugh. However, I won’t let any of my family get killed! I swear on my name as the Maou Eveam, that I will stop any kinds of actions that would give rise to the desire for revenge!” (Eveam)

For a while, the two of them glared at each other as the silence continued. The first one to open his mouth was Rudolf.

“It seems that you are still quite young” (Rudolf)

“I am fully aware of that! And I recognize that there are parts where I am still lacking! However-” (Eveam)

“This conference” (Rudolf)

“.....hah?” (Eveam)

Rudolf interrupted her and spoke.

“The 『Gabranth』 will definitely try and put a stop to this conference. Are you already aware of their movements?” (Rudolf)

“Amongst my subordinates, there is one that particularly excels at gathering intelligence. I have had that one observe movements of the 『Gabranth』 ” (Eveam)

“Oh, and?” (Rudolf)

“During these past few months, we have also been moving behind the scenes. We have also leaked out false information to confuse them” (Eveam)

“Ooh, now that you mention it, you did do something like that” (Rudolf)

In reality, using influential people from their respective sides, they had performed multiple clandestine meetings already. It was precisely these meetings which were performed to trick the 『Gabranth』. In the clandestine meetings, the conference location, date, time, and other fine details were discussed. Then, that information was stealthily carried to the 『Gabranth』 continent by Eveam's subordinate.

Of course, the 『Gabranth』 would not have just taken the information up front and should have done some of their own investigating. The information they gained on the conference's date and time was the same, but the location was different. A few days earlier, notice of the 『Gabranth』 advancing their army towards the false location of the conference based on that information had arrived. Amongst them, the figure of the Beast King had been detected, so it appeared to be certain that they had been successfully manipulated by the false information.

“Right about now, the 『Gabranth』 should be raiding the pre-prepared false conference location. However, though their appearances may be similar to ours, the ones over there are entirely different people.” (Eveam)

“Hou, though I did hear that someone specializing in fine doll making had created those fakes.....do they resemble all of you so much?” (Rudolf)

“Of course. Unless you actually touch them to confirm, you can't tell based on sight alone” (Eveam)

“Hohou, you certainly do have some excellent subordinates” (Rudolf)

At Rudolf's words, Eveam gazed with slight pride at Kiria. Although Kiria too had attempted to modestly back off, seeing as her face had just slightly loosened, she may have been a little happy. Indeed, the one who had prepared the dolls was none other than Kiria.

(Like he said, I have gained a fine family) (Eveam)

As Eveam thought so, a sense of gratitude welled up once more towards Kiria and co., who had continued to support her.

“If that's the case, then are you saying that there are no problems at all?” (Rudolf)

“Yes” (Eveam)

“For either the 『Gabranth』, this conference, and.....even us 『Humas』?” (Rudolf)

“.....? Just what might you be saying?” (Eveam)

Eveam felt a sense of unease from his sudden shift in tone, with its seemingly hidden meanings. As she did so, he suddenly raised his hand. Then, as if to say it was a signal, one out of the five commanding officers swiftly ran from their place.

Thinking that they may possibly be aiming for Eveam, Aquinas and co. instinctively came closer to her to protect her. However, the officer wasn't aiming for Eveam.

"Wh-what are you!?" (Portnis)

The one being targeted was the witness, Portnis. No, to be exact, it was the staff that Portnis held. As they had simply moved too quickly, Portnis's staff was stolen abruptly, without her being able to do anything about it.

Seeing this scene, majority of the people there were taken aback as they simply stared. They couldn't understand at all what exactly he was doing.

"Destroy it!" (Rudolf)

The one who said that to the officer was Rudolf. The officer gave a small nod as he raised the staff and..

"Pl-please stop it!" (Portnis)

Pariiiiiiiiiiiiiin!

Portnis's words of restraint were useless as the staff was thrown onto the ground. The round ball fitted on its tip shattered and its pieces scattered about.

"Well done" (Rudolf)

At Rudolf's words, the officer simply said "Yes!", and returned to his original position. Seeing that, as expected, Judom raised his voice.

"Oi Rudolf! Just what are you thinking!" (Judom)

"That's right! Are you not aware of exactly what that staff is!" (Portnis)

As Portnis continued after Eveam, Rudolf gave a faint smile as he responded.

"I know what it is. That's why I destroyed it" (Rudolf)

"Wha!" (Portnis)

"Rudolf.....could it be that you....." (Judom)

After seeing Judom tremble, and the astonished Portnis, Eveam finally began to speak.

"Ju-just what does this mean? What are your intentions, King of Victorias!" (Eveam)

All of the 『Evila』 glared at Rudolf. However, even now, his smile did not falter.



“With this, for 24 hours, this place has become a completely isolated world from the outside” (Rudolf)

“A completely isolated.....world?” (Eveam)

Eveam repeated those words, but the one who answered was Judom.

“This 《Sacred Room》 is a place where an ancient hero sacrificed his body, and is the place where holy power is the most strongly concentrated” (Judom)

“Judom.....” (Aquinas)

As Aquinas murmured so, Eveam was taken aback as she looked at Judom.

(I-I see, I felt like I had seen him somewhere before, but he’s the one from that time.....!?)

Up until now, she had no idea exactly who he was, but upon remembering the past happenings, Eveam understood that it was no surprise that he was here.

“You are.....Judom Lankars?” (Eveam)

“Ou, that’s right. But well, you got bigger. When I think about how the Jou-chan from then has now become the Maou-chan, it makes me feel that the flow of time is fast.

Don’t you think so too, Aquinas?” (Judom)

“Fu, truly” (Aquinas)

Aquinas agreed with him as he faintly smiled.

“Your Majesty, right now is not the time for that” (Marione)

After being chided by Marione, Eveam returned to her senses and decided to ask for the continuation of the explanation.

“Th-that’s right, sorry. Judom-dono, could you please continue with your explanation?” (Eveam)

“Ahh, about this place, since the hero’s power was simply too great, upon entering, in order to protect the people inside, this 《Sacred Room》 puts up a powerful barrier” (Judom)

“.....isn’t that a good thing?” (Eveam)

“It’s true that if I tell you just that, this place seems to be the safest possible location, as you can be protected by the hero’s power. However, once you enter, you can’t get out of here for 24 hours” (Judom)

“Wha!? Is that true?” (Eveam)

As he turned toward Eveam and saw her face warped with shock, a bitter smile floated upon his face.

“Yeah, isn’t that right, Portnis?” (Judom)

“Yes, that’s right Judom” (Portnis)

Seeing their intimate exchange of words, anyone would be able to sense that the two of them were likely acquaintances.

“For 24 hours, this room will function to create an absolute protective wall. Originally, this staff.....”

While saying this, she picked up and showed everyone the staff which had been smashed on the ground.

“The tip of this staff had a ball on it right?” (Portnis)

At Portnis’s question, Eveam nodded in response.

“That ball was something created from the 《Hero’s armour》 . If I had to say, it was a 《Hero’s relic》 . Thanks to that ball, if you were to enter into this room with me, then you would be able to freely exit this room” (Portnis)

“Th-then.....” (Eveam)

“.....yes, once 24 hours have elapsed in this 《Sacred Room》 after entry, the barrier will weaken for just a short time. Then we will be able to exit from here but.....right now.....” (Portnis)

Swallowing the words that the ball was now broken, Portnis made a disappointed face as she hung her head in shame. Following this, Judom open his mouth angrily.

“Rudolf, you bastard, you aimed for this from the beginning right? Now that I think of it, initially you had acted strangely when confirming things with Portnis. That was a hint of your plan to do this, wasn’t it?” (Judom)

Indeed, Rudolf had confirmed with Portnis the detailed workings of the 《Sacred Room》 which should have been irrelevant to the conference itself.

“Dennis, you knew as well, didn’t you. And that lot over there too” (Judom)

He glared at the Cabinet Minister Dennis and the five commanding officers. As he did so, the six of them began to chuckle.

“I won’t ask what exactly you’re scheming by shutting us up in this kind of place. Rudolf, you’ve really done it now, haven’t you?” (Judom)

At Judom’s words, Rudolf chuckled.

“He’s done it now? Judom-dono, just what do you think the King of Victorias is.....?” (Eveam)

“Your Majesty, please try to think about it a little” (Kiria)

“Mu, then do you know, Kiria?” (Eveam)

After being scolded by her close aide, Kiria, Eveam pouted slightly.

“Of course. It is likely that he, no, they.....are planning on betraying us” (Kiria)

“Wha!?” (Eveam)

With sudden realization, she turned towards Rudolf. He then

“Hahaha, like you should be the ones to speak of betrayal. Your people have practically patented the art, have you not?” (Rudolf)

“Kuh! King of Victorias! Why would you do such a thing! In the first place, just what do you plan on doing by locking us into here!” (Eveam)

“Do you still not get it, Maou?” (Rudolf)

“.....?” (Eveam)

Everyone paid close attention to the movement of Rudolf’s mouth. As his lips slowly began to move, shocking words entered Eveam’s ears.

“It’s war” (Rudolf)

## Chapter 105 Beginning of Betrayal

---

The 【Mütich Bridge】 ; the bridge that connects the Humas and the Evila continents. Usually Evila are stationed there, and as such it is impossible for the Humas to cross or destroy it.

At present, while the conference is underway, the bridge is defended by 《Cruel Brigade》's 《Rank 5》 Shublarz, 《Rank 6》 Greyald, and an individual named Iraora. He was formerly a member of the 《Cruel Brigade》 and was already tasked with defending the bridge due to his abilities.

Greyald: 「Haa<sup>1</sup>, they're probably at the conference now... Hey, nee-san<sup>2</sup>, isn't this boring?」

The dark-skinned young man, Greyald, was lazily lying on the bridge while looking up towards the sky. Shublarz, who was spoken to, walked towards him as her enormous breasts swayed.

Shublarz: 「Mou<sup>3</sup>, how about you get serious for once?」

She looked down at him and said so as if she were scolding a disobedient child, but the person in question just grinned.

Greyald: 「Ooh, this view is quite nice. Nee-san, if you would stay there and shake your upper bo-buu!」

Greyald was silenced by Shublarz as she stomped on his face

Shublarz: 「Seriously~, you're still a child. It's too early for you to show interest in adults」

Greyald: 「I may not look it, but I'm already over 100 years old!」

He shouts while rubbing his face with teary eyes, but Shublarz ignores him and looks towards the 『Humas』 in the distance. She then directs her focus on the 4 heroes.

Shublarz: (Hmm... So those are the heroes. Oh my, there's a handsome one mixed in!)

While smiling voluptuously, she seductively winks towards Aoyama Taishi. However, there was no reaction from him. He just stood there and stared towards her general direction.

Shublarz: (...What a boring man. He's like a doll)

While thinking that, Iraora approaches them.

Shublarz: 「Oh, Iraora. Aren't you supposed to be at the middle of the bridge?」

Greyald: 「That's right. Leave this place to us and hurry on back to the middle of the bridge. Don't make me say such boring things every time」

Iraora gives an unpleasant look towards Greyald because of his manner of speech.

Greyald: 「Aah? What's with that look?」

The two stared at each other for a while, but Iraora was the one to first look away.

Greyald clicked his tongue and said,

Greyald: 「Hmph, you're a 《Cruel Failure》 so just keep to yourself. Aah, such a pain」

Greyald said that he wasn't comfortable anymore, got up, and turned his back to them as he walked away. Staring at him was the large Iraora. Shublarz felt exasperated and shrugged as she looked at those two. As soon as she was about to leave...

\*Pushu!\* [4](#)

Greyald stopped his feet. No, he was forced to stop. He stopped because he felt an extreme pain running through his body. Then, blood unconsciously spilled from his mouth. He slowly looked downwards to exam his breast. And what he saw was...

A large spear protruding from it.

Greyald: 「Gaha!」

Ironically, despite spewing a large amount of blood, he couldn't fall because he was being supported by the spear

Iraora: 「Yo, bouya<sup>5</sup>, how's it feel getting dominated by a 《Cruel Failure》 ?」

Greyald: 「You... Bastard...」

The spear was pulled out of him, and Greyald was finally able to fall onto the ground.

Shublarz: 「Greyald!」

Naturally Shublarz, who witnessed what had just happened, shouted in shock. That couldn't be helped. They never got along well, but she never imagined that Iraora would attempt to kill Greyald.

Greyald was completely defenseless, and as a result was at Death's door. At present, all he could do was lay on the ground while breathing lightly.

Iraora: 「Dahahahahahaha! 《Cruel Rank 6》 Greyald falls here! What a sorry sight! Dahahahaha!」

Shublarz: 「Iraora! Do you have any idea what you're doing!? This is amicide! The worst crime!」

Iraora grimaces and laughs at her.

Iraora: 「What are you saying? You're going to die here as well. That's the scenario, you get it?」

Shublarz: 「Scenario...? What are you...」

Iraora: 「Oraaa<sup>6</sup>! Move according to the scenario, you bitches!」

Iraora's shout serving as a trigger, 『Humas』 soldiers all move at once towards the 『Evila』. Iraora's subordinates were the only ones who weren't targeted. His subordinates also turn against the 『Evila』, against their own race.

Shublarz: 「Just... What's going on...?」

Seeing Iraora prowling as Greyald and her own subordinates were getting attacked, it was obvious that he was cooperating with them.

Iraora: 「Dahaha! You're next, Shublarz」

Shublarz: 「Kuh<sup>7</sup>! You, are you planning on betraying us?」

Iraora: 「Betray? Who are you accusing of betrayal?」

Shublarz: 「Eh?」

Iraora: 「I've only pledged my allegiance to one person. That person is not Demon Lord Eveam」

Shublarz: 「What!?!」

Iraora: 「And don't go thinking that I'll always be beneath you guys, you hear?」

After saying so, his body releases an enormous wave of magic. Magical power vastly superior to their own can be felt along with his killing intent. Iraora's body slowly began to turn red like lava.

Shublarz: 「Iraora... You... Since when did you have such power...」

Iraora: 「Hmph, 'that person' gave it to me! I haven't completely mastered it yet, but I'd guess I'm about 3, 4 times stronger than you guys right now? Dahahahaha!」

Shublarz gulps as she witnesses Iraora's change.

「Please run away, Shublarz-sama!<sup>8</sup>」

Shublarz: 「You guys!」

Shublarz's subordinates stand in front of her. Despite their bodies shaking in fear, they desperately try to protect Shublarz.

Iraora: 「Dahaha, you're making me cry. But...」

Iraora swipes the spear he was holding horizontally. The sound of air being cut reached her ears, and then...

Shublarz: 「...Eh?」

In front of Shublarz's eyes were the sight of her subordinates, their bodies having been sliced in two, and unquestionably dead.

Shublarz: 「Ah... Ah... AAAAAHHHHHH!」

Shublarz, blinded with rage, jumped off the ground towards Iraora and attacked him with her sharp nails.

\*pusu!\*[9](#)

She closed the gap between them in an instant with her speed, and she... failed to pierce through Iraora with her nails.

Iraora: 「Mmm, that stung a little」

Her nails did in fact pierce his skin, but against his toned, muscular body, the only damage that was inflicted was similar to having been pierced with a thumbtack.

Iraora glares at the woman who was in his breast.

She felt goosebumps crawl down her spine and clearly realized she would die if she stayed there.

\*woosh!\*

An arm as thick as a person came ripping through the air towards Shublarz. She couldn't move, however, as if she were frozen in fear.

Iraora: 「Die, 《Rank 5》 !」

'She was completely crushed'. Anyone who saw what was happening would think the same. However...

\*bakiiiiin!\*[10](#)

Shublarz was blown away. Strangely enough, she didn't feel any pain. Why? She felt something warm enveloping her body.

She falls to the ground with a thud. She then finally realizes that she was saved by someone.

Shublarz: 「Greyald!」

The one who protected her from Iraora's attack was Greyald. It was fortunate that she was able to be saved, but he received Iraora's devastating attack with his body.

He had already been pierced through his chest with a spear, and above that he had taken such an attack. At this point, he was literally beyond help.

Sure enough, his body was completely covered in blood. The attack he had just received had pulverized his bones. His internal organs were most likely crushed. On top of that, he had already lost a lot of blood.

Greyald: 「Nee...san... Haa... Haa... Haa... Haa... Run... Away... 」

Shublarz: 「Greyald!」

Possibly because Shublarz was blown so far away, Iraora slowly walked towards Greyald. Each step sounded like that of an executioner, walking towards a criminal to carry out his death sentence.

Greyald: 「Please... Hurry... Tell the... Demon Lord... About this...」

Shublarz: 「But you!」

Greyald: 「At this rate... We'll just die... A dog's death... Please...」

Shublarz: 「...Greyald...」

Tears flow down Shublarz's face and drop onto Greyald.

Greyald: 「Haha.. To think you'd... Cry for me... I'm... happy」

Shublarz: 「...Idiot」

Greyald: 「Haha... Got it... Nee-san...?」

Greyald slowly rises and...

Greyald: 「Gaha!」

He coughs up blood, but he continues to rise. At this point it wouldn't be surprised if he fell into shock and died from the pain, but in this case the pain was the only thing keeping him conscious.

Greyald: (...I'll protect Nee-san)

His resolves strengthens as he witnesses the executioner coming towards them.



Greyald: 「Go! Don't let... Our lives... Go to waste!」

Shublarz: 「Greyald... Kuh!」

Shublarz discards her thoughts of staying and leaves.

Iraora: 「Hm? Oh man, you're still standing in that condition?」

Greyald: 「Keh<sup>[11](#)</sup>, it sucks but... It's in my nature to... protect women」

Feeling had left his body to the point that he wasn't even sure if he was standing or not.

Iraora: 「...You look like you'd die even if I left you alone, but I've still got a grudge against you for taking my position」

Greyald: 「Haha... Still hung up over... something boring like... that? Are you some... brat?」

Iraora's killing intent grows even larger upon hearing those words

Greyald: (...Nee-san, it'd be great if you can escape safely)

Iraora's fist closes in on his face.

Greyald: (Bye bye... Nee-san)<sup>[12](#)</sup>

Greyald slowly closes his eyes.

\*DOKAAAAAAAAAAAAAN!\* <sup>[13](#)</sup>

An enormous explosion envelopes the surrounding area.

Shublarz: 「...!?」

Shublarz, hearing the explosion, looks back once but quickly resumes running.

Shublarz: (Greyald...)

She understood that the explosion was without a doubt caused by Greyald. She also understood that the explosion meant that he had died.

Shublarz, however, could not stop. For Greyald's sake and for her subordinates that had died, she needed to deliver this information to Demon Lord Eveam.

She clenched her teeth so hard that blood began dripping from her mouth. She ran with all her might towards her destination while crying.

Magic Explosion. It is a phenomenon caused by the magic control 『Evila』 are proficient at. Normally if you finely control magic it is possible to give it visible form, and it is even possible to form it into a sphere or sharpen it like a blade.

It is also possible to take magic and densely compress it, then release it in an instant to cause an explosion. Of course, if one fails to control it well there is a risk of self-destructing.

What Greyald had done was use his own body as an intermediary to compress all of his magic power. Then he instantaneously released it. In addition to his magic power, he had also compressed all of his remaining life force. The explosion caused by this would be tremendous.

Due to Greyald's explosion, a massive crater with a 50m radius formed at the edge of the 【Mütich Bridge】 .

If Greyald hadn't been blown away by Iraora's attack, the bridge would have been completely destroyed. Due to the strong shockwaves several cracks had formed in various places on the bridge, and those that were fighting near the edge were sent flying into the sea.

And Iraora, who was standing in the epicenter of the explosion...

Iraora: 「Ow... That fucking bastard, causing a Magic Explosion」

...Was fine. He was not, however, completely unharmed. His right hand was missing from the wrist, he had wounds all over his body, and it seemed like he was having trouble just standing up. The fact that he was still alive after taking the explosion head on was proof of just how abnormal he was.

「Iraora-sama! You were alright!」

A man that seemed to be Iraora's subordinate approached him.

Iraora: 「Aah. What happened to the others?」

Soldier: 「Most fell into the sea. The only ones remaining are our squad!」

Iraora: 「Hohou<sup>14</sup>. Well, it's a bit different from what was planned, but I guess this mission was a success」

Soldier: 「What shall we do with Shublarz who ran away!」

Iraora: 「Leave her be. By the time she arrives everything will already be over. No, maybe I should say... It'll have begun?」

Iraora says so as he smiles, his words hinting at hidden intentions.

Iraora: 「I need to let this body rest for a while. You guys clean up after this mess」

Soldier: 「Yes sir!」

The subordinate courteously bows and leaves.

Iraora: 「Tsk, I say something like that, but it feels like it'll take a bit of time for this body to heal」

He then looks down with an annoyed face towards the center of the crater.

Iraora: 「Regret in the afterlife, you 《Cruel》 piece of shit」

Iraora says so as he spits, then leaves.

---

## Author Note

Hm... Truth be told I wanted to write more about Greyald.

Like what happened during the past half year... Or maybe writing about him in an extra chapter.

In a few more chapters, the main character will...

## Chapter 106 Beginning of War

---

At the same time, an abnormal situation was occurring at 【Xaos】. Armored troops broke inside the country and began to cast spells everywhere. As buildings had been damaged from these attacks, people were desperately trying to escape in the midst of the chaos caused by the sudden assault.

It went without saying that the soldiers in charge of defending the country went to repel the attack, but the difference in numbers and strength was overwhelming. And above all-

“W-What in the hell are they doing here!?”(Soldier A)

“Where in the hell did all of them come from. There is just so many of them!?”(Soldier B)

The soldiers were completely confused. The ones who were attacking their country were a force clearly commanded with great leadership. And, above all else, the ones attacking them were the 『Gabranth』.

Since the bridge between the Gabranth Continent (which the 『Evila』 refer to as the Beast Territory) and the Demon World was destroyed by the Demon Lord, there shouldn't have been a way for them to enter the Evila Continent. However, in the case of powerful individuals, they would certainly be able to find a way to cross the sea in order to make their way here.

However, with these numbers, it was as if their entire military force was participating in the assault, or so the 『Evila』 had judged, even though they believed such a feat was impossible. Everyone was confused, it was unbelievable that they made it all the way over here..

This 【Xaos】 is a country where many villages and towns have been concentrated. When compared to other kingdoms, the magnitude of the capital was clearly massive. The country that seemed to spread out from the Demon Lord's Castle as the centre, as if enclosing said castle, was roughly divided into five parts: the west district, south district, east district, north district, and the central district. Each respective section was comprised of multiple towns that were founded by the various 『Evila』 races.

And currently, at the place in the west district where the 『Evila』 referred to as the 『Feathered One』 were gathering-

“Nyow (now), time to let loose.” (???)

A figure that looked like an anthropomorphic black panther flashed their sharp eyes at the enemy, as if marking them as one’s prey. Their smiling expression was filled with ferocity so eerie, it evoked fear in all those who saw it.

“Oi oi, Crouch. Leave some for me, alright?” (???)

There was the one who called out to the Black Panther Crouch; he was none other than the second prince of 【Passion】 Lenion King, whose face also bore a savage smile while he glared at the Evila.

“Roger, nya. Then, how about half of them, nya?” (Crouch)

“No, 7:3 in my favor.” (Lenion)

“Muu... Lenion-sama is so unfair, nya. I want to kill them too, nya.” (Crouch)

They appeared to be sulking, as if in a bad mood. Although this appearance could be considered rather cute if they were a normal female, as the subject was Crouch, the eeriness only increased.

“A~a~a, I get it, I get it. Then how bout we make it a game of who can kill the most?” (Lenion)

“Funya! I’m in, nya!” (Crouch)

As they said that, the two of them unleashed their bloodlust towards the soldiers who were simply staring at them, dumbfounded. The ones that received the bloodthirst head-on unconsciously trembled, feeling a premonition of death from the difference in their levels.

On the other side, in the east district, large numbers of monsters were rampaging. This was Crouch’s handiwork. During the earlier confrontation with the 『Evila』, Crouch had made many monsters appear from their shadow. Currently, they were once again using strong monsters as pawns.

Since the monsters had died once, their skin, unlike normal monsters, had been subject to corrosion. It was as if they had been turned into zombie-like beings. Even so, their strength was not inferior compared to when they were alive. In addition, as they were made to feel no pain, they had been turned into extremely troublesome foes.

Furthermore, since there were monsters of Ranks S and SS mixed in, even the 『Evila』 who possessed exceptionally high magic power would have trouble dealing with them. On top of all that, their enemy was not just a singular monster, but a countless number of them, the numbers were so abundant that it would cause one to fall into despair.

In addition to this, possibly due to possessing thoughts of not wanting to cause extensive damage to the country with the use of magic, they were prevented from using their power to the fullest. Regardless, the monsters mercilessly destroyed the surroundings.

A single 『Evila』 child had failed to flee and was about to be attacked by a monster. Although the soldiers had all shouted “Nooo!”, as the gap between them was too large, the soldiers were powerless to save them. As everyone was about to give up-

Dogon!

Suddenly, something from the sky crashed on top of the monster. It fainted in agony as it suffered a huge blow to its back. Following this, the thing that had fallen grabbed the monster by the tail and vigorously threw it away.

“Listen, you fools! Don’t hold back! Deal with them using your full power!” (???)

The one who said that was the 《Rank 4》 of the Demon Lord’s Private Corps 《Cruel》, Ornoth. The soldiers’ faces brightened to Ornoth’s presence.

“If this goes on, the country will get destroyed! Remember your pride as 『Evila』 and greet them with your best! You got that!?” (Ornoth)

Ornoth’s deep voice pleasantly resounded through the surroundings. Everyone’s morale was uplifted by hearing his voice quaking the atmosphere.

“Uoooooooooooooh!” (Soldiers)

Everyone was completely different from before as they started to attack the monsters without restraint. Upon seeing that, Ornoth gave an approving nod before he approached the child.

“It’s dangerous here. Run away quickly.” (Ornoth)

“U-un.” (Child) [Un – yes, nod]

The child fled the area with small brisk footsteps as Ornoth leaped onto the roof of a nearby building to survey the area. There was smoke and fire rising up in several places, roars were heard reverberating as they payed no heed to the screams of the people. Ornoth could only grit his teeth at the scene in front of him.

“Ku.....Aquinas’ fear was spot on, huh. But to think it would turn out like thi.....then the conference...” (Ornoth)

Aquinas had a bad feeling about things in the country and so he requested for his friend, Ornoth, to return to the country. Although he felt admiration towards Aquinas’s clairvoyance, he still couldn’t help but have doubts about how the 『Gabranth』 had brought their military all the way here.

“No, I should get the situation under control before solving that mystery.” (Ornoth)

With the main force of the Evila currently away from the country, Ornoth had already come to the conclusion that his actions would be crucial here.

This is war. Therefore, there had to be a commander leading the war. If the commander was defeated, then, at the very least, the opposing troops’ morale would fall. However, each district would be expected to have its own commander. He felt that he should put a stop the ones that would be the most troublesome first.

While Ornoth was thinking this, he calmly observed the area with Sharp eyes.

“.....They are!?” (Ornoth)

Ornoth was surprised by the scene that he had witnessed. However, as he had determined that it was the location where he should head to, he moved towards it.

The four heroes were still trying to gasp the current sight in front of them.

『Gabranth』 soldiers swung mercilessly at the backs of the fleeing 『Evila』. One of them was laughing while they continued to stab a woman who was screaming and crying. Skulls were crushed by the beastmen’s superior physical strength. A person, who had both arms sliced off, attempted to run away to save their own life, but no sooner were they hunted down and beheaded.

No matter where one looked, everything was painted with blood; The surroundings smelled of nothing but smoke and blood; Rolling heads and piled corpses littered the ground. Seeing this scene straight from hell, one of the heroes, Aoyama Taishi, muttered in a tiny voice.

“Wha.....what isn’t this.....i-isn’t this going too far?” (Taishi)

Taishi's face was pale and stiff at the surreal scene before him. The other three had most likely shared the same thoughts as they stood still, stunned. In particular, Minamoto Shuri was covering her mouth in order to fight the nausea.

"What are you doing! Get them!" (???)

The one who tried to call them into action was a soldier, who had assisted them in mock battles for training countless times before. All four of them had the impression that he was a nice young man who was really nice to children as well as having a nice smile. Several days ago, he had also become a companion whom they had passed the border with together.

However, now his armor was splattered in blood; It was clear countless ones had lost their lives at his hands.

"Eh... but... they'll die... right? T-the enemies aren't just some monsters." (Taishi)

Holding back the feeling of uneasiness, Taishi uneasily said that.

"Of course! This is war, you know! I will leave the north district to you, heroes! Do you understand? If you don't kill, you'll be killed." (Young soldier)

After he said that, the four of them wordlessly watched him leave as he returned to his post.

Then, a 『Evila』 child, who was involved in the aftermath of magic, had been thrown towards them.

The child's body was all beaten up, and tears and snot were streaming down their face. One of the child's arms was bent in an abnormal way. The poor child, despite being around age of five, was still struggling desperately to get away.

"O-oi, you okay?" (Taishi)

Taishi instinctively called out while reaching his hand out towards the child. When-  
Bishun!

A knife appeared out from the child's chest. No, they were pierced through the back with a sword. Once the heroes saw that completely surreal spectacle-

"Hii!" (Heroes)

All four of them squealed.

"No... it... hurts... not yet..." (Child)



The child grasped onto the sword that stuck out of their chest with both hands. Yet, no matter how hard they pulled, the sword didn't even move an inch. Their hands became stained red with blood from grasping the blade.

"Shut up!" (???)

Bushyuu!

The sword was vigorously pulled out before once again being stabbed into the back of the child, causing them to fall to the ground. However, most likely due to the extraordinary vitality that the 『Evila』 possess, the child was still barely alive as they raised their trembling hand towards the four, as if pleading for something.

"I... don't... want... to... die...yet..." (Child)

Gusa!

The child was stabbed in the back once more. This time, it had been the end of them.

"U.... Ubu.....!?"

The other three heroes, Taishi excluded, fell to their knees and vomited.

Taishi gazed upon the scene before him once more. He was unsure as to whether this was truly reality. As he fought an awful, stifling feeling, he recalled the conversation with the king before coming here.

## Chapter 107

### The Heroes Who Came To Know Of Reality

---

“We’re going to betray the 『Evila』 ? Is that true?” (Taishi)

“Yeah” (Rudolf)

The one who answered Taishi’s question was King Rudolf. Currently, the only ones in that location were the four heroes and the king. As the king had told them he had something confidential he would like to discuss, the heroes had come to the King’s Office. However, he had then told them that he would betray the 『Evila』 at the conference.

“So was the alliance a lie?” (Shinobu)

Shinobu Akamori furrowed her brow as she asked.

“That’s right. I sent a spy to the 『Evila』 continent. There’s no doubt about it” (Rudolf)

“N-no way.....even though I had thought things would be settled without fighting, just what are the 『Evila』 thinking!” (Chika)

The one who revealed her indignation was Chika Suzumiya.

“So will the conference be cancelled?” (Shuri)

“No, this is the first time I’ve felt such anger. In spite of them continuously speaking so much about peace, in the end it was just a means to eradicate us. If it’s like this, those who have died won’t be able to rest in peace.” (Rudolf)

Upon seeing him utter those words with a bitter face, everyone held sympathy for Rudolf.

“The conference won’t be cancelled. On the other hand, I was thinking of using the conference to show them up” (Rudolf)

“Wh-what do you plan on doing?” (Shinobu)

“If they’re planning on belittling alliances, then we’ll just show them the power of alliances” (Rudolf)

“.....don’t tell me!” (Shinobu)

Realizing his meaning, Shinobu gasped.

“We’ll make an alliance with the 『Gabranth』 . Following that, during the conference, we’ll conduct a surprise attack on the 【Demon Country】 so that they never again plan to do such a stupid thing.” (Rudolf)

The four of them were honestly surprised to hear a statement proposing an alliance with the 『Gabranth』 , who, while not to the same degree as the 『Evila』 , also had some inter-species hostility. However, Taishi felt that their opponent was also someone who couldn’t be defeated without using such measures.

“For the few days leading up to the conference, I want to leave a mission to you all” (Rudolf)

“A mission.....you say?” (Taishi)

Taishi asked dubiously.

According to what Rudolf said, he wanted them, along with the second army division Vale and his subordinates, to head towards the 『Evila』 ’s continent a few days before the conference. There, they would merge with the 『Gabranth』 national army, and together they would suppress the 『Evila Capital: Xaos』 .

However, a single problem had emerged within that plan. Taishi and co. had heard about an 『Evila』 guard being posted on the bridge. From what they had heard, said guard would not allow them to cross the bridge so easily.

When they raised this issue, Rudolf told them that it was not a problem. It appeared that the 『Evila』 on standby there, an individual who goes by the name of Iraora, was actually one of their allies. That Iraora also seemed to be opposed the Maou’s way of doing things, saying that, should the opportunity present itself, they would love to be able to punish the Maou.

Although Taishi was surprised at all the arrangements that had already been made, upon thinking about the current Maou, who was even thought of in such a way by one of the same kin, he concluded that the Maou did not have the caliber to properly rule after all. If they were a good Maou, he thought that everyone would naturally want to follow them.

After crossing the bridge, they were to conceal themselves until the day of the conference. Then, Rudolf wanted them, together with the 『Gabranth』 , to invade 【Xaos】 on the conference day.

Rudolf explained that so long as the other side focused their forces on the conference, they would not try for any useless resistance against the four heroes and the 『Gabranth』 National Army, and would simply surrender.

Hearing that, Taishi and co. gave a sigh of relief. It was true that they too believed that there was no way a country without its strongest forces would be capable of fighting against the strongest forces from both the 『Humas』 and the 『Gabranth』 .

After knowing that they wouldn't have to needlessly injure others, Taishi and co. held their chests in relief.

"This is not a war, but a suppression to avoid the needless spilling of any blood. Will you do this for us?" (Rudolf)

Rudolf appealed to them with an earnest expression. The four of them turned towards each other, strongly nodded, and-

"Leave it to us! We will seize peace!" (Taishi, Chika, Shuri, Shinobu)

-shouted out a reassuring line. Their expressions did not have a single shadow of doubt. Instead, only a refreshing amount of hope was reflected from their countenance.

This was not a war. If that was the case, then people would likely not die. Thinking that, all four of them had arrived at a much too simple answer. It was as though the four were dolls created without a single doubt in their minds, only aware of the word 'peace'.

Upon seeing the four, King Rudolf gave a dark smile. Failing to realize that, the four of them believed in Rudolf's words and proceeded towards the 【Evila Capital: Xaos】 .

As Taishi recalled their conversation with King Rudolf, he tried thinking once more about why they were in this kind of place.

(Th-that's right.....we came here to suppress.....because he said that this.....wasn't a war) (Taishi)

Although Taishi had repeated Rudolf's words in his heart, it was clear that the scene playing out in front of him was the very definition of war. The sound of swords clashing against each other. Magic flying all over the place, destroying everything in its path. And within that ensuing chaos, the lives that were easily lost.

(Wh-why are they fighting.....wasn't it going to end after we recommended that they surrender.....?) (Taishi)

In his mind, he felt that as long as they showed them this degree of war potential and urged them to surrender, they would definitely win due to a bloodless surrender. He believed that they wouldn't needlessly resist, bringing everything to a conclusion without anyone getting hurt.

But reality wasn't the same. Holding their breath on the outskirts of this country, they had waited for the signal. Then suddenly, someone who seemed like one of the top in the 『Gabranth』, gave the signal to attack.

Upon receiving the signal, an incredible amount of bloodlust began to overflow from their comrades. Rather than trying to press them to surrender, the atmosphere they exuded seemed as if they intended to kill everyone, down to the very last man. And such a sentiment had magnificently hit its mark.

Even the 『Human』 soldiers that the heroes were familiar with began to unsheathe their swords without any agitation as they shot magic towards the defenceless 『Evila』. Unlike their usually kind selves, Taishi felt overwhelmed by their grave faces.

Seeing that scene, they finally, for the first time, understood. The suppression that they had been thinking of was never something pretty. Instead, it had just simply replaced the word 'war'.

"H-heh Taishi.....we.....this....." (Chika)

It was clear at a glance that Chika was completely confused. She desperately tried to stop the trembling of her lips, yet was unconsciously unable to do so. Her eyes were red and teary. As an 『Evila』 child had been killed in front of them earlier, the other girls were also making the same expression.

"Haa haa haa.....wh-what should we do?" (Taishi)

Taishi pitifully uttered these words in a whisper.

"Do-don't ask me.....how could I know.....there's no way I could know....." (Chika)

Chika responded with words as though it were obvious, and, as though seeking an answer, looked towards the faces of the other two for affirmation. However, Shuri was crying with her head down while Shinobu had frozen up in a daze.

But within that battlefield, the four of them were seen by a terribly discomforting existence. And that existence was wearing an appearance like those of their enemies.

"I won't forgive you! You 『Humas』 !" (Evila)

A single 『Evila』, with an incredibly angry expression, was holding a sword while heading their way. Although Taishi and co. weren't doing anything, it didn't matter to the 『Evila』 whether it had been the 『Humas』 or the 『Gabranth』 that had created this scene.

All that was there was the idea that because they were enemies, they must be killed. If they didn't do that, then they would be killed. As they couldn't forgive those who had messed up their country like this, their swords were filled with killing intent.

Taishi saw the 『Evila』 coming towards them, yet his body had frozen up like stone and wouldn't move. A sword was at his waist. Unless he drew it and fought back, he would undoubtedly fall prey to that killing intent.

Although he understood that in his head, the one coming towards him was a person who could speak words. They were not monsters. Up until now, he had fought and killed a large number of monsters. He had also fought other people in spars. However, he had not killed another person.

"I-I know, if I kn-knock him out without killing him then" (Taishi)

What kind of outcome would result if someone incapable of controlling their trembling body continued to think such naïve thoughts?

"Taishi, run!" (Chika)

Though Chika's words reached him, Taishi didn't move. No, he couldn't move. It was the result of having a half-hearted resolve, no, it was a resolve that didn't even reach the level of being half-hearted.

As a result, he had become completely frozen.

(I-I can't move.....) (Taishi)

Even though he had drawn his sword and taken his stance in his head, not even his fingertips would move. Not only that, unconsciously, before he even realized it, his legs had given out and he had fallen on his behind.

"Ah, ahhhh....." (Taishi)

The 『Evila』 mercilessly closed the space between them, and swung his sword. Forgetting to blink, Taishi simply continued to watch as though halfway through, the scene nearing him was happening to someone else.

However, upon seeing his opponent's eyes, Taishi suddenly gasped as he awoke to the strong realization that this was certainly reality. Following this, as he covered his body with his arms, he-

"N-nooooooooooooooooooooooooooooo!" (Taishi)

-screamed as loud as he could.

However, his opponent's killing blade continued to draw closer without any signs of stopping. And then,

“Achoooooooooou!” (???)

A voice that seemed to come from a kung-fu movie echoed, and then someone-  
Bakiii!

-sent the 『Evila』, who had been approaching Taishi, flying. The momentum of the attack caused the 『Evila』 to destroy a building upon crashing into it.

Taishi, no, the four people including Taishi became completely dumbfounded. All four of them had expected Taishi to die right there. They thought that they, who had frozen in fear and bewilderment, would simply die without being able to use a single technique. But then someone had suddenly appeared, and as a result, they had all been saved.

“Ah.....ah.....?” (Taishi)

Having felt a strong premonition of death, Taishi's face drained of blood as he looked at the person in front of him. The other three also gave an expression as though they had forgotten how to breathe.

They may have been saved. However, when they thought of what they had to say, the words just wouldn't come out so easily.

As though completely ignoring their feelings, the person in question pointed their finger at the 『Evila』 that was blown away and-

“Koreee! Couldn't you be a bit more quiet! You'll wake Shishou up!” (???)

-their face swelled up in displeasure as they said that. That scene truly made one feel that it wasn't suited for a war at all. Taishi once again observed that person, even though he was lying on his side.

Their age appeared to be around 11 to 12 years old. From their pale purple, bobbed hair, a long ahoge bounced about. On their head, a small horn that appeared to appeal its existence was perched there. Wearing a light blue dougi, the child's face appeared appropriately young. One could take such a face to belong to either that of a girl or a boy.

Their round eyes and short nose gave a certain charm. They were a child that would simply make anyone older than them want to give them a hug. And when that child suddenly turned around, his eyes were taken away by what entered his eyes.

It was the character that was on the back of the dougi they were wearing. It was undoubtedly the character 『文』. While he wondered why Kanji existed in this world, he was obviously unable to come with an answer. All that he knew right now was that they had all been saved by this child.

And that child had begun to hold their head in their hands in anguish.

“Ahh~ geez! To think that it's become this noisyyy! Don't you know how mad Shishou gets when you wake him up! Just recently, just because he said I woke him up a bit badly, he used me as an experimental subject for his magic!” (Ahoge Child)

The heroes were stunned as they watched the child who had somehow suddenly begun to cry and shout.

“And just a few days ago.....ahh, how terribly terrifying.....” (Ahoge Child)

This time their face grew pale as they began to tremble. And then, once again they pointed their finger at the same place and-

“If Shishou wakes up in a bad mood, then you have to take responsibilityyyyyyy!” (Ahoge Child)

Then, something fell from the sky. And then, without making a loud noise at all, the one who appeared was-

“Hm? As I thought, are all of you heroes?” (Ornoth)

-Ornoth, the one who was 《Ranked Fourth》 in 《Cruel》.

“Hm? Who might you be?” (Ahoge Child)

The child with the ahoge glanced at Ornoth, who had suddenly appeared.

“Hou, you appeared to be an 『Evila』, but do you not know of me?” (Ornoth)

“I don't know you!” (Ahoge Child)

Ornoth surveyed the surroundings and, upon seeing the blown away 『Evila』, looked at the child with a sharp glance.

“Did you do that?” (Ornoth)

“That's right! He was yelling with a loud voice, so I stopped him!” (Ahoge Child)

“.....” (Ornoth)

Ornoth looked at the child, and made a dubious face while thinking of how a child like this could defeat an 『Evila』 soldier. In general, 『Evila』 possessed high physical



capabilities. Yet, it was difficult to think that a simple child's attack could do such a thing. However, on the side of the fallen 『Evila』 was the imprint of a small fist.

(In one hit.....? This child.....can do that.) (Ornoth)

Ornoth calmly analyzed the child's battle capabilities, and decided that it would be dangerous to make light of them because they were a child.

"Allow me to ask one thing. You said that you stopped them because they were letting out a loud voice, but are you a comrade of the heroes over there?" (Ornoth)

".....what? Who do you mean by heroes?" (Ahoge Child)

The child gave a blank look as they tilted their head. He judged that the child wasn't lying with such an appearance. In other words, the child had no connections with the heroes.

".....if that's the case, then leave this place. I have some business with those heroes over there" (Ornoth)

After being glared at by Ornoth, the heroes' bodies gave a start and began to tremble. However, at his words, the child began to yell with their mouth tapered to a point.

"I can't let you do that!" (Ahoge Child)

At their response, his eyes widened with surprise. He couldn't understand why the child would refuse, even though they weren't comrades.

".....why?" (Ornoth)

As he asked, the child rapidly began to talk.

"You plan on doing something here right? And plan on being noisy again right?" (Ahoge Child)

".....what are you saying?" (Ornoth)

"You can't! You ab~solutely can't! If you do that....." (Ahoge Child)

".....?" (Ornoth)

"You can't you can't you can't you can't you can'tttttttt! You AB~SOLUTELY CAN'T do something like thattttt!" (Ahoge Child)

The child shook their head violently as they whole-heartedly refused. And then, when Ornoth thought that the child suddenly stopped, they deeply inhaled and-

"If you do something like that, then Shishou's going to wake upppppp!" (Ahoge Child)

An incredibly loud shout echoed throughout the surroundings. Then,  
Pokan!

“Nuwaah!” (Ahoge Child)

A book suddenly came flying at the child’s head. The hit child then-

“Nuwahhhh! It-it hurttttssss! It hurts a lotttt!” (Ahoge Child)

-rolled upon the ground while hold their head. Tashi and co. had their sight stolen by the child’s actions, yet, Ornoth alone was looking at a different place.

It was a single room on the second floor of a nearby building. He confirmed with his eyes that a single person had appeared from the window there.

Indeed, this was undoubtedly the person who had just thrown the book at the child. Upon judging that, Ornoth gazed at them with wary eyes.

And then, that person’s eyes furrowed with great displeasure as he spoke.

“You’re the loudest of them all!” (???)

Standing there was a man of the 『Imp Race』 clad in a red robe.

# KONJIKI NO WORD MASTER

---

## Chapter 108

### Enter! Okamura Hiiro!

---

On that day, due to reading a book until the break of dawn, Hiiro had been deprived of sleep. Thus, Okamura Hiiro had decided to pass the entire day simply sleeping, telling his colleagues his intentions before heading to his room. Concerning this room in the inn, ever since Hiiro had arrived in the 【Evila Capital: Xaos】 , he had been in its care for quite a while.

Although it could be said that Hiiro had been taken care of quite considerably, it had only been barely a week since Hiiro had arrived in this country. Up until then, however, Hiiro had seen plenty of the sights of the Demon World, going around to many places as he fully enjoyed the experience.

Various 『Evila』 settlements. Mountains and seas. Monster dens that have been specified as danger zones. Hiiro had visited a variety of places in the past 6 months. Of course, Hiiro had not yet explored every inch of the continent. As his travelling companions had told Hiiro that they were heading to the the 【Demon Capital】 in order to take care of some errand, Hiiro had simply ended up in the capital.

If he were to look back on it now, it seemed that Hiiro had single-mindedly been moving about without rest. As his travelling companions had suddenly awakened to monster hunting, they would often offer to go help people, going out whenever they pleased. As such, Hiiro, who had been completely at their mercy, had been sent into an everyday life of performing exhaustive labour.

However, the one thing that Hiiro did not feel was boredom. Delicious food and rare books. Thanks to such hard labour, Hiiro was able to come across many things. Furthermore, during the times where Hiiro had accompanied his companions during monster hunting, his own level had increased quite significantly. His level was now so high that, should one compare it to his level when he was summoned, they would doubt their own eyes in the face of such a growth rate.

Thus, even though Hiiro held thoughts of annoyance due to being forced to follow such companions, as he would stand to gain many things, he was unable to completely deny their requests, causing Hiiro to continue to associate himself with them.

And thus, this time, Hiiro had arrived at the 【Evila Capital: Xaos】 in this manner. As

they were already here, for the purpose of Hiiro's goal of viewing the material in the 《Grand Fortuna Library's》 《Basement 5》, the floor that required permission from Royalty to enter, Hiiro had asked for entry permission from one of his travelling companions.

As he had arrived here according to his companion's instructions, it was necessary for them to provide him with the means to enter 《Basement 5》 as originally planned. However, throughout this one week period, he had not received any news from his colleague. As such, it was possible that they were considerably struggling to provide such means.

Although this problem had actually been resolved mid-way, Hiiro had yet to transmit this information to his currently absent companion. 'Well, it should be fine if we talk about it once she comes back'. Thinking such thoughts, Hiiro did not pay the issue any mind.

Even today, Hiiro contemplated whether or not there would be any news from them as he rested in his bed. Yet, as he did so, he heard something noisy coming from outside. Actually, even from within the inn, the sound of people hurriedly running away with a \*batabata\*(1) could also be heard. It was as if they were trying to flee from something.

No, this level of volume could not be merely described as noisy. It was a roar. The sounds of buildings collapsing and cutlery being chafed against each other. Sounds of explosions and other noises. Hiiro's irritation gradually began to accumulate.

Hiiro: (The hell's going on today.....is there a festival going on or something?)

As he was still lying in his bed, Hiiro's pleasant sleepiness had been brutally purged as his displeasure began to increase.

Hiiro: (That bastard.....what the hell are they doing?)

As he was continually frustrated, he recalled that, before he had gone to bed, he had left the strict order of 「Don't you dare wake me up」 to one of his companions. Even though he included the implied message of 'You know what will happen if you cause a commotion, right?', Hiiro was still doubtful as to whether they had understood such implications. However, Hiiro also recalled them tensely saluting with a pale face.

Even though that individual was an idiot, as they would abide by Hiiro's orders, Hiiro

had come to more or less trust them. However, it had apparently turned into an uproar that this individual could not control, or so it would seem.

The reason for this assessment was because of a faint but familiar voice that had entered Hiiro's ears.

???: 「Hey you! Can't you be a little bit quieter!? Shishou will wake up, you know!？」

It was that bastard's voice. As they had apparently stepped out in order to try and calm the uproar, Hiiro decided to leave it to them as he closed his eyelids once again, indulging in indolence.

???: 「A~mou(2)! If you make this much noise then-! Do you know how bad it is to disturb Shishou's sleep!? Before this, even though I had apologized for slightly waking him up, he made me into his magic training partner desu zoo(3)!」

As if Hiiro was saying that bastard's voice was slightly too tense, his eyebrows moved with a \*pikuri\*(4) as Hiiro rolled over.

???: 「If Shishou wakes up grumpy, I want you to take responsibility desu zoouoooo~!」

Hiiro's eyebrows once again moved with a \*pikuri\*. They were screaming so loudly that their voice could be clearly heard even from here. Honestly, Hiiro found it noisy(5).

Although the tone of the voice had soon diminished, one could still hear the sounds of talking. As Hiiro thought 'do it somewhere else,' he once again rolled his body over.

???: 「No no no no no desu zoouoooo-! That is absolu~tely bad desu zoouooooo-!」

\*Piki\*(6).....

This time, a vein appeared on his forehead. Hiiro slowly opened his eyes, silently getting up as he draped his red robe onto his back. Following this, he grabbed a nearby book with one hand, its large magnitude suitable for throwing. His footsteps, teething with rage, headed towards the window with a \*Don Don Don Don\*(7).

???: 「IF YOU DO SUCH A THING, YOU'LL END UP WAKING SHISHOU, WILL YOU NOT~~~~~!？」

As Hiiro faced the enemy that had fully roused him from his sleep, Hiiro vigorously pelted his book at them. As it had splendidly hit its mark, the enemy suffered from the inflicted damage as they rolled on the ground in agony. In response to such an idiotic enemy, Hiiro displayed his 100% disgruntled face(8) as he spoke thus.

Hiiro: 「YOU'RE THE ONE THAT'S THE LOUDEST!!!」

Upon looking, one could see that the outside had been transformed into an illustration of hell. Although Hiiro had involuntarily made a blank expression, he began to ponder as to why the 【Evila Continent】 , that had been peaceful up until this morning, had been reduced to such a state.

As he surveyed his surroundings, various scenes had been reflected in Hiiro's eyes. A large number of 『Gabranth』 , as well as 『Humas』 that were thought to be soldiers could be seen. The party that they were attacking, the 『Evila』 .

As he scratched his head, Hiiro began to slightly nod several times.

Hiiro: (I see...)

Following this, as Hiiro slowly redirected his gaze back down, he could see the idiot, who was struggling with the pain caused by the book Hiiro had thrown earlier, and a Gabranth that was standing to face said idiot. From what Hiiro's eyes could tell, the individual's face completely resembled that of a wolf. Thus, Hiiro could determine that his analysis was not mistaken.

Hiiro: (.....Nn<sup>(9)</sup>?)

Following this, what had entered Hiiro's field of view were a group of four people that were sat on the ground. They seemed to be 『Humas』, yet, for some reason, their faces were devoid of blood, shaded with the the color of fear.

Hiiro: (Huh? I've think I've seen these guys somewhere.....or not.)

Although Hiiro thought that he had seen those faces somewhere before, no matter how much he searched his memory, he wasn't able to draw out an immediate answer. As trying to recall it would be too much of a pain, Hiiro simply determined that he didn't know them.

Hiiro: (More importantly than that, this is.....)

Since Hiiro thought that using the stairs every single time he wanted to descend from the second floor was a pain in the ass, he carried his katana that was leaning on the wall nearby and simply leaped out of the window as is.

As Hiiro landed on the ground with a \*suta-\*(<sup>(10)</sup>), he approached the child who was nearby, still crouched down while holding their head. Hiiro poked their head with a \*pokan\*(<sup>(11)</sup>).

???: 「Nowa-!(<sup>(12)</sup>) S-Shishou!？」

As the child had finally become aware to Hiiro's presence, they hastily stood up.

Hiiro: 「Oi(<sup>(13)</sup>), Baka-Deshi(<sup>(14)</sup>). Today-」

Baka-Deshi: 「A-aaa t-t-t-the thing is, Shishou! No, I(<sup>(15)</sup>) also tried to stop them desu zo! I requested them to 'please don't make a racket'! P-Please, at least recognize only this effort at the very least-」

The child was once again poked with a \*Pokan\*.

Baka-Deshi: 「Nowa-! I-it hurts desu zo, Shishou!」

The child looked up at Hiiro while only turning up their watery eyes. However, Hiiro simply spoke with a sullen expression.

Hiiro: 「Listen to me when I talk to you.」

Baka-Deshi: 「Ah, y-yes desu zo!」

They stood upright as this single phrase escaped their lips, concluding their speech. They began to patiently wait for Hiiro's words.

Hiiro: 「What's the date today?」

Baka-Deshi: 「Hai<sup>(16)</sup>! Today is the 10th day of Guviris<sup>(17)</sup> desu zo!」

Guviris meant that this world was currently in April. In other words, today was April 10. As Hiiro had heard thus, he softly murmured 「Shit.....I forgot about it, didn't I?」 as he slightly frowned.

Baka-Deshi: 「S-Shishou?」

As they had their doubts about Hiiro's current appearance, the child quietly asked thus.

Hiiro: 「Nn? Aa, you remember I talked to you about the fact that a war might break out, right?」

Baka-Deshi: 「Ah, yes. It's the matter concerning how Shishou had been called out to by a strange woman earlier, yes? 」

Hiiro: 「Aa<sup>(18)</sup>.」

Baka-Deshi: 「That's.....ah, i-it couldn't be.....」



Hiiro: 「That's exactly right.」

The child's face began to rapidly twitch.

Hiiro: 「It seems like war's gonna break out today.」

Baka-Deshi: 「What did you sa~~~~~y-!？」

Hiiro: 「You're annoying<sup>(19)</sup>!」

Baka-Deshi: 「Nowa-!」

Hiiro once again smacked the child's head with a \*pokan\*, silencing them. However, the child seemed to return the words as if to counter it.

Baka-Deshi: 「B-but Shishou desu zo!? Forgetting such a significant day is normally unthinkable desu zo! 」

Hiiro: 「Shut up. Even though I told you, you also forgot, didn't you?」

Baka-Deshi: 「Uu<sup>(20)</sup>.....t-thats.....」

As it was exactly as Hiiro had indicated, they could not refute it. However, at that time, Ornoth, who had been silently observing the duo, opened his mouth.

Ornoth: 「Would you mind if I asked you something?」

Hiiro and the child directed their line of sight towards Ornoth with a \*chirari\*.

Hiiro: 「What?」

Ornoth: 「Who are you?」

Baka-Deshi: 「B-before asking someone else for their name, isn't it common sense to give your own first desu zo-!？」

As he looked at the child that was pointing their finger at him with a \*bi-<sup>(21)</sup>, Ornoth

was rendered dumbfounded. His breath leaked out with a \*fu\*(22).

Ornoth: 「That is so, I've been quite rude. In which case, I shall give you my name. I am the Cruel's 《Rank 4》. My name is Ornoth.」

Hiiro: (Hou, this guy's a part of the 《Cruel Brigade》, huh...)

Hiiro stared at Ornoth as if he were carefully observing him. As he had heard of the existence known as the 《Cruel》 before, he had some knowledge of them.

Hiiro: (So this guy's one of the fellows that act as that woman's escort, huh.....I see. There's definitely a certain atmosphere surrounding him.)

Ornoth's appearance clearly conveyed that he was no ordinary individual. That was something that Hiiro was able to extract due to his sensitivity having been cultivated by the combat experience he had accumulated up until now.

Baka-Deshi: 「Mu~(23) Shishou, this thing called 'Kruel'(24), what do you think it is?」

As they tilted their head to the side with a \*kokun\*(25), the child posed a question.

Hiiro: 「Are you an idiot? Ah, wait. You're Baka-Deshi, aren't you?」

Baka-Deshi: 「Mu~-! Treating me like an idiot all the time is terrible desu zo~!」

Hiiro: 「Shut up. That guy said it as well, didn't they? They're the convoy that guards the Demon Lord, or so they say.」

Baka-Deshi: 「Mu? You mean the woman that Shishou was talking about?」

Hiiro: 「So it seems.」

Expressing the sentiment of 'I see', the child nodded several times with an expression of comprehension. Following this, the child directed the front of their body to face Ornoth.

Baka-Deshi: 「Since they gave us their name, common sense dictates that we should also name ourselves! Isn't that right, Shishou!?」

Hiiro: 「I've never heard of such common sense.」

Baka-Deshi: 「Naha-!?(26) B-but Shishou～」

Hiiro: 「Eei!(27) Stop clinging to me, you're annoying!」

Hiiro forcefully peeled off the child that had suddenly clung onto him with teary eyes.

Hiiro: 「F-fine then. If you're gonna name yourself then do it already, Baka-Deshi!」

Baka-Deshi: 「Mumu, I see then! \*Gohon\*(28)! FUHAHAHAHAHA!(29) YOU HAD BETTER LEND ME YOUR EARS DESU ZO! MY NAME IS GOHO-!?(30)」

Hiiro: 「What Demon Lord are YOU trying to be!?(31)」

The child had their head beaten once again as they were scolded.

Hiiro: 「You were influenced by books again, weren't you? Although I'm always saying this, it's fine to read a lot of books. However, stop imitating every little thing about the characters. I'm getting tired of it.」

Baka-Deshi: 「Y-yes desu zo.....」

The child slumped over with a \*shun\*(32). Upon looking at the two, even Ornoth could only scratch his cheek.

Nikki: 「Let me revise! I am the number one disciple of Shishou, whom I have imposed upon greatly! My name is Nikki desu zo! If you want to refer to me affectionately, then Ni-cchan is fine desu zo!」

Ornoth: 「I-I see. I shall remember this.」

The one who was slightly relieved upon finally having heard their self-introduction was Ornoth.

Ornoth: 「And, the one over there?」

Hiiro: 「Why should I tell you? In the first place, just because you've named yourself doesn't mean-」

Nikki: 「Hiiro Okamura-Shishou desu zo!」

.....

The scene involuntarily hardened. Hiiro's precious point had simply crumbled. And the individual that had caused it was proudly puffing their chest out as if they were gloating. It was the Baka-Deshi right next to Hiiro.

\*Boko-!\*([33](#))\*

Nikki: 「Nyau-!([34](#))」

This time, Hiiro had dropped his fist with a considerable amount of strength.

Nikki: 「O-Ow-! It hurts desu zo, Shishou!」

Hiiro: 「This fucking Baka-Deshi. Don't go giving out people's names without their permission!」

Nikki: 「Uu~ My apologies desu zo~」

Ornoth: 「W-well, in anycase, isn't it fine since we've both established a mutual acquaintanceship?」

For some reason, Ornoth began to string words together, as if he were trying to arbitrate the situation. It was most likely due to feeling pity for Nikki who had been repetitively hit with a \*poka poka\*([35](#)).

Hiiro had displayed an even more displeased expression as he folded his arms. However, as he did so-

??? 「Okamura...?」

A murmur that appeared to be seeking confirmation could be heard

# KONJIKI NO WORD MASTER

---

## Chapter 109 Hiiro's True Ability

---

Hiiro: 「Huh?」

As Hiiro heard that voice come from behind him, he turned to face the source. Upon doing so, he was met with the four people who he had captured in his sights earlier.

Taishi: 「Hiiro Okamura...? Okamura Hiiro...?<sup>(1)</sup> No way, that couldn't be.....that guy's human.....but this voice.....」

The one who had murmured was Aoyama Taishi. As the name he had heard had the exact same first and last name with a name he was familiar with, Taishi thought that the individual in front of him was said person. However, the figure before them was one belonging to an 『Evila』 .

The person that he was familiar with was a human being, an individual that was summoned to this world alongside them.

Although there was no way he could be an 『Evila』 , as his name and voice made Taishi recall such an individual, such a notion could not be so easily dispelled.

Following this, as Hiiro had also stared at the quartet for a while, it had suddenly occurred to him.

Hiiro: (Four people.....human.....Ah, so that's how it is!)

Finally, as if he had pulled it out from the remnants of his memory, Hiiro had discovered the answer.

Hiiro: 「You guys are the Riajuu<sup>(2)</sup> Foursome, right?」

Taishi: 「R-Riajuu? T-then you're really Okamura.....you're Okamura, right!？」

The term 'Riajuu' did not exist in this world. That's why Taishi was able to determine that the Hiiro that had spoke those words was the same Hiiro that they were familiar with.

Hiiro: (Come to think of it, they were also here, huh~? These guys.)

The person in question narrowed his eyes, as if he were recalling memories of that distant day.

Chika: 「Eh.....Okamura? That guy is?」

Suzumiya Chika also held thoughts of disbelief as she looked upon Hihiro with suspicion.

Shuri: 「B-but, that appearance is.....」

Minamoto Shuri had also shared the same sentiment.

Shinobu: 「B-but, that voice certainly belongs to Okamura-cchi, and he's even wearing glasses. On top of that, I think there ain't many people who have the name Hihiro Okamura.[\(3\)](#)」

Including Akamori Shinobu, the one who said thus, the four were clustered together, their eyes open wide.

Towards this group of four, Hihiro simply stared at them coldly. In this situation, Hihiro took notice of the figures of their unblemished armor. Their expressions dyed with despair. Their bodies, still trembling.

Hihiro: 「.....I get it. Although it's fine to have come all the way here as the country's puppet, upon waking up to reality, you guys have started to crawl along the ground, huh?」

Hihiro said thus, mixing ridicule into his words.

???: 「W-what was that!?!」

Although it seemed as if they had the intention to scream, there was no strength embedded in their voice. The tone they had employed resembled one used by a spineless, bullied child when they were trying to speak to a gang of delinquents.

Hihiro: 「.....well, I don't really give two shits about you guys.」

???: 「Wha-.....!?!」

As Hiiro turned his back towards them, seemingly due to loss of interest, the four were rendered unable to move, almost as if they had been petrified.

Hiiro: 「You're.....a beastman, right? Even for the 『Evila』 , I'm slightly surprised to see that one of their Top Class is a beastman.」

Ornoth: 「Certainly, I am a beastman. However, I am also an 『Evila』 .」

Hiiro: 「.....I see. That must mean that you're the same as the Doji-Maid<sup>(4)</sup>.」

Ornoth: 「Doji-Meido(Angry Earth of Hades)<sup>(5)</sup>? That seems to be quite the bizarre place. Yet, you say it is the same kind of existence as me?」

Ornoth had completely misunderstood. However, Hiiro furrowed his brow as he was bewildered by Ornoth's incomprehensible response.

Hiiro: 「Well, more importantly, is that woman in the middle of the conference right now?」

Ornoth: 「That woman.....you say?」

Hiiro: 「The Maou<sup>(6)</sup>, the Demon Lord.」

Ornoth: 「.....you, what is the meaning of speaking so lightly of her majesty?」

Although it was quite a quiet objection, Hiiro was clearly subjected to a glare, blurred with suspicion.

Hiiro: 「Even if you ask me what this is all about. All I did was just make a contract with them.」

Ornoth: 「C-contract?」

Hiiro: 「Even so.....I wasn't told that even the 『Gabranth』 would attack as well. That woman, always spouting such suitable things-」

As he lightly clicked his tongue, Hiiro pressed his fingers against his temples.

Ornoth: 「P-Please wait a moment. Since a while ago, what sort of things have you been spouting-」

At that moment, several assailants headed towards them from the sky above.

Soldiers: 「Oraaaaaa-!」

From what one could see, they were apparently Gabranth Soldiers.

Soldiers: 「『Evila』, prepare yourseeeeeeeeeeeeeeelves!」

As Hihiro looked up towards the sky, he conducted himself in a pissed off manner and-

Hihiro: 「Do it, Baka-Deshi(7).」

Nikki: 「Hai(8) desu zo(9)!」

As Nikki cheerfully replied, they dropped their waist and poised themselves before vigorously kicking the ground, launching themselves into the sky.

Nikki: 「Achoooooo(10)!」

Soldier: 「You're in the way, you braaaat-!

Facing Nikki, who was approaching from below, a male Gabranth swung their sword downward. However, Nikki was not perturbed as they concentrated magical power into their right fist. As they did so, their fist began to shine with blue light.

Soldier: 「W-what the-!?!」

Nikki: 「Killing Blow-! Exploding Fist-!」 | 「Ichigeki Kesatsu-! Bakuken-!」 (11)

Nikki's protruding fist collided with the sword that the man had swung downwards. Normally, one would think that the fist would be split in half. However, the result...

\*Bakiiin!\*(12)



The sword was the object that broke. No, it had been broken.

Soldier: 「Wha-!？」

Following this, Nikki's fist continued to move unfaltering as it landed an accurate blow towards the man's belly.

\*Dokaaaaan!\*(13)

Although miniscule in scale, an explosion had surely occurred. As they were caught up in the shockwave, the other Gabranth had their posture broken by the resulting impact.

As Nikki landed with a \*suta-\*(14), their eyes sparkled with a \*kirakira\*(15) as they looked towards Hihiro, exuberating the sentiment of 「I did it!」 .

Hihiro: 「There are still others left, aren't there?」

Although they had really wanted to be praised, Nikki's shoulders drooped due to the absence of such words of approval. However, it was as Hihiro had indicated. Except for the individual who had directly received the brunt of the explosion, the others were still vigorously lively.

Incidentally, about the man who had received the explosion-

Soldier: 「Ka.....ka ha.....ga.....」

Although he had been scorched to a charred black, it seems that he had not died. It went without saying that he was no longer able to continue fighting in the war.

Ornoth: (That was a tremendous blow. Although it is most likely that they had infused their fist with magic before making it explode, to think that such a small child is capable of applying such magic to their bodies.....not to mention, they have yet to utilise their full strength.)

Ornoth calmly began to analyse Nikki. As Ornoth had once again thought that Nikki was no ordinary child, a sentiment that he had predicted earlier.

As it seemed that the other beastmen had thought that they might be subjected to an

unexpected ambush, they were overly wary towards Hiiro's location. Before Hiiro's eyes, the beastmen were impatiently observing the situation.

Hiiro: (The surroundings are so noisy that it's making it hard to talk.....I guess it can't be helped.)

Hiiro's footsteps made a \*katsukatsu\*(16) sound as he passed through Nikki's side.

Nikki: 「S-Shishou(17)?」

Not only Nikki, but Ornoth also had his suspicions raised by Hiiro's actions.

Hiiro: 「Fall back, Baka-Deshi. This is how you take care of the trash.」

As he said thus, Hiiro began to gather magic into his fingertip. Furthermore, magic was gathered into not just one but both hands' index fingers. Following this, Hiiro began to slowly move both hands.

「Gravitate」 | 『引力』 and 「Beastmen」 | 『獣人』.

Words written by pale magic were displayed in the sky. In response to seeing Hiiro's actions, the beastmen alertness strengthened as they tried to move away from that spot. However-

Hiiro: 「Even if you try to run, it's pointless. 《Word Magic》 activate.」

In the instant Hiiro's words ended-

Soldiers: 「U-Uwaaaaaaaaa-!」

As they shouted in this manner, beastmen began to reveal themselves before Hiiro's eyes, one after another. No, they had been pulled out of hiding. As if they had been sucked by a vacuum cleaner, they had been drawn towards Hiiro.

Following this, Hiiro gently lowered his waist before unsheathing his katana and-

\*Bushu bushu bushu bushu-!\*(18)

At speeds quicker than the eye could process, Hihiro began to cut down the beastmen flying towards him.

Soldiers: 「 「 「 「Ga-.....-!?」 」 」 」 」

Although the ones that had been flying through the air were four people, these four rolled across the ground, the whites of their eyes being shown.

Nikki: 「Uooooooooo-! A-As expected of Shishou desu zo! This Nikki is truly impressed~!」

Although Nikki had expressed their delight openly, Ornoth and the heroes who had witnessed such a spectacle held thoughts that rendered their empty mouths unable to close. The heroes in particular had thought it was exceptionally amazing as this was the first time they witnessed such a sight that had filled them with awe.

Taishi: 「Th.....that's Okamura?」

Chika: 「N-no way.....」

Shuri: 「A-amazing.....」

Shinobu: 「I ain't ever seen such a thing.....」

The four respectively uttered such words unconsciously.

Ornoth: (Fumu<sup>(19)</sup>.....that 『Imp』 boy. Those movements of his should be able to match mine.....just who in the world is he?)

Although Ornoth had also made an evaluation of Hihiro, as he caught a glimpse of strength that one would not believe a mere warrior could possibly possess, he was alarmingly startled.

As Hihiro returned his katana to its sheath with a \*kachin\*<sup>(20)</sup>, he once again looked towards Ornoth.

Hihiro: 「Oi wolf. Continuing from where I left off earlier, the Maou left for the conference, right?」

Ornoth: 「A-aa, about that. Why are you asking about her majesty?」

Hiiro: 「I said it a little while ago, right? I said that I have a contract with them.」

Ornoth: 「Like I said, what sort of contract is this?」

Hiiro began to display his displeasure as he was increasingly feeling that the situation was growing even more bothersome..

Hiiro: 「Haa, why do I have to tell you? More importantly, hurry up and tell me whether she's at the conference or not.」

Ornoth: 「Mu(21).....I am not one who would obediently inform such a suspicious individual.」

As the two glared at each other, Nikki, for some reason, interceded between them.

Nikki: 「Koree-! Shishou is saying that he wants to hear it so hurry up and-」

\*Pokan!\*(22)

Nikki: 「Hauwa!」

Hiiro: 「Whenever you talk, things get complicated so shut up!」

Nikki: 「Uu~ but Shishou~」

Although Nikki was looking up reproachfully while rubbing their pounded head, Hiiro simply ignored them and continued.

Hiiro: 「You have no intention on telling me, right?」

Ornoth: 「Not until you explain to me exactly who you are.」

Hiiro: 「.....fuu(23), I guess I've got no choice. It's a pain in the ass, but I guess I'll go and ask her directly.」

Ornoth: 「.....ha?」

As Ornoth made an expression that seemed to convey the sentiment of ‘what in the world is this guy saying?’, Hihiro once again harboured magic into his fingertips.

# KONJIKI NO WORD MASTER

---

## Chapter 110 The Imprisoned Ones

---

Eveam: 「Did you say… War?」

Eveam was repeating what had come from Victorias King Rudolf's mouth. She hoped that she had heard wrong.

Rudolf: 「That's right. War」

It seems like he had no intention of making this conference a success.

Eveam: 「W-Why? If we were to join hands we could avoid conflict, so for what reason would you willingly start a war?!」

A stern expression came to Rudolf's face as Eveam fixed her eyes on him.

Rudolf: 「In order to destroy you… to destroy the 『Evila』 , I have sacrificed many things. Soldiers, the people, and even my daughters」

Judom's eyebrow twitched at the mention of Rudolf's daughters.

Rudolf: 「This is what my friend Judom said. He said that we should desire peace for the sake of my sacrificed daughters. That they would be happy if that happened」

From his eyes, a single tear fell.

Rudolf: 「But that is wrong. My first daughter Miti was still very young, but I think that she was a clever child. My second daughter Aselia had a very strong heart. And now, although not yet dead, my daughter Fara who has become a living corpse was a kind-natured child. Before they died, those girls said to me, 『Please defeat the Evila no matter what』 」

Rudolf slowly met Eveam's gaze.

Rudolf: 「My daughters, and those who have been killed, do not wish for peace! They wish to see the seed of misfortune plaguing 【Edea】 disappear, by eradicating you 『Evila』 !」

That was already an obvious declaration of war. And at that exact moment, the thread of peace that connected the 『Humas』 and 『Evila』 snapped.

Bang!

The round table was abruptly destroyed. Aquinas jumped to Eveam's side to protect her, while the human soldiers moved to guard Rudolf. Everyone simultaneously looked at the man who had caused this.

Judom: 「Don't fuck with me Rudolf!」

That was the 【Victorias】 Guild Master Judom Lankars. His fist stuck out over the table. That strong arm was quivering in fury.

Rudolf: 「Judom, regardless of what you say here, this has already been decided」

Judom: 「Shut up Rudolf! Why... What foolishness is this?」

Dennis: 「Bastard! A mere Guild Master can't speak to the king like that!」

Judom: 「Butt out of this you lackey bastard!」

Terrific pressure began to rain down on Cabinet Minister Dennis and the soldiers around him.

Dennis: 「Hii!」

Dennis pitifully fell to the ground. The soldiers' reactions weren't as extreme as Dennis's, but they were also overwhelmed by that person's presence and began to sweat profusely.

Eveam: (A-Amazing! Is this pressure really that of a retired soldier?)

Eveam gulped, sensing from his enormous pressure that he was no ordinary individual.

Aquinas: (As expected of Judom Lankars. This pressure... He's in the same domain as us...)

Aquinas had once fought with Judom in the past, and he couldn't help but give a faint smile after witnessing his extraordinary growth.

Marione: (Muu... So this man is the former SSS-Ranker called 《Impact King》 )



Marione also gave him a high evaluation. Kiria also stared at him with a thoughtful expression.

Judom: 「Oi Rudolf, do you really understand the meaning of what you're doing you bastard?」

Rudolf: 「…Do I look like I do not understand?」

Judom: 「Yeah, you do. At least, when you were younger you wouldn't have done such stupid things!」

Rudolf: 「And now I have matured」

Judom: 「Don't make me laugh! You've degenerated!」

Dennis: 「Y-You bastard! Again and again you speak like that towards the king!」

Judom: 「A retainer who can't even support the king doesn't have the right to talk!」

Dennis: 「Hii!」

Again he glared at Dennis to intimidate him.

Judom: 「And you lot! A retainer isn't just about making the king's life easy. A true retainer is supposed to guide the king onto the right path!」

Eveam, who was deeply moved by his words, could only stare at him and remain silent.

Judom: 「If the king starts to stray from the proper path, a true advisor would advise him, even if he had to risk his own life! A king is not absolute! Even a country is not absolute!」

Aquinas whispered into Eveam's ear.

Aquinas: 「Observe him carefully. He possesses the qualities of a king」

Eveam nodded again and continued to stare intently at Judom.

Judom: 「Something that is absolute doesn't exist! Because of that, a king cannot make the very best decisions without the support of the people around him! To become closer to being absolute, to abate the mistakes he makes, that is the attitude that will bring us closer to becoming a good country!」

Everyone was silently watching Judom, but Rudolf closed his eyes and stopped moving.

Judom: 「A king is also human. He still makes mistakes. But what you absolutely cannot do is make a mistake when people's lives hang on the king's decision! Why don't you understand that, Rudolf! Your decision will cost the lives of your fellow countrymen!」

Rudolf, having determined that Judom's speech had ended, slowly opened his eyes and stared at him.

Rudolf: 「I am a king, a husband, and a father. My daughters' lives... Do you think I truly wished to part with them, Judom?」

Once again he begins to cry.

Rudolf: 「I see. If it was you, you would be able to kill your emotions and betray your family for the sake of the country」

Judom: 「No, you're wrong Rudolf!」

Rudolf: 「Nevertheless, I am a father. The 『Evila』 which took my daughters' lives want to live together with us. That peace... I cannot allow it. Everyone who's family has been killed by them would say the same!」

Judom: 「Those feelings are natural! But if someone doesn't bear it, the whole world will become even more cruel!」

Rudolf: 「You're too late Judom. The choice has already been made. This is... revenge」

Taken aback by Rudolf's words, Judom ground his teeth and scowled.

Judom: 「You... don't have the qualities to be a king」

Rudolf: 「It seems, but even you will understand once this is over. That it was a good thing that the 『Evila』 perished. In the end, this will be for everybody's sake」

Judom walked back towards Rudolf. Of course, the soldiers stood in his way. However...

Judom: 「Step aside, you brats!」

The wind pressure released from waving his hand blew away the soldiers who were on guard. The Demon Lord was also bracing her legs so that she would not be blown away.

Rudolf had also sent flying as far as the wall, but his expression had not changed at all.

Rudolf: 「Fuu, as expected of the 《Impact King》. My elite soldiers couldn't even act as a shield」

Judom: 「…Grit your teeth」

Bang!

Rudolf: 「Gafu!」

Judom struck Rudolf's face with a hook and blew him away, crashing into the wall. Blood flowed from his mouth but still he did not feel any fear. He spoke while he was still collapsed on the ground.

Rudolf: 「…No matter what you do, it has already started. No one can stop it now」

Saying that while wiping the blood from his mouth, Dennis and the soldiers rushed over to protect the king.

Judom: 「…Oi Portnis」

Portnis: 「What is it, Judom?」

Judom spoke to the High Priestess Portnis.

Judom: 「It's impossible to escape from this room for twenty-four hours, right? Is there no other method?」

Originally, the staff in Portnis's hand had the jewel 《Hero's Relic》 embedded in its tip which allowed one to exit freely, but as it had been destroyed, the only way to leave would be when the barrier weakened after twenty-four hours.

Portnis: 「That's right... If we had another 《Hero's Relic》 we could, but...」

Judom: 「...We don't have one right now, huh」

Judom looked over to the Demon Lord's side, but judging by their reaction they didn't have one. It was unlikely that Rudolf's side was carrying one either. If it were to be used then anyone would be able to leave the barrier, so there would be no merit for them to bring one in with them.

There was some deeper meaning in keeping the Demon Lord and her forces imprisoned here for twenty-four hours. They had wagered that the Demon Lord would not kill them. If they did then the Demon Lord's ideals would collapse. Therefore this place was both safe and dangerous to them.

Judom: 「Is there another method?」

Portnis: 「Let's see... Information from outside is completely cut off from here, so we have no way to know what's happening outside. Similar to us, people outside have no way of knowing about any abnormalities inside」

Judom: 「Shit…」

Portnis: 「However」

Judom: 「What? Is there something else?」

Portnis: 「Yes. If, in the event that someone outside notices the abnormality and opens the barrier with the 《Hero's Relic》 …」

Judom: 「…Rather unlikely. If no one knows the situation in here, no one would come to help」

Judom grit his teeth as he spoke his thoughts.

Rudolf: 「Did I not tell you? Anything you do is futile. This 《Sacred Room》 has been thoroughly investigated and was determined to be the perfect location to hold the conference in order to carry out this plan. There's not a single imperfection」

Judom: 「Kuh… Answer me Rudolf, you bastard. Where are the Heroes right now?」

Rudolf: 「…Do you not already have a rough idea?」

A smile came to Rudolph's face as he asked.

Eveam: 「At the border?」

That answer came from Eveam. She had confirmed the appearance of the Heroes with her own eyes. But Rudolf laughed scornfully.

Rudolf: 「Fufufu… You're way off the mark Demon Lord」

Eveam: 「What?」

Rudolf: 「Allow me to tell you. My strongest war potential right now… is at 【Demon Capital: Xaos】 」

Eveam: 「Wha-!?!」

With just that one comment the faces of everyone on the Demon Lord side turned to shock.

Rudolf: 「Fufufu, allow me to tell you another shocking truth. Not only the Heroes, but many 『Gabranth』 are headed to the 【Demon Country】 . The National Army of the 【Beast Kingdom, Passion】 」

Eveam: 「What did you say!?!」

Marione: 「Fool! That's impossible! The bridge was destroyed!」

That shout was from Marione. As he says, the only connection between the 『Evila』 and 『Gabranth』 was destroyed by Eveam. It's unthinkable that the army would be able to cross over to the Evila Continent.

Rudolf: 「Fufufu, it's an alliance」

Judom: 「…Rudolf, you…」

Rudolf: 「We 『Humas』 and 『Gabranth』 have formed an alliance」

Those words left everyone on Eveam's side with a shock, like they had been struck by a hammer.

Eveam: 「T-That's…」

Eveam's voice was trembling as she let out a murmur.

Rudolf: 「That's right. Right now the Evila Continent is in the middle of a war」



## Chapter 111 Those Who Are Still Alive

---

“Haaaaaaah!” (Eveam)

Eveam tried to break through the barrier surrounding them numerous times by attacking it with her bare hands. However, the barrier didn’t move a single inch.

“How reckless. There’s no way that a barrier imbued with a hero’s life would break from your bare hands” (Rudolf)

Ignoring Rudolf’s words, Eveam continued to thrust her fists forward.

“Haa haa haa haa haa.....how is it, Aquinas?” (Eveam)

“It appears that it contains an 《Evil-Sealing Barrier》, which is capable of absorbing physical attacks. In this place where it is forbidden to bring weapons to begin with, theoretically speaking, escaping from it is nearly impossible” (Aquinas)

Aquinas explained with a grave face as he touched the barrier.

“Move, Aquinas” (Judom)

Judom had his eyes closed as he focused the senses of his entire body into his right fist.

(Che, I can’t focus my magic power. At this rate, the power will drop significantly)  
(Judom)

Even so, he put all his power into his fist as he punched.

Pashunn!

It was as though nothing had happened at all, as the entire impact of the punch was absorbed.

“Kuh!” (Judom)

“So it’s even impossible for Judom-dono.....” (Eveam)

Eveam gazed at the barrier with a bitter expression.

“At this rate, the 『Evila』 will.....” (Eveam)

She was concerned about the 【Evila Capital: Xaos】. After hearing that it was currently embroiled in war, Eveam simply couldn’t just stand around here doing nothing.

“Unforgivable! Your Majesty, for now, please give us the order to deal with these humans!” (Marione)

Marione turned his gaze filled with killing intent towards Rudolf and co. However, Eveam shook her head.

“We can’t” (Eveam)

“Your Majesty!” (Marione)

“Right now in this place, majority of violent actions have been weakened. Marione, your specialty should be magic, and not physical attacks. Even so, do you really think that you’d be capable of fighting against 5 soldiers together while remaining unharmed?” (Eveam)

“.....” (Marione)

“Once we escape from here, we have to return to the country as soon as possible. If you were injured and became unable to move at that time, then what would you do?” (Eveam)

“H-however.....” (Marione)

“Right now, getting out of here is our top priority. Don’t waste any energy” (Eveam)

“.....as you wish” (Marione)

Although he appeared to accept it reluctantly, as Eveam’s words were correct, he decided to obediently listen to her. Seeing that, Judom thought-

(Hou, she is still quite inexperienced, but she understands what’s important. I’m sure this girl will become a great ruler) (Judom)

The more naïve her thoughts were, the more problematic her actions would become. Even so, she continued forward without losing anything important. As such, Judom believed that she would certainly grow up to be surrounded by thoughts of admiration in the future.

(So my attack didn’t work at all.....then I suppose I can only bet on that fellow’s work for the rest) (Judom)

As he thought that, Judom strongly gripped his fist.

“.....u.....” (???)

The one who woke up upon feeling a cool sensation on his face was the one who was thought to have been killed by the robed person while following the heroes as they took some suspicious actions. He was Nazaar Skride, or rather, he was the 《Rank 3》 in the 《Cruel Brigade》, Teckil.

“Gu.....haha.....seems like this isn’t the Netherworld” (Teckil)

Feeling that his hands and feet were bound, Teckil distinctly felt the sensation of being alive. He had thought that he would definitely be killed. However, upon realizing that he somehow was still alive, Teckil became slightly relieved.

After rolling face up, he looked around in order to figure out exactly where he was. From what he had seen, he judged that this was a cavernous-like place.

Based on the ceiling alone, he arbitrarily decided that this was some cave. However, he felt that he probably wasn't mistaken.

(But, why haven't I been killed yet.....) (Teckil)

Right now, he didn't feel the presence of anyone around him. Raising his torso, he twisted his body about to once more confirm his surroundings.

As he did so, Teckil saw a light from a fair distance ahead of him. Nearby, there was an opening which seemed to be an exit. As he couldn't simply stay around here obediently, Teckil decided to aim for that exit for the time being. Lying down once more, this time he pushed upwards with enough force to reach a standing position. Then, he gazed at the restraints on his arms and legs.

"Mu~, these restraints.....are they a type of magic tool? It won't move an inch" (Teckil)

Teckil tried to use all his strength to pull apart the restraints, but they didn't give even the slightest response. A tool containing magic, a magic tool. They had various abilities, but these handcuff-like magic tools appeared to contain the ability to limit one's physical abilities alone.

"Hm~, it looks like they took away my favourite pen" (Teckil)

Teckil was a user of a Unique Magic which allowed him to give form to things he drew with that pen using magic. However, without anything to write with, he couldn't display his abilities.

"As I thought, what I saw at that time wasn't a mistake.....to think that person is....." (Teckil)

Teckil nodded as he thought to himself. If that was the case, then it wasn't strange even if they knew of his abilities. As such, so long as they took away his pen, they judged that he would become unable to use magic.

However, Teckil chuckled as he grinned and-

"But I've really failed this time" (Teckil)

Gari.....

Just as he thought he bit through and tore something-

Pit pat pit pat.....

A fluid began dripping onto the ground. If you looked carefully, you could see that it was blood flowing out from Teckil's mouth. It appeared that he had bitten through his lip.

"Even without my pen, there's still things I can draw with" (Teckil)

After sticking out his tongue and licking, he began using his blood to draw something on a large rock.

(Uu~this gritty feeling feels gross, but I'll endure it for now) (Teckil)

It was the drawing of a bird. Once he finished drawing it, the bird rose out, and like a real bird, began to dance in the sky. Then, the bird landed on Teckil's shoulder.

"Listen up, 'kay? I want you to do whatever you can to tell a certain person about the information I have right now" (Teckil)

"Chi chi chi?" (Bird)

"Originally, I'd tell her Majesty this in person, but right now her Majesty's surroundings are the most dangerous. And right now, a certain person should be together with her Majesty. They'll definitely be able to make use of the information" (Teckil)

"Chi chi chi" (Bird)

The bird rapidly nodded its head.

"I'll also look for a chance to escape" (Teckil)

As he said that, a chill ran down his back. The air became several times heavier.

"Th-this is bad! Seems like they've returned. Come on, fly out from up there!" (Teckil)

As he said that, the bird raised its chin and began rising into the air. There lay a small hole through which a thread of light shone through. It wasn't big enough for a person to go through, but should have been enough for a small bird to pass through without any problems.

With Teckil's urging, the bird cried out "Chi chi chi" as it flew towards the hole.

"I'm counting on you. Right now, the only one I can rely on is that person after all....."  
(Teckil)

Meanwhile, Teckil stared at the light coming from the place that may be the exit that he saw earlier. As he did so, he heard the pitter patter of footsteps resounding throughout the cave.

Teckil then returned to the place where he had been lying earlier, and lay down once more. Until he was aware of the other party's intentions, it would be better for him to check out the situation for now.

He might be able to gain a lot of information. Naturally, the chances of him being killed were high, but he felt lucky that he was able to send the information he currently had.

In addition, in order to make the opponent drop their guard so that he could counterattack as well, it'd be more convenient to continue acting unconscious.

(In any case, I just need to do whatever I can right now) (Teckil)

## Chapter 112 Escape

---

“Argh...still not working?” (Eveam)

Eveam clenched her teeth in frustration as she touched and pushed against the barrier. Although a considerable amount of time had passed since then, the barrier didn’t budge at all.

“Damnit! As I suggested before, we should just dispose of all the 『Humas』 trash here!” (Marione)

“No way!” (Eveam)

Eveam simply rejected Marione’s words without any consideration.

“But these guys betrayed us!” (Marione)

“I told you before, right? We’ll think about it after we get out of here.” (Eveam)

“Yes...but...” (Marione)

“Right now we need to do something about the barrier and head to 【Xaos】 as soon as possible to stop the war. I forbid you from wasting your energy and strength here.” (Eveam)

“But...” (Marione)

Marione reluctantly withdrew.

“Judom-dono here is conserving his strength and stamina by meditating. I suggest that you do the same. I’ll do something about the barrier!” (Eveam)

Although she was unable to find a solution, she persistently continued to keep trying.

While Eveam was doing that, the priest of 《Oldine Grand Temple》, Portnis, turned her head slowly and faced the King of 【Victorias】, Rudolph.

“King of 【Victorias】, although you were our counsel and friend, how can you calmly perform something so dirty in the 【Sacred Oldine】? Do you have nothing to say about it?” (Portnis)

That is right, she was the one who was betrayed by Rudolf. The meeting was held to bring about world peace at all costs. Therefore, she was pleased that such a conference could be held in the Holy Land which was a symbol of peace.

However, the other side took action and used it to start a war.

“What you have done is nothing other than blasphemy in the name of peace! Shame on you!” (Portnis)

Although she was completely outraged, Rudolf simply replied nonchalantly.

“Priest, you understand, yes? When everything is over, there will be true peace.” (Rudolf)

“To destroy everyone but the 『Humas』 !?” (Portnis)

“That is the best way to obtain world peace.” (Rudolf)

“.....It is just like Judom said, you are definitely not qualified to be king” (Portnis)

Rudolf snorted at the priest’s words and turned towards Eveam.

“Demon Lord” (Rudolf)

“..... What !?” (Eveam)

Eveam no longer used polite language. This was because she had determined that the individual she was addressing was not worthy of such respect.

“Like I said before. I’ve lost people that were close and important to me.” (Rudolf)

“.....” (Eveam)

“After twenty-four hours, your country will be in ruins. There will be dead bodies every. Those that are important to you will die in swarms.” (Rudolf)

“Damnit!” (Eveam)

“You said there is no point in revenge. But if you go out of here, can you still say the same words? Your family is being destroyed by the 『Gabranth』 and 『Humas』 , with that can you still preach like a saint that nothing will come out of hatred ?” (Rudolph)

Eveam glared at him with animosity, however, Rudolf returned the glare.

“.....Even so, I will not give up on peace!” (Eveam)

“.....Well then, why don’t you keep at it then with your unwavering determination. Just look at the current reality. Think it through, and I’ll hear from you again. Think about it carefully. We have time. We have all the time in the world.” (Rudolf)

Rudolf sat down after finishing his speech. Eveam knew that words were pointless to Rudolf so she turned to Aquinas and spoke.

“How long will our defenses last?” (Eveam)

“That is right, I knew something like this would happen. For the time being I’ve sent Ornoth back to the country. Right now, he would be struggling to defend the country...that is, if Rudolf is telling the truth.” (Aquinas)

Indeed. Although reasons for such actions were unknown, there was the slim possibility that Rudolf was simply speaking falsehoods.

“Yes, that’s right! As expected from Aquinas!” (Eveam)

“However, there are the four heroes, the 《Gabranth Forces》, and two people at the top of the 『Gabranth』 in terms of power. I imagine that it would be tough for Ornoth to manage it alone.” (Aquinas)

“He isn’t alone” (Eveam)

“What? What do you mean?” (Aquinas)

“Many of our brethren reside within the country. All of them are exceptional fighters.” (Eveam)

“.....is that so?” (Aquinas)

“There is also one more person.....” (Eveam)

“Who?” (Aquinas)

“A very, very strong person I made a contract with.....” (Eveam)

Before Eveam was able to finish her sentence, the barrier that surrounded the room shook violently.

“W-What is going on!?( Eveam)

Eveam looked around defensively.

“This is an...earthquake?” (Kiria)

Advisor Kiria frowned as she spoke. As Rudolf did not expect this to happen, it was a surprise to all of them. At that moment, Judom, the person who was meditating until now, spoke in a rising voice.

“At last...it has arrived” (Judom)

-----  
-----



In the 【Sacred Oldine】 , there was the 《Oldine Grand Temple》 . At the center of it was the 《Sacred Room》 , the location where the hero's remaining power was concentrated.

At the center, there was ward with the a radius of 20m where weapons cannot be brought in. There is no way for someone to enter it with a weapon. Furthermore, magic, primarily mana cannot be used while a person is inside.

This 《Sanctuary》 was created using the hero's remaining power. It was the most powerful barrier created for the room. A maximum of thirteen people can enter the room. Once a person goes inside, they cannot easily leave the room.

The way to exit the sanctuary was by using the 《Hero's Relic》 . It was something that belonged to the Hero. A person with the relic would be able to weaken the barrier and would be free to enter and exit the sanctuary.

The only other way to exit the sanctuary was to wait for 24 hours to elapse. After 24 hours, the barrier would weaken slightly, causing a gap to appear in the barrier. Going through the gap would allow one to exit the sanctuary.

The barrier was very strong. There was no way that it would weaken before 24 hours. However, to everyone's surprise, the 《Sancturay》 that everyone was in faltered as it shook.

If a person was able to sense the magic in the area, they would feel that the barrier was gradually being weakened.

"W-what the heck...?" (Eveam)

Eveam had the best magic perception among the people inside the barrier. Thus, she was able to grasp that something odd was happening.

"Relax, Maou-chan" (Judom)

"J-Judom-dono?" (Eveam)

There was no surprise on Judom's face. On the contrary, he was staring at the entrance of the room with a big smile on his face.

"Judom, did you?" (Portnis)

Head priest Portnis looked at Judom's smiling face in confusion.

"Well, I thought something like this would happen so I brought some insurance."  
(Judom)

Unable to remain silent, the King of Victoria shouted.

“What is happening Judom? What in the world are you doing?” (Rudolf)

“Rudolf, this means that things will not go your way” (Judom)

“What did you say?” (Rudolf)

“Did you think I didn’t prepare anything before this meeting?” (Judom)

As he said so, the door opened with a creaking sound.

“Judom-sama” (???)

From beyond the door, a person dressed like an adventurer appeared. When they appeared, Judom smiled broadly.

“Now, Demon Lord-chan, go!” (Judom)

“Eh, ah.....got it! You guys!” (Eveam)

When the others heard her voice, they nodded and left the room one after the other, leaving behind a dumbfounded Rudolf and his group.

“Kiria! What are you doing! Hurry up!” (Eveam)

“.....Yes” (Kiria)

Eveam was unsure why Kiria stayed put, and told her to hurry. Kiria glanced momentarily at the surprised Rudolf and followed behind Eveam.

“Alright, Portnis, you go on ahead” (Judom)

“Understood, Judom” (Potinus)

She picked up her staff, looked at Rudolf with a disgusted face, and left the room.

“You’ve really done it, haven’t you Judom.” (Rudolf)

Before Rudolf could continue Judom interrupted him and said

“Hmph, I wanted to believe you. But did you think I had no idea what you were planning? I’m pretty confident in my ability to gather information. The moment you selected this place for a meeting, I immediately looked for a 《Hero’s Relic》 ” (Judom)

“.....But how did this information get to the outside?” (Dennis)

“.....If you want to know we’ll talk about it outside. Unless, you want to remain here to preserve your sorry ass?. Well, it is pretty safe here.” (Judom)

Saying so Judom headed toward the door.

“...K-king! W-w-w-what are you going to do about this?” (Dennis)

Not only Dennis, but the soldiers were also agitated.

“.....When this happened, it just means that the scenario has changed.” (Rudolf)

“D-does that mean...” (Dennis)

“Ah, they don’t seem like they are going to make a move, lets just head outside.”  
(Rudolf)

“B-but...” (Dennis)

Dennis was the most anxious. It was clear that they’ll be safe if they remained inside. But if they went outside, they were almost guaranteed to be attacked by the 『Evila』 .

“If you feel uncomfortable just remain here.” (Rudolf)

Rudolf also glanced at the five soldiers.

“The soldiers would rebel if they were to keep quiet about this.” (Rudolf)

The only people that knew of the plan to confine the Demon Lord here were Dennis, and the five soldiers. It was done to prevent the information from spreading, but if it was kept well there would be no way for Judom’s adventurers to come here in the first place. (NB: I hope this is right)

Rudolf greatly regretted it. But now that it has happened, there was no longer any meaning in remaining here. Thus, there is no choice but to wait and see.

“I’m going. Now that this happened...I have no choice but to see it to the end.” (Rudolf)

Dennis saw Rudolf drag himself out of the door with determination.

“W-wait. Please wait, don’t leave me behind” (Dennis)

Eventually, no one was left in the room.

## Chapter 113

### Judom's Countermeasures and a New Betrayal

---

“....Now, Will you explain what happened Judom?” (Rudolf)

Judom waited for Rudolf outside, naturally Eveam and her escorts directed their hostility towards him. Especially Marione who had an atmosphere that was about to snap at any moment.

Even though there were a lot of soldiers in the surrounding area, they would become insignificant if Marione went berserk. Even Dennis was secretly hiding behind him in fear.

However, Rudolf was calmly inquiring Judom by putting on a poker face.

“How? Did the information on 《Sacred Room》 spread outside.....?” (Rudolf)

“You have a point, that room is a space completely isolated from the outside. It was supposed to be inaccessible because the information inside should not be able to leak out, Despite this, how?” (Dennis)

It was a valid question. The guards outside shouldn't be able to hear anything outside the room unless the person inside the room steps out. Thus, it should be impossible for the ones outside to know anything unless the person inside stepped out.

Likewise, information in the room should not leak to the outside either. However, the reality is, Judom's subordinate knew about the accident and appeared right on time. It was so mysterious that they cannot help but inquire the details.

Eveam and her escorts were holding a doubt similar to Rudolf as they paid attention to Judom.

“Hey” (Judom)

Judom called out one of his subordinate by his side. Then, a person came, he whispered to Judom as he showed him a piece of paper. Judom looked at the paper as he listened to their explanation. Although Judom showed a dubious expression midway while reading the letter, he smiled soon after.

“...I see, as I thought, that guy made a move huh? Well this is good, we were really saved by it, Thank you” (Judom)

The subordinate smiled as he left the place.

“... Now then, you wanted an explanation, right? This pape-- no, the person who delivered this letter deserves the credit” (Judom)

“Did you say a letter?” (Rudolf)

Rudolf who was intrigued, stared at the paper with a distant expression. So, the answers are surely written in that letter, Rudolf thought.

“The letter is written this way: The conference is a bluff, all of this was a conspiracy for 『Evila's』 destruction. Please help the Demon Lord....or so it stated. Those words were written at the beginning of the letter.” (Judom)

After Judom's explanation, Rudolf had a grim expression unlike a moment ago. Then, Judom continued.

“A certain person, delivered this information to my subordinates. Well, I said if there is something urgent, that person can deliver information to that location, I guess it was useful. My subordinates was surprised you know? After all is said and done, that place was our hiding place, when they pondered the reason a bird entered the place, a letter could be seen on the bird addressed to my subordinates” (Judom)

Nevertheless, if the written content was normal, his subordinates would have laughed it off. However, when they saw the name of the sender, they believed that information and immediately moved as they were told because Judom had misgivings towards the conference.

“Portnis, Take this” (Judom)

As Judom says so, he handed a dagger to her.

“...This is !? the, 《Hero's Relic》 -!?” (Portnis)

“Yes, my subordinate looked for it. We obtained it ahead of time when this was chosen

as the place for the conference. In a sense.... it was a precaution. But, I did not carry it because I did not think it would be necessary.” (Judom)

Even if Judom carried it, Portnis and the priests will prevent him from carrying it inside. Since that was bound to happen, he entrusted it in the hands of his subordinate.

“You should take this with you” (Judom)

“I-Is it alright for me to have this?” (Portnis)

“Yes, I have confidence in you. And also, take the other priests and leave here” (Judom)

“....I understand” (Portnis)

Is this the favor of our long acquaintanceship? Judom thought, Portnis then carried the dagger with care as she took the other priests and left the area, she seemed to have understood what Judom was trying to convey.

“.....on earth” (Rudolf)

“N?” (Judom)

“Who on earth is that person? The person who conveyed such information?” (Rudolf)

When Rudolf bitterly asked Judom, an unbelievable name jumped out

“..... Nazaar Skyride” (Judom)

“...Wha-What did you say?” (Rudolf)

I have heard that name, Rudolf thought. Rather, he had talked with that person several times. Nazaar was a well-known painter, he had bought several paintings from him. There were a lot of places where he displayed the paintings in the castle. This was because Rudolf was his fan.

However, Rudolf was not the only one who was surprised after hearing the identity of that person.

“Na-, Nazaar... ? Ju-, Judom-dono! Th-,that man named Nazaar...” (Eveam)

Eveam racks her words as she asked for confirmation.

“Yes, it is exactly what you are thinking right now Maou-chan. That person, is Cruel’s  
《Rank 3》, Teckil Shizaa” (Judom)

“I- I see.... it was him.... ” (Eveam)

Then, a weary sigh was heard somewhere nearby. Eveam looked at her surroundings

“Is there something wrong?” (Kiria)

Kiria scrawled in concern as she looked at Eveam.

“N-,No, It’s nothing” (Eveam)

Maybe it was just my imagination, Eveam thought as she watched Judom again.

“Then, do you know where he is now?” (Eveam)

“....Ah, about that one-” (Judom)

“If it’s about him, he should be alright. Your Majesty” (Marione)

Marione is currently grinding his teeth as he is glared at the 『Humas』 in the surroundings. His anger seems to have considerably piled up.

“Certainly, he has a point. Princess...I mean, Your Majesty, we should promptly obtain information on 【Demon Capital: Xaos】 ” (Aquinas)

When Aquinas beside her spoke those words

“That is not it! You should have realized it by now! We should punish them for betraying us!” (Marione)

Marione concentrated magic in both his hands. Tension ran through the soldiers in the surroundings. “Hii-!”, Dennis omitted as he was unable to back off due to fear

“Cease your actions Marione!” (Eveam)

“Why are you stopping me Your Majesty! The people here are pathetic garbages, which I can get rid of in a few minutes”

“I said to cease your actions!” (Eveam)

Eveam severely glared at him.

“....I presume, you have a reasonable explanation for this one, right?” (Marione)

“I have a lot of questions about everything right now. As the Victoria’s King said, the heroes and the 『Gabranth』 may have crossed the bridge and attacked the demon continent, however, there is Iraora who is guarding the 【Mütich Bridge】 , and there even Shublarz and Greyald present as well? Iraora would have informed us if they started to cross the bridge before we crossed over the bridge. Isn’t that right, Kiria?” (Eveam)

“That is right. I would be always informed if any information is passed down, if there is an abnormality, Her Majesty will immediately be informed” (Kiria)

Even if the enemy had a large army, in the 『Evila』 army, there are 2 people from 《Cruel》 and Iraora who was a former 《Cruel》 , Eveam did not think that they would be easily overwhelmed.

Even if it’s possible to overwhelm them, there are soldiers at 【Demon Capital】 , in case they got exhausted by the time they arrive there, Eveam thought that they could defend the country.

En route here, even though the heroes were present, there was no sign of a fight on the bridge. Supposing they rebelled against them, she believed that Shublarz and the others will do something one way or another.

“...Then, for example, if a war happened there, they have already suppressed it?” (Eveam)

“Yes, We 『Evila』 are beings who beared wounds suffered from countless war, we are not so soft to be easily suppressed” (Kiria)

“...You have a point there. Then, it means their betrayal will just crumble from there”



(Marione)

At that moment, Marione expressed a smile with a sense of superiority. He then looked at Rudolf who has not spoken for quite a long time, his eyes closed.

“Humph, it seemed your plan has failed. This is because you have underestimated us”  
(Marione)

Although Marione spoke those words to Rudolf, he responded with-

“...Hahaha” (Rudolf)

For some reason, he suddenly began to laugh.

“Apparently all my speculations seems to be off” (Rudolf)

After he laughed for a while, Rudolf opened his eyes and looked at Marione

“Ah, my apologies for laughing. \*ehem, although this differs certainly from the scenario I have planned out... I have anticipated this could happen” (Rudolf)

“Humph, what a bluff” (Marione)

“Hahaha, Demon Lord” (Rudolf)

He called Eveam while disregarding Marione’s word.

“...What?” (Eveam)

“You said that you believe in the 『Evila’s』 right?” (Rudolf)

“Yes, I believe in my family” (Eveam)

“I see, then supposing one of your family members hate you, what will you do?”  
(Rudolf)

“...What’s with that suddenly” (Eveam)

“Even the 『Evila’s』 have some feelings. They also have some will. If that’s the case, they also have personal thoughts. Or, are saying that all of the 『Evila’s』 swears an

oath of allegiance to you? Isn't that just your arrogance?" (Rudolf)

Eveam frowned from the sudden words he said to her.

"I carefully thought about it. Nonetheless, even if the 『Gabranth』 is on your side who are the highest war potential, do you think they can cross the bridge by force with your foolish actions? There is a possibility that the bridge might be destroyed, you know?" (Eveam)

Certainly, that is possible, Rudolf thought. The 【Mütich Bridge】 is not that strong. It will easily break if such forces fight within the bridge. Therefore, he did not select that route

"I will tell you something good Demon Lord. Although it may sound unbelievable, the war potential here, everyone should have flawlessly crossed over to the demon continent" (Rudolf)

"Th-,That is not possible!" (Eveam)

"It's not possible? Why is it?" (Rudolf)

"Certainly, there is a small possibility where they can cross over by fighting them. However, they won't come out unscratched! Also, en route here, I saw the heroes. In other words, they have not crossed at that time" (Eveam)

"....." (Rudolph)

"Even if they crossed over afterwards, there are companions who I can trust there. They are three people there who are among the ones with the highest war potential there" (Eveam)

She admits that even Iraora was an influential person worthy of being mentioned in that group.

"Therefore, they cannot come out unscratched if they encountered a fight there" (Eveam)

"..... I will tell you another interesting information" (Rudolf)

"Wh-...at?" (Eveam)

“The heroes have crossed over the demon continent..... before you crossed over the bridge” (Rudolf)

“Na-!?” (Eveam)

Eveam stiffened as she was not able to grasp the meaning of Rudolf’s words.

“A-,All the more it is not possible! Iraora is always safeguarding the bridge there, I should have been informed if there was a battle!” (Eveam)

She raised her voice with all her might, Rudolf who saw that subtly loosened his cheeks.

“ I told you before right? The heroes have crossed over safely” (Rudolf)

“ And I told you that-” (Eveam)

Then, Aquinas puts a hand to her shoulder to interrupt her words.

“.....Aquinas?” (Eveam)

Aquinas turns his eyes on Rudolf.

“I see, if I take what you say is for real then, Iraora is...” (Aquinas)

“...That is right, he is one of the 『Evila』 on my side” (Rudolf)

Words that caused Eveam to stiffen were said again

Eveam closed and opened her mouth but nothing came out. It was probably because she was shocked by what Rudolf said.

“Because he decided to join our side, we decided to proceed with this plan” (Rudolf)

“Iraora is a traitor...?” (Marione)

It was Marione who muttered those words, although he doesn’t completely believe his words either, if supposing those words are true, then his reasons for the assault is plausible.

“Hahaha, The existence called 『Evila』 , it seems to be chained to betrayal. You don't believe it? As your brethren betrays fellow brethren” (Rudolf)

“... Lies ” (Eveam)

“N?” (Rudolf)

“Your words are not well grounded! You are only playing your words to provoke us” (Eveam)

“...Haa, You are trembling at this late hour? You know, you don't need to forcibly believe in me. However...” (Rudolf)

Rudolf then, glanced at a certain place.

“When I'm actually seeing it with my own eyes, as might expected, I cannot help but believe in my notion?” (Rudolf)

“...What are you sayin-... g.....Eh?” (Eveam)

Eveam noticed a sense of weakness in her body, she grasped that the feeling is coming down from her chest, and she lowered her eyes there.

This is strange. This is strange. This is strange. Eveam found it strange as she found someones hand pierced through her chest area.

And why is it, that I recognize this hand, Eveam thought. Although she did not want to consider it, she had to confirm the owner of those hands.

From the pain, her face warped as she was mortified of confirming it. Still, she slowly turned her face, to see the face of the person who was behind her.

When she saw that face, a shock went through her whole body. How in the world...why....there

“Why... are you there .....Kiria?” (Eveam)

# KONJIKI NO WORD MASTER

---

## Chapter 114 Out of Place Hiirou

---

\*bushuuuu!

"Gaha !?" (Eveam)

Kiria pulled her arm out of Eveam's body. Kiria simply watched Eveam collapse, her expressionless face hiding whatever thoughts lied within her head.

Following this, a large shadow appeared behind Kiria.

\*buooooooooon!

Kiria instantly bended her body. She avoided the attack from the large shadow. She then moved straight to Rudolf's side with surprising swiftness. It seems that they intend to cut her down with a knifehand strike, or so Kiria thought. As proof her observation, the soldier who were near were blown off by the wind pressure.

"chi" (Kiria)

The assailant's true identity was Aquinas. Even though such a feat was expected of him, Aquinas did not expect Kiria, who was Eveam's aide, to perform such reckless actions. Eveam's protection was not planned properly. Rather, it was the wrong choice to leave the protection to Kiria.

Judom was also rendered immobile by the sudden attack.

"H-Her Majestyyyy!" (Marione)

Marione's face stiffened after he had made it to Eveam's location. He glared at Kiria.

" Kiriaaaaa! What do you think you're trying to do! " (Marione)

" Gu.... " (Eveam)

" H-Her Majesty! Are you alright!? " (Marione)

Eveam desperately stood up while being supported by Marione. She then stared at Kiria in disbelief.

"How are you, Demon Lord? " (Rudolf)

Even though Eveam wanted to hear Kiria's words, what she heard were the words of Rudolf.

" The pain in your chest...doesn't the pain in your heart wound you more right now? I will teach you what that is.....that pain.... is the pain of betrayal. " (Rudolf)

Lies. Lies. Whatever this is, it has to be a mistake.

Eveam repeated this in her heart countless times. In reality, she understood what this pain was due to what had happened. And, that reality is, Kiria was currently standing beside Rudolf.

" W....hy..... Why..... Kiria... ? " (Eveam)

Eveam looked up desperately to the person who was her close aide, even though she was losing a large amount of blood over time.

" Wa... was your weakness... used against you..... ?" (Eveam)

Eveam thought of that and anger swells up in her. She stared at Rudolf as the source of her anger.

However, Kiria never answered back like before. Rather, she was different from the current Kiria. She coldly glances at Eveam like an insect crawling on the ground.

" Princess, look at reality, She.... Kiria is a traitor " (Aquinas)

Eveam broke from those words when Aquinas said it with an indifferent tone.

" Lies! This is unimaginable! She... Kiria has been with me for a long time since my childhood. She has always stayed by my side..... We're friends! Isn't that right, Kiria!" (Eveam)

Bitterness was mixed in Eveam's words. And then, Kiria who had been silent until now, opened her mouth.

" Are you talking about me? I think you are mistaken. I was created for the sake of this day " (Kiria)

Kiria said those words with an indifferent tone. Eveam frowned to those incomprehensible words.

" For the sake of this world? You were created? What are you saying Kiria? " (Eveam)

" I am No. 03, Val Kiria specializing in combat. This android was created for the sake of this day. ... Ah, I made a mistake. Tentatively, I' m a 『Evila』 but I' m a 『Artificial Evila』 " (ValKiria-03)

Kiria said those words indifferently, which made it sound like a joke to Eveam. However, Kiria was serious about her words.

" Val Kiria ..... Impossible... No, that shouldn't be " (Aquinas)

Eveam watches Aquinas face who suddenly muttered his doubts.

" D...Do you know about it.... Aquinas? " (Eveam)

Aquinas looked at the pale face Eveam who said those words.

" Setting it aside for now, Marione, Princess..... Her Majesty, I entrust her to you " (Aquinas)

" What will you do? " (Marione)

" I will settle this fight " (Aquinas)

Then, Aquinas glared at Kiria and Rudolf.

" I will fight here so that they would not reach Her Majesty. Marione, cure the injury on Her Majesty and return to 【Xaos】 as soon as possible " (Aquinas)



" Don' t joke around ... But if I leave Her Majesty' s current condition, it might get worse over time... Eei! You! Mark my words 『Humas』 ! I will destroy you all without fail! " (Marione)

" gu..... Mari.....one " (Eveam)

After Marione's declaration, Eveam was carried in his arms and they began their retreat.

" I won't let you " (???)

In front of them stood a figure who blocked Marione's retreat.

" Y.... You are !? " (Marione)

" fufufu, You ran away splendidly that time... Demon Queen " (???)

In that place, a lion-like person, with a splendid mane was standing there. He was the king with a great ambition, the 《Beast King》 ,Leowald King

" muu, I did not expect to meet you here " (Marione)

Marione felt very concerned. Eveam was in a critical condition, and confronting with the King of 【Gabranth - Pasion】 who rivaled their strength was the worst possible situation.

" Father " (Leglos)

" Step back, Leglos, that Demon Queen will be killed by this Beast King " (Leowald)

Leowald said those words to the first prince, Leglos who was beside him. He took off his mantle and passed it to Leglos. And then, his muscles swelled up, and an aura of bloodthirst erupted from his body.

Marione sensed from Leowald's atmosphere that he could not be defeated by ordinary methods. What's worse, he was carrying Eveam in his arms. He judged that there was no way he could win.

" Marione! " (???)

However, an unexpected person showed up again. And that person is..

" Shublarz !? " (Marione)

Yes, that person was Shublarz who was assigned to defend the Evila border. She seemed to have hurried here. Rather, it was understood that she came here with all her strength without taking a break. It was clear because her clothes was in disorder, her breathing was rugged and she was drenched in sweat

However, Marione did not understand right away why Shublarz was in the 【Sacred Oldine】 . He was quite a distance from her. He thought that there was a possibility that Shublarz was also a traitor. Then, Eveam faintly opened her eyes and watched her.

However, Shublarz did not carelessly approach them, she moved her mouth instead

" .... Iraora betrayed us " (Shublarz)

" ..... Where is Greyald? " (Marione)

" .... Probably..... " (Shublarz)

The appearance of Shublarz was seen, and it was proof that Greyald suffered at Iraora's hand.

" E... Even... Greyald... " (Eveam)

The news was mortifying to hear. Marione understood that because Eveam's trembling body was transmitted to him while he was carrying her.

However, Marione could not completely trust Shublarz words yet. If he believes her words, an attack similar from Kiria might happen again.

" Her Majesty! " (Shublarz)

Shublarz saw Eveam's critical condition and tried to approached them

" Don't come closer! " (Marione)

" B... But Marione! Her Majesty has a terrible injury! " (Shublarz)

" Don't worry, Just don't move there! " (Marione)

Shublarz stopped after Marione strongly said those words. And she surveyed the current surroundings around them

" ....I see. The situation in here is also serious. What's more " (Shublarz)

She turns her gaze to Kiria who was beside Rudolf

" I did not expect for Kiria to..... Then that means if what Iraora said is true, she is related to that person.... ? " (Shublarz)

" mu? What do you mean? " (Marione)

" Iraora's body suddenly changed " (Shublarz)

" Did you say suddenly change? " (Marione)

" Yes, his body reddens and his magic and physical strength have improved enormously. A person seems to have given him that power. Moreover, he swore loyalty to that person and not to Her Majesty " (Shublarz)

Eveam silently listened to Shublarz story

"haa haa haa ..... " (Eveam)

Due to Eveam's current state, her breathing had become more severe compared to previously. Then..

" Maou-chan, drink this " (Judom)

" Hey you! What are you doing! " (Marione)

Judom had went to their presence. He tried to let Eveam drink a small bottle

" Ju.... Judom-dono.... " (Eveam)

" This 《Blood Medicine》 will supplement your loss of blood. For the time being, you are losing a dangerous amount of blood, if we leave it as it is, you might die. So, please believe me Maou-chan. I' m not your enemy " (Judom)

Judom started at her. However, Eveam was unable to trust someone since she was betrayed by her most trusted aide. Then..

\*kiiin!

A buzzing sound was heard in the place. Considerable magic was felt in the surrounding area, and then, a part of the place became distorted. From that distorted area...

" n? Where is this? ... ah, there you are, Oi Maou. There is a discrepancy in our contract.... hm? , what's with that face? " (???)

A person wearing a red robe appeared.

# KONJIKI NO WORD MASTER

---

## Chapter 115

### Meeting With the Demon Lord

---

" You will hear from them directly? What are you talking about? " (Ornoth)

Ornoth who is 《Rank 4》 of 『Cruel』 had no idea what Okamura Hihiro told him

Hihiro wanted to talk with the Demon Lord, but she is not here in 【Xaos】. Right now, the Demon Lord is at 【Holy Oldine】 for the alliance conference. Talking to her directly seems impossible in the current situation. Primarily because there is quite a considerable distance between 【Xaos】 and 【Holy Oldine】. Ornoth shrugged his shoulder in amazement.

There was something that Hihiro needed to ask the Demon Lord about. He wanted to clarify the details of the contract.

Then, Hihiro ignored Ornoth's monologue and focused magic in both his index fingers.

"Transfer 『転移』 " & "Demon Lord 『魔王』 "

(I should go there quickly and hear the circumstances and return back here again)  
(Hihiro)

However, Hihiro suddenly realized something

(.....ah, I could have just called them from here instead of teleporting to them) (Hihiro)

However, he has already written the characters. Canceling it would trigger a  
《Rebound》 so he sighed and said

" Oi Stupid Disciple, I will go out for a moment, when those guys get back, tell them the current situation " (Hihiro)

" Certainly ~zo! " (Nikki)

Hiiro activated his 《Word Magic》 after Nikki saluted him.

\*pishun~!

Other people except Nikki, were dumbfounded when Hiiro's disappeared.

" See you soon Master ~zo! " (Nikki)

Scene from the Past

When Okamura Hiiro arrived in 【Xaos】 his companions were out for a moment because they had some private business to attend to. Hiiro had no choice but to take on the task of looking for an inn with Nikki.

However, Hiiro was lost as he walked in the streets of 【Xaos】 . This is because the size of the country. Although 【Victorias】 was a big country, 【Xaos】 seems to be much bigger.

【Victorias】 was a country that consisted of many towns. 【Xaos】 as well seems to be identical with two or more town condensed in one place. Hiiro thought it is insufficient to tour 【Xaos】 in just one day.

Inside the town, Hiiro and Nikki were having a hard time looking for the lodging place they were supposed to stay in. They continued looking for a while but they felt hungry in the middle of the search. Thus, Hiiro thought that it can't be helped and looked for a place to eat. Fortunately, they quickly found a place to eat



\*karan koron

That was the sound of the door of the coffee shop when a person goes inside. The interior of the shop looked dim and unpopulated. Hiiro found this convenient and proceed to the food counter.

" Ah, Master! I will search for our lodging ~zo! " (Nikki)

" ah? Aren't you hungry? " (Hiiro)

" Yes ~zo! The smoked meat in Master's bag a while ago was really delicious! " (Nikki)

\*pokan!

" nowa! W.. What are you doing! " (Nikki)

" It's not What are you doing! Do not eat my things without my permission! " (Hiiro)

" u~ I'm really sorry ~zo " (Nikki)

Seeing Nikki depressed while hanging one's head, Hiiro sighed.

" Then, go find our lodging quickly, I might forgive if you do that " (Nikki)

" Y... Yes ~zo! " (Nikki)

Nikki who became enthusiastic once again, ran at full speed. Hiiro entered the store and looked for a place to sit. Although there was a young girl sitting alone in the counter seat, the seat besides her seems to be empty. So Hiiro went to that place.

" What will your order be? " (Shopkeeper)

The shopkeeper appeared

" I'm hungry, serve me with your most delicious dish." (Hiiro)

The young girl noticed Hiiro and gave him a glance due to Hiiro's bluntness. Hiiro did not mind that glance. Rather she doesn't seem to exist to Hiiro.

After a while, Fried rice with large serving of meat was served to Hiiro. Hiiro judged this dish was delicious just from it's smell and ate the dish quickly.

" Give me another cup " (Hiiro)

That cycle repeated three times.

" fufufu " (???)

Hiiro heard laughter from the young girl who was beside him. Hiiro glanced back at her.

" Ah. I'm sorry, you were eating so well , that I just.. " (Young Girl)

Though Hiiro was puzzled at the young girl's behaviour, Hiiro returned her glance and ignored her. The shopkeeper who saw that seems to be panicking.

" O... Oi! You!, This person is.. " (Shopkeeper)

" It's okay " (Young Girl)

" B.. But " (Shopkeeper)

" I said it's okay, he is a guest here, and I'm a regular customer. Social status have nothing to do with this " (Young Girl)

" .... haa... If you say so " (Shopkeeper)

When Hiiro heard the conversation of the two people, he can understand that the young girl besides him seems to have a high social standing. Assuming, she is an ojousama, Hiiro felt a little admiration for the young girl who came here alone into this dim and unpopulated coffee shop.

Moreover, the young girl was a regular customer. Until now, Hiiro finally noticed the young girl's appearance. She seems to have a beautiful blonde hair. Her face seems to be proper. She smelled like a fragrant flower. Hiiro judged that lots of men would be attracted to this beautiful lady.

Hiiro was also surprised because this sort of beautiful woman came here alone into this dim shop and what's more she is a regular costumer. But Hiiro returned to his meal instantly for he isn't related to them.

\*karan koron

The shop keeper moved his attention to the new guest. Though it seems to be a guest, three bad looking guys entered the store.

" Oo! Thi.... This is! There is a woman here! ~" (Man A)

One of the three notice the lady's appearance and raised his voice.

" O!.. That's nice~ " (Man B)

" Moreover, she's a super beautiful lady! ~" (Man C)

They puffed their noses in an aroused way and approached the girl.

" U... Uhm Customers! " (Shopkeeper)

" Shut up Shop keeper! Be silent for now " (Man A)

" Un Un... If you don't, we might kill you " (Man B)

" gyahahaha" (Man C)

The storekeeper went silent because of their words. And returned their glance to the young girl. One hand was quietly put in the young girl's shoulder and the shopkeeper turned pale in that moment.

" naa naa Nee~chan, Do you want to have a good time with us? " (Man A)

" Un.. Un.. If that's the case, we'll treat you gently ~" (Man B)

"hou, you have quite an energetic spirit " (Young Girl)

The lady quietly answers the two people who talked to her.

" gyahahaha. Our spirits are full of vigor, well how about it? Do you want to play? "  
(Man C)

" I'm sorry, after this I have a private business to attend to " (Young Girl)

" Then just skip out on it~ " (Man A)

" Un... Un... This is a much better thing to do We'll show you lots of things that will  
make you feel good~" (Man B)

" Gyahahaha! , we'll cl\*ck you so hard, you won't even be able to stand the next  
day! Gyahahaha! " (Man C)

Vulgar laughter resonates throughout the store. The shopkeeper became paler due to  
the current situation.

" I will have to refuse whatever you have to say. Besides, you guys don't seem to be a  
resident to this country? " (Young Girl)

" Ah? Well, that's right. We just came here yesterday " (Man A)

" As expected, because it's my first time encountering such vulgar people in this  
country" (Young Girl)

The three people raised their eyebrow all of a sudden due to the young girl's way of talking.

" .... ha? Oi Nee~chan, you shouldn't be reckless with us you know? ~ " (Pervert A)

" Un.. Un.. The good feeling might become painful ~~ " (Pervert B)

" Gyahahaha! So just become obedient and play with us? " (Pervert C)

Suddenly, the hand on the young girl's shoulder was beaten downwards.

" What are you guys doing? " (Young Girl)

The young girl suddenly stands up and glared at the three of them. It seems that she is angry but it cannot be confirmed because her face seems to be hidden behind her long hair.

" You people are of the 『Evila』 ! As an 『Evila』 , you should be proud of being one! " (Young Girl)

The three people were taken aback by the young girl's outburst.

" " " Gyahahahahaha! " " " (Pervert A, B, C)

They made fun of the young girl while laughing to their hearts content.

" This life.. I should be proud of?, Bullshit! There is no value in it! " (Pervert A)

" Un.. Un... what an interesting remark ehehe~~ " (Pervert B)

" Gyahahahahahaha! I think I'm getting a stomach ache! " (Pervert C)

When the young girl saw their action, she strongly grasped her fist, the shopkeeper seems to have become more paler due the current situation. However,

" Shut Up, Bullshit Trio " (Hiiro)

Hiiro who was docile until now, couldn't endure and complained. And because of these vulgar people that Hiiro lost his appetite.

" Aa? Hey hey, Are you talking about us? ~" (Bullshit A)

It was clear that the only ones in this store is Hiiro and them. It was sarcastic and disrespectful, and if Hiiro didn't fight back he wouldn't be Hiiro.

" There is no one else here. I'm talking about but you guys? Or is it possibly you want me to rename you guys as Garbage Trio ? " (Hiiro)

" W.. What did you said !? " (Garbage A)

" Get out now. Because of you I lost my appetite, I don't want to have a garbage existing beside me. " (Hiiro)

From Hiiro's sarcasm, he earned the glares of the three angry people.

" Hey Red Robe, do you want to die? huh? " (Garbage A)

" What are you doing? That person doesn't have anything to do with this! " (Young Girl)

The other two started to walk toward Hiiro; the young girl tried to obstruct them but was pushed aside. It was clear that they were not going to head out. This caused Hiiro to let out sigh.

" ku! " (Young Girl)

" Nee~chan, afterwards let's have some fun, but before that .... ~ " (Garbage A)

However, Hiiro averts his glance from the man, the storekeeper is seen.

" Oi shopkeeper, in this situation right now, if I was able to drive out the Garbage Trio in this cafe, can I have this meal for free " (Hiiro)

" Ehh..... Ah... I don't mind but... " (Shopkeeper)

" Good, agreement settled " (Hiiro)

Hiiro then chuckled after that.

" Let's go out. I will be your opponent Garbage Trio " (Hiiro)

" Bring it on Red Robe! Don't complain if we kill you! " (Garbage A)



Fortunately, the street doesn't seem to be populated and all of them went into an alley and Hiiro faced the Garbage Trio.

" Don't tell me you three people will fight me at the same time, isn't it unfair? " (Hiiro)

The three people grinned and Hiiro found it troublesome to wait for an answer.

" Let's skip the talk, Come at me Garbage Trio! " (Hiiro)

" W.. We will kill you! " (Garbage Trio)

Three people attacked together.

" B.. Be careful! " (Young Girl)

The young girl shouted, because she saw the three people had knives. However, Hiiro sighed. Then Hiiro drew magic with both his index finger and quickly wrote the character.

" Can you manage skydiving without a parachute? " (Hiiro)

Suddenly, Hiiro disappeared along with the three people.

The young girl who witnessed it forgot to blink her eyes in amazement. Then she perceived a considerable magic appear above her, and looked up.

Four people were now suspended the sky.

" Eh? Ah? Oh? Na... naaaaaaaaa !? " (Garbage A)

" What the heck is thiiiiiiiiiiiis !? " (Garbage B)

" Howaaaaaaa!? high! Too high! I will die from this height " (Garbage C)

Hiiro did not blame them for being surprised. Previously there were on the alley but right now they are suspended in the sky. Moreover, they were considerably high up.

" Yo, how is it? This will be your first time sky diving, right? " (Hiiro)

With a evil grin, Hiiro shot those words at the three people who were floating in the air.

" Y... You! D.. What did you do! Th.. This...! " (Garbage A)

Hiiro did not understand what they are trying to tell him. But one thing for sure, they are frightened little shits right now.

" Well, even if you guys have a rotten personality you are a still an 『Evila』 , even from falling, you will only sustain a serious injury..... that is if you are lucky? " (Hiiro)

" I-If we are lucky-?! Uwaaaaaaaaaaa! " (Garbage A)

" Bye " (Hiiro)

\*pishun

Hiiro disappeared again.

" " " Noo! " " " (Garbage Trio)

Hiiro returned to his former position and faced the shopkeeper.

" I told them not to come here again. And as agreed, this meal is free of charge right? "  
(Hiiro)

" eh.. ah.. Yeah " (Shopkeeper)

Hiiro then heard something crash outside and knew that those three were able to kiss the ground splendidly.

By the way, the character Hiiro used a little while ago,

"Transfer 『転移』 " & "Four People 『四人』 "

He returned with the same character "Transfer 『転移』 " that he conjured with his magic.

Hiiro was satisfied from his full belly and started to leave the place from there.

\*gashi!

Hiiro's arm was grabbed by the young girl

" What do you want? " (Hiiro)

Hiiro expected the young girl to return her expression of gratitude but was taken aback by her following words.

" I... I'm the Demon Lord of this country! Th.. That's why, Please let me treat you to any drink you like!! " (Young Girl)

Hihiro thought that there is something wrong with the head of this young girl after all.

# KONJIKI NO WORD MASTER

---

Chapter 116

Hiiro and Eveam

---

Hihiro understood that he was being treated to a drink, maybe because she bears a part of his involvement. This is probably the reason for her actions, because Hihiro was the one who provoked the fight and thus an apology was not requested

However, the words "I'm the Demon Lord" she spoke before. Hihiro unintentionally thought that he misheard her words. Therefore, he tried those words in his head.

"I'm the Beach King", Hihiro thought. Although he did not understand its meaning, He imagined it was an existence close to a manager of the beach. But "... Nah" Hihiro denied, to begin with he only judged his impression based on her appearance. Even if he changed the words with ones that sound the same, he cannot find any words that has a similar characteristics of her words

In other words, the words Demon Lord. She claimed to be the Demon Lord in Hihiro's presence. If he was not mistaken, this is the home territory of the Demon Lord, although he heard that the Demon Lord was a woman, Who would have imagined that the Demon Lord would lurk alone in a coffee shop?

Supposing she is for example, the Demon Lord, although she can potentially go out to a place alone with this degree of peace, there was the incident with the strangers awhile ago. She probably did not obtain official permission to go out.

Or she is simply yearning to be a Demon Lord, Hihiro instinctively analyzed the matter concerning about that. He thought about its advantages, but he found nothing. He doubted it because she may or may not be the Demon Lord of the Demon Country. In any case, Hihiro will find out soon.

When Hihiro considered the shopkeeper's reaction when he talked to the young girl in a

rough attitude, there is a good chance that she could be someone eminent. Furthermore, when the Bullshit Trio approached her the shopkeeper became even more worried. From that alone, it is clear that the young girl was either a influential or a powerful person.

When Hiiro calmly considered about it, he judged that she might be the real thing. And now, Hiiro saw the young girl watching him with an eager expression as he scratched his cheek.

(Well, I am waiting for that Baka-Denshi, so it's probably alright) (Hiiro)

As he thought so, he decided to obediently receive her offer.

Hiiro returned in the store, and he was treated to a drink as she promised. The treat was just an ice-cream soda but it was still delicious.

While Hiiro enthusiastically drunk the drink, she finally opened her mouth.

“As I said earlier, I’m the Demon Lord. The one who governs this country” (Young Girl)

Hiiro becomes silent as he watched her intently. Then, she somehow become flustered as she spoke.

“Ah,P-Please ask the shopkeeper whether or not what I’m telling is true~!” (Young Girl)

“No, to begin with I have already found out from that shopkeepers forceful speech”  
(Hiiro)

“Ah..... I-, I see. muu...” (Young Girl)

“Apart from whether you are the Demon Lord or not, Do you need something? This treat you gave me is not the reason why you stopped me right?” (Hiiro)

She catches her breath from Hiiro’s words.

“Uu~, you even understood just from that” (Young Girl)

“It was easy to tell that much” (Hiiro)

The atmosphere around her indicated that she wanted to talk. Without such an intent she would not have stopped from leaving the store by grabbing his arm.

“U~~ Am i really that easy to understand?” (Young Girl)

For some reason, her upturned eyes become cloudy.

“Who knows, Maybe I’m just very sharp” (Hiiro)



Hiiro gave a half-hearted response.

“And so? What do you want to talk about?” (Hiiro)

“Ah, tha-, that is” (Young Girl)

She stammered as she was hesitant to say her words.

“I will go if you have nothing else to say?” (Hiiro)

Hiiro tried to get out of the place as it became a bit troublesome for him. However, his arms was gripped once again.

“A-, about your magic awhile ago” (Young Girl)

“Sorry, I have no obligation to answer that” (Hiiro)

“I.....see, Is that so. That’s right....” (Young Girl)

It was clear to Hiiro that she became depressed right away

(Is she really the Demon Lord? I can only see an ordinary young girl) (Hiiro)

Hihiro compared her to others girls he at least know of, he didn't find any difference. Rather, he did not see her as the person who has the caliber of a Demon Lord.

( Although I heard this from Aka-Loli, it seems that the present Demon Lord was forced to take the crown, when the previous Demon Lord died. ) (Hihiro)

The position of a ruler cannot be vacant. He heard that the person who had a trace of the royal family's blood had been temporarily selected to succeed that position.

Then, the girl in question raises her face.

"C-, come to think of it, I haven't properly introduced myself! I'm Eveam! Eveam Gran Early Evening" (Eveam)

"What a long name. I'll just call you Maou" (Hihiro)

"If possible I wanted you to call me by my name" (Eveam)

"How about Maou(仮-Temp) ? I think it is interesting if it was Maou (笑 - Smile)" (Hihiro)

"What are you implying with Maou (笑 - Smile)! Uuu~, Maou is fine....." (Maou-笑-Smile)

She gave up on complaining as she dejectedly dropped her shoulders.

“..Your name” (Eveam)

“N?” (Hiiro)

“May you allow me to hear your name?” (Eveam)

Now what to do, Hiiro thought. He doesn't mind introducing himself. If other ruler found out that he is with the Demon Lord, it could become troublesome. But, unlike when he was summoned, he now had enough strength to deal with any encounters. Therefore, he judged that there is no need to be worried about it.

“Hiiro. Hiiro Okamura” (Hiiro)

“Hiiro.... what a good name” (Eveam)

When she smiled at that time, it was a such a brilliant smile that it would captivate anyone looking at it. The smile had the ability to pacify and charm those that looked at it. However, Hiiro did not lose his blunt expression.

“Hiiro, you are similar to the people awhile ago, you are not a resident of this country, Am I right?” (Eveam)

“That's right. I have only arrived today” (Hiiro)

“For what reason have you come here?” (Eveam)

“I want to ask you the same question” (Hiiro)

Although he had no obligation to tell her, he thought that he can honestly answer as his companions said that they will drop in for a short visit to someone. And when he said those words, she responded with “I see” and nodded in consent.

“Well, my purpose is a little bit unusual” (Hiiro)

“What do you mean?” (Eveam)

“The 《Grand Fortunia Library》 is here in this country right?” (Hiiro)

“Yes” (Eveam)

“I came here because I want to receive permission to enter 《Basement-5》 ” (Hiiro)

Truthfully speaking, Hiiro was waiting for his companion Liliyn to obtain the permit.

“Speaking of 《Basement-5》 , you need a royal family’s permission to get there. Why do you want to go to such a place?” (Eveam)

“Hah? Isn’t it obvious? I want to read the books? Is there any other reasons rather than to read?”

“.....Eh? You will not sell it?” (Eveam)

She looked at him with a surprised expression, as if she wanted to say “Really?”

“Hah? What makes you think that? What happens if I sell it? Will I get some gold out of it?” (Hiiro)

“G-, Generally yes” (Eveam)

“Listen well, I only want to read a rare book. It is just an intellectual curiosity. I have no interest in things like money” (Hiiro)

“.....” (Eveam)

For a while, Eveam was dumbfounded. She was surprised at Hiiro’s unexpected words.

“Ah, I apologize for that. I have received many requests to enter 《Basement-5》 , but up to now, most of thier intentions was to steal what is inside, so I unintentionally asked because most people who wanted it intends to make a profit out of it” (Eveam)

“By mistake, I was like them? Do not associate me with those guys. It is unpleasant.” (Hiiro)

Hihiro pouted in displeasure as he sipped his drink again. Seeing that sort of Hihiro, Eveam gently smiled.

“... I see, I mean, I’m really sorry about that. I did not consider that there was a person who wanted nothing but to just read them” (Eveam)

“Isn’t there a thirst for knowledge for the people around here?” (Hihiro)

“Well, there is a similar person like Hihiro in here too. However, the people who casually and carefully read books , sadly speaking..... there are only a few of them in reality” (Eveam)

Currently there is a war going on, but sooner or later the country might become a battlefield, so most people are strengthening their bodies, and stocking on emergency provisions. Plainly speaking, in the same way, Hihiro didn’t care about the people mentioned as he only wanted to read some books.

“But don’t you agree that the books are good?” (Eveam)

“Heh, so you love books?” (Hihiro)

Her mutter is heard, as she was asked whether books are her favorite.

“Well, when I read a book, it allows me to be someone else other than a Demon Lord. So while I’m reading, I can freely spread my wings” (Eveam)

“ You are saying like you are not free right now” (Hiiro)

She frowned when she heard his words.

“If you tell me that being here isn’t an example of your freedom then what on earth is freedom to you?” (Hiiro)

“T-That is..... I don’t usually spend all my time in here! I often lead everyone and guide them as the Demon Lord!” (Eveam)

“However, you are a regular customer here right?” (Hiiro)

“U.....uu.....” (Eveam)

At that moment, the shopkeeper who witnessed the conversation between two people where Eveam was cornered, found it amusing and remarked with a “pufu” while smiling.

“Mou! what is so funny you idiot!” (Eveam)

“F-, Forgive me Demon Lord-sama! H-,However it’s been a long time since I’ve seen this kind of Demon Lord-sama!” (Shopkeeper)

When the shopkeeper gladly said so, Eveam’s cheek blushed. And then she glared at Hiiro.

“... Somehow I feel mad talking you, Hihiro” (Eveam)

“Don’t blame on me” (Hihiro)

“Mu~” (Eveam)

“While it may be true that you’re the Maou, it’s not that bad to assume that you are free, Don’t you agree?” (Hihiro)

“....Eh?....” (Eveam)

“Although I don’t know what it means to be the Demon Lord, but you're moving about within the limits of a Demon Lord. Could it be because you are tired of being a demon lord?” (Hihiro)

“.....” (Eveam)

“ In other words, if you want to live that sort of life, you just have to throw away your image of trying to become the Demon Lord” (Hihiro)

“I-I cannot do such a thing! The people will lose someone to follow!” (Eveam)

Eveam smacked her fist on the counter when Hihiro suggested such an option.



“If that’s the case, don’t you agree you need the capacity to do that? If it’s true that you are the real thing, even if you are ruler who does as she pleases, people will follow if you are a charismatic person” (Hiiro)

“.....” (Eveam)

“For the sake of the people and for the sake of the country; that is a splendid ideal. However if you cannot move for your own sake, someday you will fall. If it’s me, I feel sorry for such a ruler. Even if no one follows me, I’ll be fine with it” (Hiiro)

Eveam slightly turns her face down.

“The people will follow a ruler who does as she pleases....?” (Eveam)

“You might say it like that, I think you would attain it if you have the ability to become a ruler. Well, at the very least, you do not seem to be a ruler in my eyes” (Hiiro)

“Eh?” (Eveam)

“In my point of view, all I see is an ordinary young girl” (Hiiro)

Startled from Hiiro’s words, Eveam’s heart leaped. It was as if a sharp arrow pierced her heart. No, it’s different. She sensed her heart being gripped by something bare-hand that sent a rush throughout her entire body.

( An ordinary.....young girl) (Eveam)

Although Eveam didn't notice, her face was dyed in red up to her ears. And because of that, the shopkeeper was grinning at her when she saw such a face.

"I-, I'm the Demon King! C-Cccalling me an ordinary girl, I-Ilt's embarrassing!" (Eveam)

# KONJIKI NO WORD MASTER

---

## Chapter 117

### Request of the Demon Lord

---

Eveam did not notice the change in her tone. However, she somehow felt relieved as a pleasant feeling of security dwelled in her heart.

Although Hihiro was unaware of her situation, as he had simply stated what was troubling him, Eveam was the one that had become troubled instead.

“B-,By the way Hihiro!” (Eveam)

“Aa? Why is your face red?” (Hihiro)

“D-,Do not worry about it! T-there’s just something wrong with the air-conditioning in here!” (Eveam)

“Is that so?” (Hihiro)

If Hihiro had to say, he felt that the place was cold. Furthermore, he found her change of tone unusual as he tilted his head to the side.

“H-Hihiro, you are an adventurer, am I right?” (Eveam)

She returned to her former tone. Although Hihiro thought that the previous tone suited her more, he ignored it as he didn’t think much of it.

“I guess” (Hihiro)

“How long are you going to be here?” (Eveam)

“Who knows, depends on the objective” (Hiiro)

“Ah, the matter about the 《Fortuna Grand Library》 you spoke awhile ago?” (Eveam)

“Yes..., or perhaps I should say that if you really are the Demon Lord you can grant permission, right?” (Hiiro)

At that moment, she finally noticed his intentions. Hiiro, who was only half-convinced, asked because he did not understand whether she was the Demon Lord or not.

“Yes, If it’s me, I can grant permission. However, no matter how much you want to read at 《Basement-5》, there are prohibited books, ancient documents and other treasured books that cannot be brought out of the premises. I cannot grant permission to a person I cannot trust right away” (Eveam)

She’s right about that. Hiiro considered her point of view justifiable. He thought that he had no choice but to place his expectations on Liliyn and her group.

“However, if Hiiro hears my offer, I shall grant you permission” (Eveam)

His eyebrows twitched as he fixed his eyes on her.

“An offer, you say?” (Hiiro)

“Yes, in other words, a request. Of course, I will create the contract. That is only if Hiiro does not mind, though” (Eveam)

Hiiro pondered the intent of her words. She doesn't seem to be lying. If she really is the Demon Lord, he thought it would be a good deal.

Surely, There is no better offer for my objective if I receive permission directly from the person at the top of the country, Hiiro thought. Although he felt bad for Liliyn, there was no guarantee that she would obtain the permit. Thus, when there is a more reliable method, he would wisely choose that one

(However, this Demon Lord....rather, I still don't know whether or not she actually is the Demon Lord. Still, her request does not seem to be a normal one) (Hiiro)

Although Hiiro handled a lot of requests up to now, it was his first time to receive one directly from a ruler. Therefore, he could not discern it. Although he thought that she may possibly make an unreasonable demand, he judged that it would be worth it to simply listen to her story.

“....The contents of your request?” (Hiiro)

Instantly, Eveam's expression hardened. From simply observing that, Hiiro knew that what she was going to ask was not going to be just some whimsical request.

“You do know about the conference that’s being held in one week, yes? Well, about that conference-” (Eveam)

“Wait a second” (Hiiro)

“...What is it?” (Eveam)

“Conference? If I’m not mistaken, although I’ve heard that sort of rumors before I came here, you said one week-? If you are the Demon Lord, should you really be in a place like this?” (Hiiro)

“.....” (Eveam)

Suddenly, she looked away. Ah, this person really ran away from the castle, or so Hiiro had thought.

(Perhaps, she was not able to bear the pressure, and seemed to have come here to take a breather, huh..... ) (Hiiro)

As he pondered this, he looked over at the shopkeeper. She slightly nodded in response, seemingly trying to convey that the idea he was thinking was right on target.

“Haa, well, enough about you.” (Hiiro)

It doesn't mean I've decided that you are the Demon Lord, or so Hihiro thought.

"That conference will be held in one week. If I remember correctly, it was named the 『Humas-Evila Alliance Conference』 " (Hihiro)

"Yes, however...." (Eveam)

For some reason, her expression darkened.

"....Some sort of problem will occur. Rather, you're thinking that there is a possibility that something will happen?" (Hihiro)

"....." (Eveam)

"That silence means that I'm right. However, to begin with, it isn't unusual for some danger to occur during the conference you know?" (Hihiro)

"That is....that is right, however" (Eveam)

"Where is it? The place of the conference?" (Hihiro)

"It's not possible to say. Unless, after you sign the contract that is" (Eveam)

If she were to easily mention the place at this moment, Hihiro would probably look down on her. Also, if she carelessly teach such confidential information like the location of the conference, she would be disqualified as the Demon Lord.



“I got it. Then hurry up and say it. What are you seeking from me?” (Hiiro)

“..... I want you to become someone that will help this country” (Eveam)

“.....” (Hiiro)

“I do not want to believe it will happen, but there might be some subtle movements in the 『Humas』 continent. At the time when the country becomes undermanned, I want you to lend your power to become the country’s defense” (Eveam)

Apparently, she could not defend her country by herself as she was heading to the conference. The 『Humas』 may try and attack here when that chance comes. In other words, she was currently suffering from slight anxiety brought upon by the possibility of betrayal.

If something like that were to happen, Eveam wanted to ask Hiiro for help to ensure that neither side would get hurt.

“I’ve been able to grasp Hiiro’s power just from observing it earlier. That terrifying magical power, or rather, your magic.....is most likely a Unique Magic, correct?”  
(Eveam)

Hiiro was shocked in his mind as he maintained his poker face. He had not anticipated to be instantly seen through.

“I have confidence in my magic perception. I did not sense any attributes in the magic

used at that time..... therefore, it must have a unique attribute” (Eveam)

“....I wonder about that” (Hiiro)

“I do not have any intention of making it public. What I’m in need of is genuine defensive power. If it’s Hiiro...if you are the owner of that power who does as he pleases, I can expect it as one of the defense of this country” (Eveam)

It appears that even if I deceive her, she already seems to have a strong belief in me. Or so Hiiro thought as he sighed.

“It is a convenient ability. Although, I certainly use a unique magic; you want me to demonstrate my power in case of emergency?” (Hiiro)

“That is correct. This is strictly just a precaution to the last. Of course, it would be good if nothing happened” (Eveam)

“.....if that’s the case, the request fee?” (Hiiro)

Thereupon, she slowly relaxed her cheeks.

“I will issue you the entry permit for the 《Fortuna Grand Library’s》 《Basement-5》 ” (Eveam)

“....a verbal promise, huh?” (Hiiro)

“Nay, I have said it before, right? We will sign a contract” (Eveam)

Soon after, she took out one sheet of paper from her breast pocket. There was nothing yet written in there. She bit her finger with her teeth and used that blood to write the words.

Hiiro firmly confirmed the words written within the contract. The contents entailed the details of the request fee. In addition, compliance policies had also been written there, as if to deter the contractee from breaking and abandoning the contract midway.

“This is the 《Contract Roll》. The person who signed this, will have their soul cut down supposing they break their word based from what is written in the contract” (Eveam)

“... In other words, our lives will be taken away” (Hiiro)

“ That is indeed correct” (Eveam)

What a frightening contract, Hiiro sighed as he realized it's risks. Certainly, it might be alright to inform the other party of the location of such a valuable meeting place should they have signed this contract, or so Hiiro pondered.

“My request... Will you accept it?” (Eveam)

She thought Hiiro might refuse. Although Hiiro was definitely strong, he was an adventurer who did not want to participate in wars. Moreover, she had a vague impression that he did not like the contract. Nonetheless, she was very interested in

Hiiro's potential.

Eveam understood that Hiiro possessed an abundant amount of magic power. His level was probably also high, in accordance with his magic. For some reason, she was able to understand that his level might also be higher than her, the Demon Lord. But to have an exceptional person appear in this kind of situation, she believed it might be some sort of revelation of something to her.

For this reason, Eveam wanted Hiiro's help at all costs. She was attracted not only to his strength, but she noticed something which her heart seems to be attracted somewhere to Hiiro. In spite of that, most is solely because of his power, or so she thought.

If it's Hiiro, then he would be suitable as an effective defense for the country, she imagined. Although she dangled the bait in front of Hiiro, she vaguely sensed that Hiiro seemed to be ill-humored based on their negotiation. However, it was not something that she should be worried about right now.

However, even though she was concerned that Hiiro might refuse the request, she reflexively stiffened when Hiiro responded.

"So? Where should I sign?" (Hiiro)

Although Hiiro questioned her like that, Eveam hardened as she suspiciously observed Hiiro.

"Hey, tell me where to sign, quickly" (Hiiro)

“Eh, a-, ah.... h-, however, is it really ok? T-there is a chance that it might become a war, you know? (Eveam)

“I don’t really care. Even if it becomes a war, I’m not a person who would die from that” (Hiiro)

How much self-confidence do you have there? Eveam wanted to ask. However, Leaving that aside, Eveam couldn’t help but be feel glad as Hiiro will sign the contract.

“H-Here. Sign here” (Eveam)

Her tone just changed again, or so he thought. Then, the moment Hiiro signed the contract with blood in the same way as her.

Pikaaaaaaaaa!

The 《Contract Roll》 began to cast a pale light. Then, the paper became particles as it was split in half and absorbed into the chest of the two people

“Fu~. With this, our contract is complete” (Eveam)

“Your tone changed, you know?” (Hiiro)

“W-,With this, our contract has been established! And don’t retort on my tone!”  
(Eveam)

She is not scary at all, Hihiro thought as the Demon Lord shouted with a red face. Thus, after the contract was established, Hihiro received the details of the conference that takes place a week from now.

karan koron.

“Shishou! I was able to find the inn! Please praise me!” (Nikki)

Nikki cheerfully appeared. However, there was a shadow behind her.

“Oh dea~r ~m, so you were here Your Majesty ~n” (Shublarz)

Eveam looked at the bewitching woman who appeared in the attire of a dancer, her bountiful chest exposed. Eveam wore a disappointed expression as she murmured “I was found” .

“Really, Marione and Kiria are ang~ry you kn~ow?” (Shublarz)

“I-, I apologize. I shall return at once” (Eveam)

“Please do so. ~M? Oh my, a secret meeting with a man? ~m, I really can’t leave you when you are cornered Your Majes~ty” (Shublarz)

Shublarz teased her as she looked at Hiiro.. Even though it wasn't the case, Eveam face turned bright red.

"I-, i-i-i-it's not a secret meeting! And, I-i-i-i-i don't search for this kind of things when I'm cornered!" (Eveam)

"Fufufu,-fu ~n....." (Shublarz)

Then she quietly watched Hiiro,

"L-, Look! Let us go quickly! There are a lot of things I have to do!" (Eveam)

"A~h! Geez, Your Majesty, as you wish Your Majest~y" (Shublarz)

Eveam walked towards the door, suddenly she halted, then she faced Hiiro's direction.

"So Hiiro, I will be counting on you! But don't be too reckless alright?" (Eveam)

After she said those words, she went out of the shop.

"Oh dear, Her Majesty's tone was.....~m I se~e" (Shublarz)

As she said so, she once again looked in Hiiro direction.

“Fufufu, it seems Her Majesty was indebted to you, a~ri~ga~to” (Shublarz)

She winked at Hiiro and similarly went out of the shop.

“.... what on earth was that?” (Nikki)

Nikki inclined their head unable to follow the whole situation.

“Who knows, I only just received a request from a strange woman” (Hiiro)

“.....a request, is it?” (Nikki)

After that, Hiiro taught Nikki what was going to happen in a week's time. He informed Nikki the details about the high possibility of this place becoming a war-zone. He then instructed Nikki that they may rampage if the occasion calls for it. Yet, for some reason, Nikki said “I'm itching to test my skills~zo”, in a motivated manner.

(However, to think that she really was the Demon Lord..... yet, no matter how I see her, she looks just like an ordinary girl) (Hiiro)

At that time, the following thought did not enter Hiiro's mind. The fact that the events one week from now would hold importance to such an extent. Surely, Hiiro could not possibly have imagined so.



# KONJIKI NO WORD MASTER

---

Chapter 118

Hiiro, At Holy Oldine

---

After Hiiro recalled his exchange with the Maou Eveam, he used the word [Transfer]/『転移』 in order to directly ask her about her true intentions in regards to the contents of their contract.

Once his disciple Nikki saw him off, he felt the familiar experience of movement by teleportation and judged that he had arrived at his destination. After first surveying where he was, he decided to fire off his complaints towards her.

“Hm? Where is this? .....Oh, there she is. Oi Maou, there was a discrepancy in the contract’s.....wait, what’s with that face?” (Hiiro)

The first thing he thought of was that the heaviness of the atmosphere wasn’t half-hearted. There was bloodlust and feelings of hostility all over the area. Not only that, but currently, the presences of the people surrounding Hiiro forcefully caused him to realize that many of them were not ordinary people.

And the primary indicator was that Eveam, the person he had come to meet, was covered in blood and was being carried by a weird ossan.

Hiiro made a serious face and quietly observed the surroundings. A large temple-like building entered his line of sight.

(That must be the Great Temple Oldine that the Maou spoke of) (Hiiro)

Just in case, he had heard a certain degree of information about the conference, so he wasn’t surprised. It was only at the level of being impressed by the size of the building.

“Y-you bastard! Who are you! Rather, just where did you appear from!” (Marione)

Naturally, Marione, who was worried about the well-being of the Maou, was highly wary of the mysterious person, Hiiro, who had suddenly appeared. However, Hiiro did not answer. He silently looked over at Eveam.

The other people too, had lost their words at the sudden visitor and froze in a bewildered manner. Even Aquinas and the traitor Kiria had frozen while trying to understand the current situation.

(Kiria’s face.....then that boy isn’t one of her subordinates?) (Aquinas)

Aquinas had, upon seeing Kiria’s surprised expression, judged that to be so. Of course, not only him, but Judom also came to the same conclusion.

“.....Hi.....iro?” (Eveam)

Eveam, having finally noticed Hiiro’s presence, faintly murmured.

“Your Majesty? Do you know that youngster?” (Marione)

As Marione asked, though it may have been due to Eveam's hazy consciousness, she made a blank face and said,

"Ah, no.....this must be an illusion.....Hiiro.....I left the country to him....." (Eveam)  
"The country? What are you talking about your Majesty?" (Marione)

Hiiro observed the situation, and started to calmly analyze it.

(It seems that the conference ended in a failure like I had thought. Both humans and beastmen are here too.....in other words, the Maou and co. got caught in their encirclement and became unable to make any movements? But even if it's the Maou, for someone to have given her such a serious injury is.....) (Hiiro)

He looked around restlessly as he once again surveyed the surroundings.

(The one who did it was.....that guy?) (Hiiro)

While thinking that, he gazed at the Beast King Leowald. Based on his atmosphere, he felt that Leowald had an aura different from normal people. If he had to say, it was an atmosphere similar to when he made Liliyn angry. In other words, it was abnormal.

(Those guys.....kind of seem like comrades) (Hiiro)

Of course, there were other abnormal-like people around. They were Aquinas and Judom. However, no matter what, he couldn't feel any hostility towards the Maou from them, so he didn't include them.

(.....hm? That guy.....I don't really get) (Hiiro)

He glanced towards Kiria, but couldn't tell whether or not she was strong or weak. If he had to express it, she only felt eerie. It was as if she was a person that was not a person. It was a sensation similar to when he met monsters, yet also a sensation similar to when he met seemingly strong Evila. At the same time, he felt as though she were a puppet without a will nor anything else.

(.....hm? That oyaji is.....ah, I see, if I recall correctly, it's the King, the King. His name was.....well, King is fine) (Hiiro)

Hiiro had completely forgotten his name. However, he faintly remembered the first King he saw when he was summoned to this world. Though it appeared that the King hadn't realized his identity.

(Well, right now I have the appearance of an 『Imp Race』, not to mention I probably didn't leave much of an impression) (Hiiro)

Just as he was thinking that,

“Ah, are you the one from that time?” (Shublarz)

Upon looking towards the voice that suddenly called out to him, he saw a woman that he had met recently.

(That woman, I’m pretty sure she was the one who came to pick up the Maou.....)  
(Hiiro)

Right, he was talking about Shublarz. When he was talking to Eveam at the café, she was the one who came to pick Eveam up from the café. He remembered that he had met her at that time.

“You know him, Shublarz?” (Marione)

“Eh, well yes. Simply put, he’s her Majesty’s.....’this’, I guess?” (Shublarz)

At Marione’s question, Shublarz stuck up her pinky finger.

“Wh-who is my lo-lo-lo-lover!?” (Eveam)

After seeing that, Eveam, who forgot about her serious wound, let out a loud voice and felt an intense pain rush through her chest. However, her consciousness, which had been faint up until now, cleared up properly.

“Haahaahaa.....Hi-Hihiro? Th-then this.....isn’t an illusion?” (Eveam)

“Oi Maou, I came to complain to you” (Hiiro)

As he sternly pointed his finger,

“There was a conflict in the contract’s contents, so what are you going to do about it?”  
(Hiiro)

“A.....conflict? Wh-what is.....?” (Eveam)

Once again, Eveam’s consciousness began to cloud.

“In the first place, why do I have to come all the way to the requester to.....hey, are you listening?” (Hiiro)

Hiiro spoke with a displeased face, but it seemed that Eveam didn’t have any time for that right now. Like this, he wouldn’t be able to smoothly advance the conversation.

“Your Majesty! Whatever, I don’t know who you are, but I’ll deal with that later! Right now we-” (Marione)

“Shut up, I came here to talk. That’s why-” (Hiiro)

While he said that, Hiiro began to gather magic at his fingertips. Then he wrote the words [Complete Recovery]/ 『完治』 and fired it towards Eveam.

“What are you doing!” (Marione)

As Hihiro had fired magic, Marione immediately attempted to repel the incoming words by extending his arm, but

.....swoosh.

Surprisingly, as Hihiro pointed his fingertip towards the ground, the words advanced while turning like a forkball to avoid his arm. Then the words suddenly stuck onto Eveam.

Pikaaaaaaa!

Dazzling particles of light began surrounding her body.

(.....ahhh, it's warm. What a comfortable light) (Eveam)

Eveam remembered being embraced by her mother like this as a young child. At that time, she also had a comfortable feeling of complete security like now.

“Wh-what is with this tremendous magic power!?” (Shublarz)

Shublarz shouted as she looked at the light.

“Mu, muu!” (Marione)

Marione had promptly tried to get away from her body, but his gaze was fixated upon the light-covered Eveam. And then the light began to gradually weaken.

“Oi you bastard! What did you do to her Majesty!” (Marione)

“Shut up, Moustache Baron” (Hihiro)

“Mou-mou-moustache Baron you say.....!” (Marione)

Marione truly did have a great moustache, but those were not words to be used against the one of the Evila's top class members. It was to the extent where Shublarz became dumbfounded.

“How long are you going to sleep for. Hurry and wake up, and explain the situation Maou” (Hihiro)

“Wh-what are you saying! Her Majesty is-” (Marione)

As he was saying that, Eveam suddenly moved her body. Her expression was blank as she stiffened and began to touch her chest timidly. And then she realized that the intense pain that had been running through her up until now had disappeared without a single trace.

“Yo-your Majesty?” (Marione)

As one might expect, after seeing Eveam, whose face colour had suddenly gotten better, Marione also inclined his head in confusion.

“.....wha-what did you do, Hiiro?” (Eveam)

Naturally, to solve the mystery that had happened to her body, she asked Hiiro, the one who had caused the mystery.

“Something like that doesn’t matter. But that’s a loan outside of the contract. Remember that.” (Hiiro)

“Hi-Hiiro.....I see, so you healed me.....I’m grateful” (Eveam)

Leaving her hand on her chest, Eveam gave a faint smile towards him. However, in the next moment, she gave a face of realization and raised her head.

“Bu-but Hiiro! Why are you here? Didn’t I request you to defend the country!” (Eveam)

“Request, you say? What do you mean, your Majesty? No, more importantly, is your body alright?” (Marione)

“Ah, ha~n, so it’s like~that~” (Shublarz)

While Marione continued to worry about Eveam’s physical condition, Shublarz came to an understanding of the relationship between the two of them and nodded.

“Marione, I hired Hiiro. Don’t worry. And also, he even healed my body for me” (Eveam)

“Is that true, Maou-chan? Wouldn’t it be better to drink some 《Blood increasing drug》 just in case?” (Judom)

Judom held out a small ball as he said that.

“I’m thankful, Judom-dono. But, for some reason, my body has become extremely lively. It’s likely thanks to Hiiro’s magic” (Eveam)

Judom looked at her facial colour and agreed. Though her face had been completely pale due to blood loss just now, right now her complexion was much better.

“But you’re an 『Evila』 right? Even so, you can use light magic? Just who are you?” (Judom)

However, at that moment, Aquinas began to fall back with alarm.

“I’m sure that we all have questions we’d like to have answered, but the situation is going to start moving soon. Look, the Beast King’s starting to unstiffen.” (Aquinas)

It was true that thanks to Hiiro’s sudden entrance, Leowald had lost the timing to fight, but after seeing Eveam’s state after his healing, he stiffly began to scowl. Bloodlust began to surge out from his whole body.

And then Leowald began to concentrate power into both his fists.

“Uwooooooooo.....” (Leowald)

With him in the centre of it, the earth began to creak and fissures appeared.

“If we fight with him like this, it seems like this whole area’s gonna be cleared out”  
(Aquinas)

Aquinas muttered that as he felt Leowald’s power. Then, Leowald flew up high into the air.

“Marione, take her Majesty!” (Aquinas)

Aquinas said that, but-

“It’s alright Marione. I can move on my own. Everyone should get away from this area!”  
(Eveam)

Hearing Eveam’s words, everyone directly underneath Leowald attempted to move away from the area.

“Take this, you 『Evila』 !!!!” (Leowald)

Taking a stance with both fists above his waist, Leowald continued to drop with a tremendous amount of momentum.

“Uwoooooooo! 《Maximum Blaze Fang Attack》 !” (Leowald)

As flames gushed out from his body, the flames began to focus into his two fists. And then, his appearance as he opened his fists and thrust them forward, gave off the shape of the fangs of a beast.

Boooooooooooooom!

The impact of his fall, in addition to the destructive power of his attack let out a tremendous shock wave. At the same time, with him as the epicentre, flames began to spread out like ripples. Even if you thought you managed to avoid becoming prey to the fangs, the belated second wave of flames would make the target incapable of running away.

Hiiro and co. also did not get hit directly by the fangs as they distanced themselves, but as they didn’t think there would be a second wave, a wall of flames began to draw near them.

As he watched the wave approach with incredible heat and speed, Hiiro let out a sigh as though it were tiresome.

(Oioi, why do I have to go through something like this?) (Hiiro)

Evidently it was because he came here, but he didn't think that he would get caught up in such a complicated situation. He hadn't realized it, but the effects of the title, 《Innocent Bystander》, were currently going strong.

However, if he continued to stand dumbfounded, he would get caught up in the flames, so he immediately needed to do something, but Hihiro wasn't hasty. This was because he had set the word [Safeguard]/ 『防衛』 just in case, so that he could use it whenever. As long as he used it, he could ward off this level of attack.

But, he couldn't let the Maou next to him, Eveam, get killed. This is because she was his important ticket to the 《Fortuna Grand Library》. He couldn't possibly lose his requester.

That's why he was thinking of protecting her with his 《Word Magic》 at the very least, but at that moment, Aquinas appeared in front of him.

He glared at the incoming flames with sharp eyes. As he did so, the burning red flames somehow began to change colour into a light black colour. And then,

Fwishhhhh.....

Amazingly, the flames had turned into countless granules and dispersed. Not a single bit of heat could be felt.

(What is this.....? Sand? No.....ash?) (Hihiro)

As Hihiro thought, they were ashes. The flames instantly turned into ash, and dispersed over the ground.

"Hime, are you okay?" (Aquinas)

"Yeah, as expected of Aquinas!" (Eveam)

After Aquinas confirmed her safety, he once again turned to stare at Leowald. In the middle of a large crater, Leowald scowled at Aquinas provokingly.

The ones who were saved when the flames turned into ashes also appeared to include Rudolf's side, as the soldiers and Cabinet Minister Dennis let out large sighs at the relief of still being alive. However, Rudolf and Kiria alone had not moved a single inch from their former position. It was as though they had known that Aquinas would do something.

No, in Rudolf's case, he had Kiria near him and believed that she would do something if it came down to it. This was because he had, at the very least, entered into a contract with her.



“As I thought, something like this wouldn’t be able to leave a single wound. As expected of the 《Demon-eyed Commander》 ” (Leowald)

# KONJIKI NO WORD MASTER

---

## Chapter 119

### The Top's True Strength

---

Hmph, I hope you properly read my note on Chapter 118. This time around, give your thanks to Cross-nii-sama for beasting his way through both editing and proofreading of this chapter! \*clap clap clap\* All the stats and new titles were a pain.

---

#### Chapter 119: The Top's True Strength

While Leowald clicked his tongue, he for some reason, made a gleeful expression. It was as though he found fighting to be enjoyable. It may be possible that the stronger his opponent was, the higher these feelings of his would rise.

(This is why battle junkies are annoying to deal with) (Hiiro)

Hiiro gazed at Leowald with reproachful eyes as he decided to name him Lion.

(But these guys.....I guess I should to check them out, huh) (Hiiro)

As he thought that, he used the word [Pry]/ 『覗』 to view the others' 《Status》. If they possessed this amount of strength, Hiiro figured that their levels must also be quite high.

Aquinas Li Reysis Phoenix

Lv 243

HP: 11645/11645

MP: 8233/9574

EXP: 24950212

NEXT: 463080

ATK 1627 (1784)

DEF 1569 (1625)

AGL 1891 (1971)

HIT 2023 (2045)

INT 2361 (2390)

《Magic Attribute》 Dark

《Magic》 Dead Arrow (Darkness – Attack) | Hell Flame (Darkness – Attack) | Dark Revelation (Darkness – Movement) | Death-Out (Darkness – Attack) | Full Armed

(Darkness – Support) | Shadow Curtain (Darkness – Support/ – Defense) | Black Hole (Darkness – Attack) | Emperor Nova (Darkness – Attack)

《Titles》 Holder of the Demon Eye | Mourning One | Ultimate Demon-kin | Feathered One | Monster's Poison | Unique Genocider | Ripper | Superman | General of the Demon Eye | Cruel | Unsociable | Relentlessly Unparalleled | One who Seeks the Strong| Eternal Walker | Person of Darkness | Overly Determined Person | One who Transcends | The Strongest | Magus Emperor

Hiiro thought that this guy had an outrageous 《Status》 . Not only was his level high, the titles he possessed, out of all the statuses Hiiro had seen, seemed to be the most brutal.

(In particular 《The Strongest》 .....although the 《Magus Emperor》 title also bothers me, 《The Strongest》 .....it's so simple that it's actually scary)

As Hiiro thought thus, he looked at Aquinas. Simply based on his appearance, Hiiro was able to see that his titles were no lie.

(Not only that, but for his level to be even higher than I, who has been focussing on raising my level during this half-year period.....)

Hiiro Okamura

Lv 221

HP: 8387/8387

MP: 11370/15500

EXP: 16278322

NEXT: 337766

ATK 1344 (1444)

DEF 1105 (1120)

AGL 1617 (1667)

HIT 916 (966)

INT 1395 (1405)

《Magic Attribute》 None

《Magic》 Word Magic (Single Word (Unlocked) | Air Writing (Unlocked) | Parallel Writing (Unlocked) | Two Word Chain (Unlocked) | Simultaneous Invocation (Unlocked) | Invocation Management (Unlocked) | Three Word Chain (Unlocked) | Remote Operation (Unlocked) | Range Designation (Unlocked) | Automatic Writing (Unlocked) | Four Word Chain (Unlocked))

《Titles》 Innocent Bystander | World Traveller | Word Master | Awakened One | Ripper | The One who Imagines | Unique Genocider | Gourmet Bastard | One who Follows His Own Path | Friend of the Faeries | Mikazuki's Owner | The Natural Enemy of Monsters | Wanderer | Flash Samurai | Sage | The God that Brings Down Little Girls | One Who is Liked by Magic | Easily Dragged in | Swindler | Hero of Children | Insensitive Meister | Reading Maniac | Eating Tyrant | Prince of Misunderstanding | Excellent Diver | Teleporter | Supreme Demon | Nikki's Mentor | Overly Determined Person | One who Transcends

Compared to his own 《Status》, it was apparent that the differences in racial disposition appeared through combat capabilities, or so Hiiro had thought. Not only that, but Aquinas was most likely exceptionally strong even amongst the 『Evila』. Amongst everyone that Hiiro had met up until now, he was the holder of the greatest 《Status》.

(Well, even amongst humans there are bound to be those who have such natural talent. Even amongst the 『Evila』 with their excellent battle capabilities, he's likely one of the ones most blessed with talent)

If that were not the case, he wouldn't have been able to raise his level up so high. Even if he did, it would be hard to believe that his 《Status》 would be this well-endowed if he didn't possess such aptitude. Although Hiiro was also blessed with talent in terms of magic power and agility, as Aquinas was basically blessed in almost all aspects, it would make one so amazed as to constantly question whether or not he was truly a genius.

(.....hm? But I've seen his name somewhere.....is it just my imagination?) (Hiiro)

He felt that he had seen his name somewhere before. However, as he couldn't remember where, he simply ignored it.

Aquinas was not the only amazing one. Eveam, Marione, Shublarz, not to mention their enemy Leowald as well. Although, they couldn't compare to Aquinas, the 《Status》 they held could not be achieved by any normal person. In particular, Judom, who Hiiro had thought was a mere human, was amazing.

(Maou 102, Moustache Baron 167, Deka-Chichi woman 128, Lion 199, and also.....) (Hiiro)

Looking as Judom's 《Status》, he raised his voice in admiration.

Judom Lankars

Lv 210

HP: 9043/9478

MP: 6666/7100

EXP: 13719035

NEXT: 282577

ATK 1813 (1940)

DEF 1582 (1660)

AGL 1279 (1320)

HIT 1536 (1581)

INT 1027 (1041)

《Magic Attribute》 Fire | Wind | Lightning

《Magic》 Fireball (Fire – Attack) | Flame Rocket (Fire – Attack) | Aura Time (Fire) | Wind Cutter (Wind – Attack) | Cyclone (Wind – Attack) | Aura Time (Wind) | Thundershock (Lightning – Attack) | Prism Break (Lightning – Attack) | Aura Time (Lightning)

《Titles》 One who Trains | Strong Arms | King's Close Friend | One who Destroys | Feminist | Alcoholic | Considerate Comrade | One who is Popular | Reliable Person | Attractive Middle-Aged Man | Killer of the Unique | Monster Slayer | Wanderer | Aspiration of Adventurers | Huge Man | Senior of Life | King Dandy | Guild Master | Superman | Overly Determined Person | One Who Possesses the Caliber of a King | Impact King | One who Transcends

(It's like he has the physical capabilities of a beastman. This Muscle Man is also a blessed existence)

In truth, the one most blessed was Hihiro with his 《Word Magic》. However, disregarding his own abilities, he at the very least felt a hint of jealousy towards them. Even if he was given better parameters compared to normal humans due to being a World Traveller, compared to beastmen, there was bound to be a difference in abilities after all.

Even though his sole physical ability capable of competing with them was his speed alone, Hihiro convinced himself that he could feel proud of that one thing.

At that point, he remembered that there was one individual present who had piqued his curiosity. Hihiro immediately shifted his gaze towards that person.

Val Kiria #03

Lv 200

HP: 15000/15000

MP: 0/0

EXP: 0

NEXT: 0

ATK 2200 ()

DEF 2200 ()

AGL 2200 ()

HIT 2200 ()

INT 300 ()

《Magic Attribute》

《Magic》

《Titles》 One who was Created

He didn't know exactly what he should start retorting about. Her parameters, her magic, and her title. They were all so uniform that he couldn't comprehend any of it.

(What is she.....) (Hiiro)

Upon noticing Hiiro's gaze fall upon her, Kiria turned and exchanged stares with him. Hiiro was unable to detect anything resembling the will of a living being behind those eyes. However, if he were to believe that which he saw with his own eyes, amongst everyone here, her physical capabilities were the best. If they were to purely fight without magic, one could predict that nobody would be able to win against her.

As the two of their gazes met each other, their eyes remained unmoving as it seemed to have deteriorated into a match of who would first avert their eyes as they stayed still.

"What's wrong, Hiiro?" (Eveam)

The voice belonged to Eveam. However, as he unintentionally ended up reacting to it, Hiiro ended up averting his eyes first. As he thought 'damn it', he once again looked at her face-

".....Fu" (Kiria)

As she slightly raised her head, Kiria narrowed her eyes and looked down, displaying a face that seemed to be full of superiority as she released a small breath.

"Guh.....that Noppera\* woman....." (Hiiro)

It seems that internally, Hiiro decided to nickname the expressionless Kiria as Noppera woman.

“Hi-Hihiro?” (Eveam)

“Yeah?” (Hihiro)

Of course, having not known what was going on, Eveam was not at fault. However, to Hihiro, it was because of her calling out to him that he had lost the match, thus, she ended up taking the full brunt of his anger.

“Uu.....di-did I do something?” (Eveam)

As he saw her ask thus anxiously, Hihiro let out a shallow sigh. Following this, he slightly shook his head, saying-

“No, it’s nothing. More importantly, what are you going to do about this situation? I want to quickly head back, but?” (Hihiro)

“I also want to head back. Ah, now that I think of it, Hihiro came here from 【Xaos】 right? How is 【Xaos】 ? Ah, no. In the first place, how did you get here?” (Eveam)

While thinking that the way she rapidly fired off questions in quick succession was annoying, it was true the conversation couldn’t proceed without explaining that. However, in this situation, he didn’t have the time to leisurely explain everything.

“In any case, we’ll talk once everything settles down. Oi Maou, we’re heading back already.” (Hihiro)

“Eh? Ah, no like I said, how will we head back? In this situation? Are you going to repel those people, Hihiro?” (Eveam)

As she asked, she pointed her finger at Leowald, who was drenched in bloodlust.

“Haah? Who would do such a troublesome thing? I was only requested with defending the country, you know. Anything other than that would be extra work. I don’t wanna.” (Hihiro)

“Th-then how will we go back from here?” (Eveam)

“Before that, it’s fine for only you to go back, right?” (Hihiro)

“Eh? Hah? N-no no, we have to go back with everyone!” (Eveam)

After hearing her response made with a face as though it were natural, Hihiro felt like he would get a headache. A person that made this kind of face would no longer listen to him no matter what he said. They were unpersuadable. If he were to only bring her back alone, she would likely soon after come back here on her own. That would just be pointless.

As Hihiro dropped his shoulders as though he had resigned himself, he heaved a large sigh and looked into her eyes.

“Wh-what?” (Eveam)

Eveam was startled at suddenly being stared at eye-to-eye.

“.....do you have any last words?” (Hiiro)

“Hah?” (Eveam)

“We’re going to be returning from here, so I’m asking you whether or not you have any last things to say to those guys” (Hiiro)

He pointed towards Rudolf as he said this.

“Eh.....no, like I said, what are you say-” (Eveam)

“Argh, geez, how annoying!” (Hiiro)

Hiiro irritatingly began to move his fingers. At that moment, Eveam felt an enormous amount of magic power. It was the same feeling she had when Hiiro used magic the first time she met him.

Hiiro activated the words he had written.

[Send home]/ 『送還』 and [Three people]/ 『三人』 .

Suddenly, without a single sound, Aquinas, Marione, and Shublarz disappeared in front of their eyes. Everyone opened their mouths in a shocked manner.

“See, I’ve already sent them back to the country” (Hiiro)

“Eh.....hah? N-no way.....” (Eveam)

\*Author’s Note: Please find the differences in the titles. Many of them have evolved. Please find the ones that have changed and look at how they changed.



## Chapter 120

### The Protagonist That Relieves His Stress

---

Truthfully, Eveam could not completely believe what Hihiro had said. However, she was aware that he definitely had something to do with their disappearance. In addition, she, at the very least could not feel their magic power nearby, thus making the credibility of Hihiro's words rise exponentially.

"Hi-Hihiro.....did you really.....?" (Eveam)

As she still couldn't fully believe it, her eyes opened wide as she asked him this. However, Hihiro scowled at her, almost as if he was expressing that he had reached the limits of his patience.

"This is the last time I'll say it. If you don't have anything to say, I'm gonna send you back, no questions asked." (Hihiro)

"Ah, wa-wait a minute! Kiria! Come with....." (Eveam)

Eveam wanted to tell Kiria to return home with her, however, she shivered upon seeing her inhuman eyes. At the same time, the terror she felt upon realizing that the Kiria she knew no longer existed floated into her mind.

(Then just what in the world was the time we've spent together up until now.....Kiria)

Despite Eveam's thoughts, Kiria had already started to move. With tremendous velocity, she closed in on Eveam, and similar to before, attempted to pierce through her chest. However,

Bashiiiiiii!

The first one to be astonished was Kiria. Kiria flew back as though repelled by something.

"Sorry, but I can't let you kill this guy" (Hihiro)

Hihiro spoke thus as the word [Safeguard]/ 『防衛』 shined on the back of his hand. Although this was a previously installed word, to those who were unaware of that, they once again misunderstood that he had used Light magic upon seeing the sparkling wall of light.

"It defended against my attack? Just what in the world is that magic?" (Kiria)

Kiria indifferently spouted out her words.

“I don’t have any obligation to answer, do I? Do your utmost to worry about what exactly occurred.” (Hiiro)

It seemed that after averting his eyes in the exchange earlier, he held a small grudge over having felt her taking a point off of him. Eveam gazed at the protective wall with amazement, yet, after realizing that she would be safe there, returned her expression to normal as she sharply looked at Kiria.

“Kiria.....I still don’t fully understand it, but I will surpass myself as the Maou! And then one day, I’ll open your eyes!” (Eveam)

“.....haa, I’m already awake though?” (Kiria)

Eveam’s words were made out to be pushing goodwill onto Kiria. As Eveam ground her teeth in frustration, she turned and sharply glanced at Rudolf.

“King of Victorias” (Eveam)

As to be expected of a king, even though many unforeseen incidents had occurred, Rudolf maintained his dignity and looked back at her silently.

“Allow me to say one thing. I.....” (Eveam)

“.....” (Rudolf)

“I won’t give up! Because-” (Eveam)

Pishun!

In an instant, her figure disappeared. Behind that was a highly irritated Hiiro.

“You talk too long” (Hiiro)

After he had simply lowered the curtains on Eveam’s stage, Hiiro-

“Ah, now that I think of it, are you fine?” (Hiiro)

-called out to Judom. Although he was a human, after seeing him cover for Eveam, Hiiro determined that he was an ally.

This was the real reason why he had left Eveam here without sending her flying off. However, since she was talking for so long, he got irritated and ended up sending her off. That was why he had no choice but to ask the person in question whether or not he would go to the 【Demon Country】 with him. It was just because he happened to be going there already, so whatever was fine.

“No, according to the conversation, you’re returning to the Demon World right? I have business that I need do over here, so I’m fine” (Judom)

“I see, then I’ll leave you here.” (Hiiro)

“Ah, wait a sec. ....give this to Maou-chan for me.” (Judom)

As Judom said that, he gave a single sheet of paper over. It was a paper with Teckil's words written on it. Hiiro silently received it and put it into his breast pocket.

"Naa oi, what's your name?" (Judom)

"If you want to know, you should ask that stupid king over there." (Hiiro)

"Ask Rudolf?" (Judom)

As Hiiro said that and looked at Rudolf, Rudolf simply frowned as if he were trying to express, "Just who is he?"

(Ah, I see, I look like one of the 『Imp race』 right now.) (Hiiro)

As he thought that, he was thinking of ignoring Judom and disappearing like that, but-

(Ah, now that I think of it, I had something to tell him) (Hiiro)

As he turned his body toward Rudolf,

"Hey King." (Hiiro)

".....?" (Rudolf)

"You used the heroes as sacrificial pieces right?" (Hiiro)

"....." (Rudolf)

"Well, I don't really care about that anyhow." (Hiiro)

Hiiro seemed to hear the surrounds retort *so it's okay??*

"At that time, when I was first summoned, I was still a novice, so until I got stronger I travelled while hiding myself." (Hiiro)

".....summoned, you say?" (Rudolf)

Rudolf's eyebrows twitched and rose. Seeing that, Hiiro's face loosened slightly.

"But now things are different. I've gained enough experience so that it's okay even if I'm exposed and I stand out." (Hiiro)

"Summoned.....that attitude.....could it be you are.....!?" (Rudolf)

Gradually, Rudolf's face began to warp in shock.

"Now I can say it. I'm thankful to you for summoning me to this 【Edea】" (Hiiro)

"....." (Rudolf)

"I probably won't ever see you again, so I figured I should at least give you my thanks" (Hiiro)

"You.....I see, you were the one summoned together with the Heroes." (Rudolf)

"That's right, the Innocent Bystander." (Hiiro)

The king's astonished face was so amusing that Hiiro chuckled. But then, Rudolf appeared to have thought of something as he shook his head in order to clear his thoughts.

"Hmph, don't say stupid things. You are an 『Evila』, are you not! The ones summoned at that time were.....ah!?" (Rudolf)

At that moment, Hiiro's face returned from an 『Imp』 back to normal. Of course, it returned to normal because he had used the word [Origin]/ 『元』.

"Did they have a face.....like this?" (Hiiro)

At that, everyone in the area was surprised. Teleportation and healing magic, as well as the wall of light. On top of that, transformation magic. Hiiro's magic was simply so mysterious that the scene involuntarily became silent, as though time had stopped.

"Ahh~ That was a little refreshing. Because of my idiot disciple's stupid antics, and that Maou's long talk, I was irritated. But now, I'm a little refreshed." (Hiiro)

It seems that he was enjoying everyone's bewilderedness in order to relieve all of his stress. Yet, the Hiiro from half a year ago would undoubtedly not have done something like this.

(Hm~ Could this be due to the influence of Aka-Loli.....?)

That's right, deriving enjoyment out of making fun of others was something that his travelling companion, Liliyn, had practically patented. However, after spending a long time with her, Hiiro felt that he had been slightly influenced by her.

(No, I should restrain myself a bit.....)

As he didn't want to become like Liliyn, he reflected upon his actions. On the other hand, as he felt strangely gratified and his mood lightened, he felt that it was good that he did it. Hiiro once more used the word [Change] / 『化』 to return to his 『Imp Race』 form.

"Now then, I guess I'll be going now." (Hiiro)

"Wait, you youngster!" (???)

"Ahh?" (Hiiro)

The one who had jumped high into the air before Hiiro had realized it, was Leowald. He was gathering power into both fists. It was the same appearance he took when using the technique he had released earlier.

"Where did you send the Maou!" (Leowald)

".....find her yourself." (Hiiro)

As Hiiro simply spoke thus, he quickly faced downwards.

“Wha! Then I’ll just ask that body of yourrrsssss! Take this! 《Maximum Blaze Fang Attack》!” (Leowald)

Similar to before, a bright red fang with a tremendous amount of destructive force came crashing down. It collided with the protective wall Hiiro created.

Boooooooooooooooooooooom!

Screeeeeeeeeeech!

The sound of impact had a clash of magic power against magic power, followed by the roar of their attacks colliding against each other violently.

“.....hou, as expected of the Beast King” (Hiiro)

Having confirmed the title ‘Beast King’ in his 《Status》 earlier, Hiiro understood that this was the king of the 【Beast Kingdom: Passion】. He had also heard through rumors that the strength of this king was overwhelming.

After feeling that the wall he created might lose to Leowald’s power, Hiiro let out a voice of admiration towards Leowald’s physical strength.

“But it’s too bad.” (Hiiro)

Bashiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiin!

“Guhaaaaaaaaaa!?” (Leowald)

Just as he thought the wall let out a dazzling light, Leowald felt the area of the wall he directed his power at return something back towards him.

[Reflection]/ 『反射』

It was the effect of a word that Hiiro had newly written. That word was capable of, just once, repelling anything. It was a word with exceedingly cheat-like effects.

Like that, Leowald was sent flying and rolled about on the ground. To him, Hiiro said just one thing,

“This just shows that our levels are different. Train some more, Beast King. See ya” (Hiiro)

Pishun!

This time, Hiiro disappeared from the scene.

“N-no way.....for father’s 《Binding》 to be so easily.....” (Leglos)

Leowald's first prince, Leglos, was surprised at the mysterious boy who had so simply reflected the attack of his father, who was far stronger than himself. Naturally, he thought that his father would soon become consumed with rage and rampage about, and swallowed nervously as he gazed at Leowald.

However, his expectations were completely betrayed.

"Gahahhahahaahahahaaha!" (Leowald)

Leowald began laughing as if he was enjoying himself.

"Fa-father.....?" (Leglos)

Seeing Leowald's appearance, he involuntarily went speechless and stiffened. Utterly ignorant of his son's thoughts, Leowald slapped his knee multiple times.

"Iya~ He really got me there! What's with that youngster! To take me for a fool like that, what a pleasant youngster! Gahahahaha!" (Leowald)

Worried that he had hit his head or something, Leglos approached, but-

"Oi, did you see that Leglos? That Red-robed youngster." (Leowald)

"Eh, ah, yes. Mo-more importantly, are you alright, father?" (Leglos)

"Of course! At this level, I was surprised, but didn't receive any damage! Iya, but what an interesting youngster! I, by all means, would love to face him with my full power next time! Gahahahaha!" (Leowald)

As Leglos watched his father laugh heartily, he inclined his head in indignation as he remembered something.

"The Maou got away, but there was an interesting encounter! Right now, let's be glad about that! And also, the Maou should have returned to the Demon world! Let's head there immediately Leglos!" (Leowald)

"Ye-yes!" (Leglos)

"Gahaha! I hope that youngster is there as well! Interesting! Truly interesting!" (Leowald)

## Chapter 121 The Transformed King

---

The 『Gabranth』 laughed heartily as they withdrew their troops and left. Witnessing this, Kiria looked towards Rudolph and asked,

Kiria: 「Is it fine to let them leave? Isn't he the king of an allied country?」

Rudolf: 「Hmph. Just in name. Besides, even if I said anything to him now, he wouldn't care enough to listen」

After taking a quick glance towards the Gabranth, Rudolf looked towards Kiria.

Rudolf: 「On another note, there have been far too many irregularities」

Kiria: 「Indeed, I was surprised by Judom Lankars' actions. It would seem that greater precaution is necessary. There are a lot of things that I need to amend now, thanks to him」

‘Especially that red robed boy’, she thought.

Rudolf: 「...What about the scenario?」

Kiria: 「There is no need to worry. We failed to carry out our primary objective of assassinating the Demon Lord, but...」

Judom: 「Oi, Rudolf」

Judom interrupted their conversation.

Rudolf: 「...So you were still here, Judom」

Judom: 「Just who is this girl? At first it seemed like she was the Demon Lord's aide, but it's amazing how she managed to fool Aquinas for so long」

To have kept Aquinas, who Hiroy had accepted as an extraordinary being, fooled for so long meant that Kiria was someone who exceeded even him. At least in espionage.

Kiria: 「That is natural. The one who is usually by her side is not me」

Judom: 「...What?」

Kiria: 「Rather, until we came here it was always another one of myself who was with her」

Kiria said something so ridiculous in such a straight manner that Judom almost thought she was joking.

Judom: 「W-What are you saying?」

Kiria: 「Right now Number 05 is probably with Master」

Judom: 「Zero-five? Now that I think about it, you did refer to yourself as something like that. Which means what? Besides you there are others that are like you?」

Kiria: 「That is correct. Besides me, there are a total of...」

?????: 「You're saying too much, Number 03」

Everyone suddenly looked towards the voice that was heard. Standing there was someone that looked exactly like Kiria.

Judom: (The same face... Is she the one? It's like she has no presence...)

Judom increased his vigilance towards this other Kiria who had come near them without him noticing.

?????: 「You are a battle specialized model. Your strength is extraordinary but you lack in strategy. One way to say it would be that you are frank. Or you could say that you are honest to a fault」

She walked until she stood by Kiria's side.

Kiria 03: 「Number 02, why are you here? What about Number 05?」

Kiria 02: 「She is with Master. As for why I came here, I suspected that because it was you that you might end up honestly leaking information to the enemy if you were asked. Just like I thought, you were about to give information to the enemy」

Kiria 03 glanced towards Judom.

Judom: (Tsk... I thought I could get some more information out of her, but an unexpected visitor just had to come)

Judom was sulking as he looked towards Number 02. Telling them apart by just appearance was practically impossible, but Number 03 had a more air-headed expression, whereas Number 02 looked far more intelligent.

Judom: 「I see, so you're the 'other one'. No, from the way she said it earlier, there seem to be more of you?」

Kiria 02: 「Despite looking like a mass of muscle it seems like you're capable of some intelligent thought. You are correct... is all I will say」

She had a pretty sharp tongue, but Number 03, on the other hand, just silently stood there.



Kiria 02: 「Now let's hurry back to where Master is, Number 03」

Kiria 03: 「I understand. Then...」

Number 03 nodded and turned to face Rudolf. He met her gaze and tilted his head.

Rudolf: 「...Hm? What is it?」

Kiria 03: 「As I had mentioned earlier, we failed to carry out our primary objective of assassinating the Demon Lord」

Rudolf: 「Y-Yes」

Kiria 03: 「However, that was only a small portion of our objective」

Rudolf: 「...?」

Rudolf, not understanding what she was trying to say, merely blinked.

Kiria 03: 「Also」

Number 03 took something out of her breast pocket. While holding onto it, she stuck her arm out and...

\*bushuuuuuu\*<sup>1</sup>

Rudolf: 「Gah!?!」

Judom: 「Rudolf!?!」

...pierced Rudolf's chest. She quickly withdrew her hand and said,

Kiria 03: 「This was our other objective」

Number 03 calmly shook the blood off her hands.

Kiria 02: 「Did you put it in?」

Number 02 asked.

Kiria 03: 「Without a doubt」

Number 03 responded in a robotic manner.

Judom: 「What the hell did you guys do!?!」

Judom, the soldiers, and Cabinet Minister Dennis all ran towards Rudolf, who was laying on the ground clutching his chest. The Kirias back away a little.

Suddenly, Rudolf's body started to gradually expand. His skin also started to change into a dark reddish color.

Judom: 「R-Rudolf?!」

Judom said with a blank face as he witnessed this change.

Rudolf: 「Guh... Gah... Gigigi...!？」

\*bushu!\*<sup>2</sup>

A large, red horn, about 50cm in length, suddenly sprouted from Rudolf's chest.

His build had also changed, about five, six times greater than before. He easily surpassed five meters in height. He used to look like an average middle-aged man who lazed around all day, but now his appearance was closer to that of a troll. His face became extremely ugly, so much so that one would think he possessed not even a shred of reason.

\*thump thump thump\*

The red horn was pounding like a heart.

Rudolf: 「Haa haa haa haa... Ahm... hungree...」

His voice was so low that it was impossible to believe he was Rudolf. It sounded like someone who had gotten his throat crushed and was trying to speak with all his might.

Dennis and the soldiers stepped back as they screamed, witnessing their king's change. Rudolf, as if trying to suppress the pain of the transformation, stood without moving, his face contorted. His muscles were contracting and expanding at an abnormal rate, reforming him into a hulking shape.

Judom: 「You fuckers! What did you do to Rudolf!？」

Judom asked, full of rage. Even though Rudolf had done something stupid at the conference, he was still a close friend. He couldn't just stay silent as he got turned into some unknown monster. Number 02 answered coolly while looking at Rudolf.

Kiria 02: 「It seems like it was a success. Now he can proudly claim himself to be part of the 『Evila』」

Judom: 「...What do you mean?」

Kiria 02: 「...Let's see. It would be better if I announced this in a more public place, but you are the famous Judom Lankars. Very well, allow me to teach you a little. In a way that even your little brain can understand」

Judom listened intently to her, while also thinking that she touched a nerve every time she spoke.

Kiria 02: 「This stone... Do you know what it is?」

She took out a small, red stone the size of a ping-pong ball as she asked.

Kiria 02: 「The name of this stone is ‘stone imbued with demonic power’... 《Demon Stone》 . Ah, you just thought it was exactly as it says on the tin, didn’t you?」

Judom: 「...Shut up. Hurry up and explain」

He did think that, but it was somewhat embarrassing being inquired about it.

Kiria 02: 「Well, it is really an abbreviation. The proper name for this is called 《Demon Conquering Blood Enchantment Stone》 , but it is far too long so I call it 《Demon Stone》 for short」

Judom: 「What about the Demon Stone?」

Kiria 02: 「Number 03 pierced his chest earlier. At that time, Number 03 placed this 《Demon Stone》 inside of him」

Judom understood that what she had pulled out of her breast pocket at that time was a 《Demon Stone》 .

Kiria 02: 「This 《Demon Stone》 reacts to magical power. Those that have this placed inside of them... become like that」

Judom: 「...You bitch, aren’t your explanations too vague?」

Kiria 02: 「...Fuuu<sup>3</sup>, that is because it has become rather bothersome to explain」

Judom: 「Hurry up and explain!」

Kiria 02: 「It can’t be helped. This 《Demon Stone》 is produced using the flesh and blood of a certain 『Evila』 」

Judom: 「What...?」

Kiria 02: 「By a certain 『Evila』 , I am referring to the currently extinct 『Kupideus』 race」

Judom furrowed his brow as he had never heard of the name before. Number 02, as though sensing what Judom was feeling, said...

Kiria 02: 「It cannot be helped if you haven’t heard of them before. Long ago, a very long time ago, they were a minority group. However, they possessed a certain ability」

Judom: 「Ability?」

Kiria 02: 「Their ability was to literally turn what they ate into their flesh and blood」

Judom: 「Haa? That the same for everybody. Isn’t it obvious that what you eat becomes part of your flesh and blood?」

Kiria 02: 「...Haa<sup>4</sup>」

Judom, who only got a sigh in reply, felt like he was being treated like an idiot.

Kiria 02: 「Do you understand? I said 'literally」

Judom: 「L-Like I said」

Kiria 02: 「For example, you」

Judom: 「Ha?」

Kiria 02: 「Yes, if the individual known as Judom Lankars were to be eaten then your body, techniques, magic... It will be reborn into a being that can use all of it」

Judom: 「Wha!?!」

Kiria 02: 「Furthermore, let us say that the 『Kupiedeus』 who ate you also ate Number 03 here」

Kiria 03: 「...I don't want to be eaten by that thing」

Number 03 backed away a little.

Kiria 02: 「Number 03, this is just a hypothetical situation」

Kiria 03: 「...I understand」

Kiria 02: 「Good」

Judom thought 'What's with this conversation?', and Number 02 continued.

Kiria 02: 「If the 『Kupiedeus』 who ate and now looks exactly like you were to then eat Number 03, there is a chance that it would become a being that resembles Number 03. Of course, as a being that possesses both yours and Number 03's abilities」

Judom thought that if that were true then it was a monster beyond belief. It becomes stronger the more it eats. In other words, it's potential is unlimited. However, he had a thought. Why did a race that possessed such an incredible ability go extinct?

Kiria 02: 「Why did they... go extinct... is it?」

Judom: 「Urgh...」

A shiver crawled down his spine. He was being read like a book.

Kiria 02: 「The reason why they became extinct. The reason is simple. They were driven to extinction by something even stronger」

Judom: 「...Well, if you think about it normally then yeah, but does something that can fight against an outrageous race like that exist?」

Kiria 02: 「...The name is annoying so I don't want to say it」

Judom: 「Oi!」

Kiria 02: 「Anyway, they were driven to extinction by something like that」

It seemed like she would refuse to say the name no matter what so Judom put that matter aside and continued listening to her.

Kiria 02: 「However, before everything could be destroyed by that individual, they ended their own lives in a certain ruin」

Judom: 「You mean... Suicide?」

Kiria 02: 「Yes. They entered the eternal sleep known as death in a ruin deep underground, but our Master had discovered it」

Judom: 「...」

Kiria 02: 「Afterwards, he obtained a few of the mummified 『Kupiedeus』 . To his surprise there were some that still contained blood, though only a small amount. He asked a certain individual to cultivate it, and the end result is the 《Demon Stone》 . Haa, explaining is so tiring」

She gave off a feeling like she had just finished her job, but she failed to answer the most important question.

Judom: 「Wait a minute, so how come they become like that when you implant the Demon Stone inside them!」

Kiria 02: 「...How about you use your brain a little, 《Impact King》 ? Or shall I change your name to 《Buffoon King》 [5](#)?」

Judom: 「Don't make me punch you, bitch...」

Kiria 02: 「Seriously, it cannot be helped. Listen, this 《Demon Stone》 is like a living 『Kupiedeus』 . In other words the 《Demon Stone》 , which reacts to the magic inside the body it was placed in, will activate and start eating their cells and change shape. The end result is something like that, a fusion between the host body and the 『Kupiedeus』 . Oh, by the way, the transformation is accompanied by an extreme pain and your body becomes rigid for a while」

Judom thought, 'So that's why Rudolf isn't moving at all.'

Judom: 「On another note, isn't there almost no resemblance to Rudolf?」

Indeed, his appearance was beyond monstrous.

Kiria 02: 「Aah, that is because his existence was so weak」

Judom: 「Existence?」

Kiria 02: 「Well, life force, magic power, his will to live, things like that」

Judom: 「...」

Kiria 02: 「If the existence of what it ate was weak, its appearance will remain as the one which had the stronger existence. In the case of the king, he was weak, frail, meager, and of poor constitution, so the original 『Kupiedeus』 's existence was stronger and his appearance became closer to that of the 『Kupiedeus』 race. The fact that his

existence was weaker than this small stone is laughable. Well, there are various other reasons, but that is the general idea. Haa, I finally finished」

Judom: 「Not yet!」

Judom looked irritatingly at Number 02.

Kiria 02: 「What is it, Muscles?」

Judom: 「Don't call me Muscles! The most important thing! How do you turn Rudolf back to normal!?!」

Kiria 02: 「...You think he can be changed back?」

## Chapter 121

### Visitor

---

“Dammit, you damn bastards!” (Judom)

Judom screamed in Rudolph’s direction.

“Oy, Rudolph! Get yourself together!” (Judom)

The Rudolph’s body, that had been stiffened through the pain suddenly quivered.

“Haaaaaagaaaaaaah! Hu, ngry!”

His large body makes cricking sounds as he moves. He grabbed a soldiers near him in one hand, and...

...

What a fearful sight. He inserted the soldier head-first into his own mouth. The king’s stomach convulsed and shook a few times, but after a while it settled down. And seeing the scene, everyone’s face went pale.

“Not... not enuuuuuuuuuuuffff! More! Moooooaaar!”

He grabbed whoever he could lay his hands on, and made them offerings to his unending appetite.

“W-what are you doing, Rudolph!”

Judom’s scream never reached him. Seeing no other option, he tried to move to stop him, but 03 stood in his way.

“H-hii! M-m-m-m-m-my liege! I-i-i-i-it’s me! Dennis!”

Perhaps his legs had given out on him, but Dennis frantically tried to crawl backwards. But still, he entered Rudolph’s field of vision.

“Den... ni... s?”

“T-t-t-that’s right! I’m your loyal retainer! Dennis the Ministerrr!”

As if he had remembered something Rudolph smiled, but...

Bun!

Dennis desperately tried to shake himself out of the king’s strong arms. He hears ominous creaking sounds coming from around his body.

“Ga... bo... gi... obu...”

It was as if his body was being clenched in a vice, and his body cried out. Judom remained wary of 03 before his eyes, as he continued to call out for Rudolph to regain his sanity.

Nom!

The minister Dennis was shoved into Rudolph’s stomach. It was quite an undramatic end for him. In order to save the minister, a close-by army officer tried to pierce Rudolph with his sword, but it had absolutely no effect.

No, it only served to agitate the beast. Rudolph opened his large mouth, and suddenly, a laser-like attack shot out of it.

“W-what!?”

The sudden attack, coupled with its destructive power and incredible speed made it so that of the five people it was aimed at, four of them fell victim to it.

The one who got hit in the head had the impacted part of his body cleanly disappear, and the one who took it in the stomach got to experience his upper and lower halves separating from each other. Another one was completely annihilated, and the last one was only graze, but the injuries he received caused him the loss of function in his left arm.

With the severity of the situation, the other soldiers forgot their orders, and started running.

“Get out of the way!” (Judom)

Judom should have been desperately trying to stop Rudolph, but even now, Kiria 03 blocked his way. They lock fists, but without either side inflicting significant damage on the other, they’re at a stand-still.

“It may be fine already. 03, grab the Ugly Doll, and let’s go return to master.” (02)

02’s manner of speech made Judom furrow his brow.

“Ugly Doll?” (Judom)

“It’s that 《Hideous Puppet》 over there. Great naming sense, right?” (02)

“What? It makes me want to barf!” (Judom)

“This is why I can’t stand people with no taste.” (02)

But their treatment of Rudolph amazed him. It’s probable that this time, the one who proposed the plans of betrayal for the conference was Kiria. While Rudolph was foolish, he wasn’t stupid enough to trust an 『Evila』 so easily.



Even so, he trusted them, and tried to play his hand against the Demon King. In the end, Rudolph was but a pawn, no, a disposable piece. It's hard to think Rudolph would ever agree to a deal as risky as this.

What Judom was thinking came quite naturally to him. Even if an 『Evila』 came to the king, telling him they'd lend their help, and asking to take down the Demon King together, there's no way Rudolph would believe it. There isn't a single person who wouldn't see such a proposal as a trap.

But Rudolph accepted the contract. He had determined that there was enough merit in it, and enough safety for him to agree to it. Then what was that safety? It wasn't anything Judom could find out just by thinking.

—  
—  
—  
—  
—

About half a year ago, the 『Gabranth』 declared war on the 『Evila』, and tried to march to battle, but the Demon King Evila severed the only bridge linking the two continents. The war was put on hold, no, it came to a close, and after that, in order to prevent anything similar from happening again, the Demon King continued to write letters to the 『Humas』 asking to form an alliance.

But dubious of their true intentions, Rudolph, the Humas King, only put off answering to the letters. And then, one day, a single person appeared before him.

Just as always, he was discussing matters pertaining to the 『Evila』 with his Minister, Dennis. A maid opened the door, and entered the room. It seems she had come to serve tea.

As Dennis was getting thirsty, he proposed that it was a good time to take a break. But without bringing the tea to Rudolph, the maid closed the door, and stood blankly in front of it.

“... What's wrong? Just bring it over already.” (Rudolph)

The unskilled maid gave an unpleasant frown. But she suddenly raised her hung head, and when the other two saw her face, they both turned pale.

“Hello, can we talk for a bit?”

The girl who spoke words mechanically had the 『Evila』 characteristic dark skin. And the feature that clearly defined her race was the pointed ends her ears came to. The two were able to determine she was an 『Evila』 right away, and they were about to shout for help.

“I think it would be best if you didn’t do that.”

For some reason, the girl’s voice pierced their hearts. With their mouths hanging open, the two stiffened.

“Wha!? W-who are you supposed to be!?”

With a frantic look in his eyes, Dennis moved his mouth. And the girl politely bowed her head.

“It’s a pleasure to meet you. I go by the name of Kiria..., sir.”

“Kiria... you say?” (Rudolph)

“Y-your majesty?” (Dennis)

“Y-yes... Kiria should be the name of the Demon Lord’s aide.” (Rudolph)

“The very same Kiria.”

They never thought someone that important would show up here alone.

“... A-and what is her aide doing here? Did you come to assassinate me or something?” (Rudolph)

He managed to preserve his dignified bearing, but his voice was quivering, and simply speaking took all of his might.

“No, as I just stated earlier, I have merely come to talk.”

“Talk... you say?” (Rudolph)

Rudolph casts doubtful eyes on her.

“Yes. It’s a talk I think both of us will serve to gain from.”

“... So what is this about?”

His eyebrows twitch. If it was just talking, he decided he would hear her out.

“Would you be interested in... destroying the 『Evila』 ?”

“What...?”

For a moment, he was unable to understand what had been said. He met eyes with Dennis, and tilted his head before returning his gaze to Kiria.

“What do you mean? Destroy the 『Evila』 ? Are you not an 『Evila』 yourself?”

“Ah, perhaps I should rephrase that. I mean only the 『Evila』 that go against the

『Humas』 ... of course.”

“... Please elaborate.”

“Y-your majesty!? You plan to trust the words of someone as suspicious-looking as this?”

“No but I’ve determined there is merit in listening to what she has to say. There’s a need to see whether they plan on moving against us, or not.”

“B-but still...”

Dennis uneasily looks at Kiria, as Rudolph shakes his head.

“I’ll make a decision after I hear you out. You better listen to my position as well.”

“As expected of the King of Victorias, you sure are open minded.”

“Enough with your flattery. Say what it is you want, exactly.”

“Understood.”

Kiria took a deep breath, before she began to explain the reason she came there.

# KONJIKI NO WORD MASTER

---

## Chapter 123 Way to Betrayal

---

“I want to destroy the 『Evila』. Especially the people close to the Demon Lord. In other words, .....Revenge.” (Kiria)

“...What would you do that? In the first place, if you really hate the Demon Lord, why are you serving as her aide? Rather, you serve her as you plan to find a chance to kill her, yes?” (Rudolf)

“It is not such a simple story.” (Kiria)

“What do you mean?” (Rudolf)

“The people around the Demon Lord are the ones I hate the most. Although it is easy to kill the Demon Lord, I want to kill them after humiliating them to the extent that they would despair on their helplessness” (Kiria)

Rudolf and Dennis shuddered, Kiria’s eyes that were stained with freezing darkness bore into their very being

“I want to assassinate the Demon Lord on an even more compelling stage. In order to do that, your assistance is mandatory” (Kiria)

“I see, so that’s the reason for the conference?” (Rudolf)

“Yes, that indeed is the reason” (Kiria)

Rudolf nodded with a stern expression, but even though he felt intimidated by her dark emotions, he could not afford to believe to her so easily.

“Most likely, I will be one of the bodyguards accompanying her to the conference. However, if the Demon Lord is killed in their presence, they will lament their own worthlessness. And, after they experienced despair, I will torture them to death.”  
(Kiria)

The sound of Dennis gulping could be heard faintly. Power seeped through Rudolf’s fist instinctively. This person is really serious, Rudolph thought as he was anxious on this audacious plan.

“Why.... do you want revenge?” (Rudolf)

“Oh? Weren’t you deprived of your important one as well? Or, though you were deprived, do you not have any desire for revenge?” (Kiria)

“..... No, certainly..... the sacrifice I paid to destroy the Demon Lord of 『Evila』 was big. Such an alliance is just received with a sneer” (Rudolf)

“It might be so. I was also deprived of my important one. Therefore, I cannot forgive them. So please, will you not help us defeat 【Demon Capital: Xaos】?” (Kiria)

The two stared at each other. Time flew by with neither of them averting their gaze. And, when Rudolf broke his gaze, he spoke.

“Just now, Did you say us? Is there somebody else who knows of this plan?” (Rudolf)

“The other one is a person named Iraora, the guardian at the border” (Kiria)

“What di-....!” (Rudolf)

Those words was considerably attractive. 【Mütich Bridge】 is the sole link for crossing the border, the absolute defense line, the person guarding must be of top class. It would be very convenient if such a person is on the treacherous side,

“If that is the case, it is reliable, with this I can make my move in various moves. However” (Rudolf)

“.....-?” (Kiria)

“This is only credible if your story is true to the end. You don’t actually think that I will easily believe such a story without proper evidence, did you?” (Rudolf)

“Of course. I understand that trusting takes time. Therefore, send your most trusted intelligence unit to 【Xaos】 to ascertain my words. I will order Iraora to let them cross the border without hurting them” (Kiria)

“....Dennis” (Rudolf)

“Y-yes?” (Dennis)

“Let the third unit confirm the situation. Ah, wait, if the story is true, I think it is better to gather those whom we can trust this information with, I suppose? (Rudolf)

Rudolf placed a hand on his chin as he carried a worried face.

“...Yeah, Let us use the ad-man ” (Rudolf)

“ I see, he is a person in charge of the intelligence unit serving from the previous generation, if it’s that person he may be able to ascertain the truth. I shall comply at once” (Dennis)

.....

“I believe you said you were Kiria, for the time being I will carefully examine whether your story is true or not. And also....” (Rudolf)

Rudolf opened a drawer in the desk using a key, then a sheet of paper was taken out.

“This is....” (Kiria)

“I’m sure you know of it. This is a 《Contract Roll》 ” (Rudolf)

“Yes I do, signing in here will prevent us from betraying each other” (Kiria)

Then, Kiria as well took out a similar paper from her breast pocket.

“In fact, I thought that you would also feel relieved if we had one like this” (Kiria)

“I see. So, that was your intention from the beginning” (Rudolf)

“Yes, However, my side is at a disadvantage. If you were to betray us instead, the contract will be terminated and since there was no contract breach you will not bear any punishment. Therefore, I would like you to make a definite promise that you would not betray our side as well”

“...You do have a point” (Rudolf)

It's only natural for her to say such things. It's sheer stupidity to have a one-sided contract. By having 2 contracts both sides will benefit as they can restrain the other party a little.

“However, I will sign this paper only after the report from the investigation of the adman. “ (Rudolf)

“A wise judgement. I understand. Then in three months I will come again” (Kiria)

After she spoke those words, she went out through the door.

“My king, are you sure about the alliance with them?” (Dennis)

“I do not yet understand. This plan of theirs is ambiguous as it stands. First, I will



confirm the matter of the border and then investigate the 【Demon Capital】 ” (Rudolf)

Time flew fast and the day when the adman was to submit his report came. The information Rudolf received was truly pleasing to his ears. As a result, the story Kiria had told was proven not to be a lie.

Being able to cross the bridge easily, the intelligence unit lead by the adman was able to make a temporary base of operation near 【Xaos. Kiria had made all the necessary preparations in secret to secure a place for the group

Thus, they could easily gather information about 【Xaos】 in various ways. Hereby ascertaining the inside structure of 【Xaos】 that they did not knew of before and procure information on the established plan of assault.

And three months later, as she had promised, she showed up again.

“Do you believe me now?” (Kiria)

“The story you told us was really a fact” (Rudolf)

“Then...” (Kiria)

Kiria took out the 《Contract Roll》 from her breast pocket.

“Please sign here” (Kiria)

However, Rudolf frowns as he hesitates a little. Even after hearing everything, he still was not able to trust her completely.

“Please be at ease. The negotiation that I have proposed here, please read them carefully” (Kiria)

Rudolph opened his eyes wide when he looked over the paper and then stared at her.

The contents of the contract can be summarised as

One will not betray one another. Any action that contradicts both party's reasons should not be taken. Kiria only demands the destruction of 『Evila』 . The contract will last until 【Xaos】 is fully overwhelmed

There were no problems with the conditions stated because, in fact it was exactly the way Rudolf wanted. However, the following lines made him tilt his head.

When Kiria betrays, Death is immediately given

Usually, when one forsakes the 《Contract Roll》 , though life is cut down as stated in its general contents, there was no rule that robbed the life of the traitor. However, the condition Kiria had written was imminent death..

“T-This is....” (Rudolf)

“You may receive that as a proper evidence of our contract. These remaining years of my life.... I shall offer them to you” (Kiria)

Her eyes were not trembling, Rudolf and Dennis who were witnessing it were overawed. Without a doubt, they understood that her plan is something extraordinary.

“.....I understand. The letter you sent me did give me a detailed explanation of your plan. I was really surprised that even the 『Gabranth』 were also involved in this alliance. With this we can surely crush the 【Demon Capital】 .” (Rudolph)

“I will do anything for the sake of my revenge. King, I guess you are also boiling with anger, right? They are the cause of your daughter’s deaths” (Kiria)

“.....” (Rudolph)

“ I do not need that country any longer. I believe you are good enough to govern 『Evila』 . But, please have mercy on my companions” (Kiria)

“You naturally have that privilege. As for this side, we also do not want to kill our benefactors” (Rudolf)

“Those words from you are really assuring” (Kiria)

“From now on we are comrades” (Rudolf)

As Rudolf said so, he put his signature on the 《Contract Roll》. The paper began to cast a pale light, and then dispersed into dust which then flew into Rudolf and Kiria's chest

“Contract Established” (Kiria)

“Yes” (Rudolph)

“With that over, let us now concentrate on the finer details of our plan. For certainty..... so that our scenario can accomplished” (Kiria)

“Yes” (Rudolph)

“ I will now proceed to the conference place, 【Holy Oldine】 to obtain more information. Well then, see you again” (Kiria)

Kiria quietly exited from the room.

“With this, the 『Evilas』 will be in our grasp..... is what it means right?” (Dennis)

Minister Dennis chuckles joyfully.

“That's right, finally my wish will come true. My daughters can finally rest in peace” (Rudolf)

“However, My King, after suppressing 【Demon Capital】 , are Kiria and her companions to be really protected?” (Dennis)

“.....Fufufu, I wonder” (Rudolf)

Dennis who saw that face also laughs similarly. As expected, they intended to destroy even Kiria and her companions from the start. However, until the contractual coverage of suppressing 【Xaos】 remained, they could not be subjected to punishment.

(I do not know when she will try to backstab..that Kiria) (Rudolf)

When Rudolph thought about the events that were to unfold in the near future, he exhaled deeply, after all his long standing wish was finally coming into place. He was trembling in excitement as he never once thought that he would see the day when the dearest wish of 『Humas』 was granted would come.

Although, the heroes were Rudolf's trump card, for this scenario, only Kiria's proposal gained his favour. I shall use the heroes as sacrificial chess pieces in order to complete this scenario. Well, in the beginning, they were mere pawns I summoned to save us.

(I will also need to arrange a scenario that incorporates the extermination of the 『Gabranth』 as well. Although... those guys are like large slab of rocks, they are also quite fragile. If the Beast King dies, their collapse will be nothing of a problem) (Rudolph)

This world then will become only for the 『Humas』 . Even if the 『Pheoms』 exist, their existence can't change what happens in this world. With this there will no longer be any wars, a truly peaceful world can be built.

(Kiria..... I give my gratitude to you. I can grip peace with these priceless sacrifices you have given me) (Rudolf)

However, Rudolph did not notice, that Kiria had also anticipated those kind of thoughts. And he, rather, the 『Humas』 were still dancing in the palm of her hand.

# KONJIKI NO WORD MASTER

---

## Chapter 124

### Hiiro, Once Again To The Demon Country

---

Author Note: A nostalgic character has come back ww

Kiria: 「Well, even so, to think that he was such an easy to handle lord, one can say that it was fortunate, even if anticlimactic.」

As she saw the completely changed Rudolf, Kiria muttered to herself.

Kiria: (I guess he is not yet aware. This was certainly an act of betrayal. According to what had been written on the 《Contract Scroll》, Kiria, who had committed treachery, should have died. That was mandatory. However.....)

She glanced at No.03 who was beside her.

Kiria: (If only one of us were to die, then it simply becomes a matter of once again rebuilding us anew.)

Indeed. Certainly, the contracted Kiria had died this time due to committing the act of betrayal. However, to No.02 and the rest, one more 'self' had simply died. It simply did not concern them.

Kiria: (Foolish Lord.....your belief that Kiria was the prevalent reason for your defeat. However, it is unfortunate. We are but mere pieces.)

After No. 02 looked upon Rudolf emotionlessly, it sent its gaze towards No. 03.

Kiria: 「Now, let us go No. 03.」

Judom: 「Hold it! I don't know where you are planning on going, but do you really think I'll just let you simply leave!」

Naturally, Judom had no intention of letting Kiria, the ringleader behind the entire affair, escape.

Kiria: 「Even if you say this to me, as I wish to be spared from anymore irregularities...No. 03.」

No. 03: 「Yes?」

Kiria: 「I shall take Ugly Doll and go ahead first. Please return after you have appropriately served as an opponent.」

No. 03: 「I understand.」

Kiria: 「Ugly Doll! Stop your feasting!」

Rudolf: 「Uu.....gu?」

When Rudolf discarded the soldier's corpse with a \*poi\*, treating it like trash, No.02 footsteps unhesitatingly resounded as it moved to Rudolf's side.

Judom: 「Rudolf!」

Judom attempted to move in front of Rudolf in order to obstruct his walking path. However, before he could, No.03 stood in Judom's way.

No.03: 「I will not let you go.」

Kiria: 「I leave it to you, No.03.」

No.03: 「Understood.」

Judom: 「Hold it! Rudolf! You're still aware of what's happening, right!? Open your eyes! What do you plan to do with the country!？」

However, Rudolph did not react. As he place his hand directly onto No.02's shoulder, he simply walked away.

Judom: 「Damn it-!」

Judom began to survey the surroundings by only moving his eyes. A scene that appeared to be taken out of a picture of hell spread before him. He scowled as the smell of blood and burnt flesh pierced his nose. Although there were soldiers that were still alive, there was nobody who was left uninjured.

Judom left the soldier's treatment to the priests, thinking that he should try and stop Rudolf. However, as No.03 obstructed him, he clicked his tongue inwardly.

As they stared at each other warily, their gazes undiverted, No.03 approached Judom's chest at a tremendous speed.

Judom: 「Chii-!」

Similar to Eveam and Rudolf, she tried to pierce Judom with a spear hand but-

Judom: 「Don't underestimate me-!」

\*Paaaaaaan-!\*([1](#))

Suddenly, Judom vigorously brought his hands together. At that moment, with Judom as the epicenter, a blast of wind raged violently.



No.03: 「Ku.....-!？」

No.03, who was heading straight for Judom, had their body blown away by the raging wind blast. Following this, she collided with the building.

Judom: 「That was the 《Hand Clap Focal Point》. Remember it!」

As expected of a man that had been recognized by Aquinas. Without having to receive No.03's attack which appeared to have been aimed for the instant that the opponent was unguarded, Judom returned it with his own counterattack. Such was expected from him, as he was the one who had been entrusted with the human's guild.

Judom: 「Sorry, but I'm gonna catch you and force you to spit out what you know.」

Judom turned towards the building that No.03 was launched towards. However, Judom widened his eyes as he took in the scene before him.

Besides the destroyed remains of the rubble, there was nothing there. Apparently, she purposefully allowed herself to be blown away in order to use the opportunity created to run away.

Judom: 「Chi-.....to think that I would make such a mistake.」

As he did not think she would attempt to retreat this quickly, Judom wanted to beat himself upon realising his naivety.

Judom: 「.....I guess it can't be helped. For now, I don't have much choice but to return back to 【Victorias】 , huh. After all, it wouldn't be good if I didn't collect the information about them.」

As he murmured, his gaze flew in the opposite direction of the country.

Judom: (Although it's turned into the worst possible outcome, I guess I have to do what needs to be done, huh.)

Okamura Hihiro, who had just returned to the 【Evila Capital: Xaos】 , was, for some reason, being fiercely glared at by a certain individual.

Said individual allowed her blazing, crimson hair to flutter as she confronted Hihiro with narrowed eyes and folded arms.

Liliyn: 「What's the meaning of this?」

Hihiro: 「What, it's just Aka-Loli<sup>(2)</sup>. So you came back, huh.」

Indeed, the one before Hihiro's very eyes was Aka-Loli, Liliyn Li Reysis Redrose. The reason for why she was glaring at Hihiro with an expression of wrath was unknown. At that moment-

\*Dadadadadadadadada!\*<sup>(3)</sup>

???: 「Goshujiiiiiiiiin<sup>(4)</sup>!」

\*Dogosu-!\*<sup>(5)</sup>

Hiiro: 「Gufu-!」

As something had suddenly assaulted his belly, Hiiro, who was caught off guard, flew backwards in such a state.

???: 「Goshujin Goshujin Goshujin Goshujin Goshujin Goshujin Goshujin Goshujin Goshujiiiiin!」

That someone who had jumped onto Hiiro began to muzzle it's head in Hiiro's chest. Following this, as Hiiro thought that they were going to stop, they stuck their tongue out with a \*pero-\*(6).

Hiiro: 「O-oi.....wait a minute.....」

\*Pero pero pero pero pero pero pero pero pero pero!

It was not strange for the surroundings to be in an uproar. The man in the red robe that had suddenly appeared was currently pinned down and having his face licked by another person that had also suddenly appeared.

Hiiro: 「Eei-!(7) So annoying! Get away from me, Yodare-Tori!(8)」

As Hiiro grabbed the person by the neck, he stood up and threw them away with a \*poi-\*.

???: 「Kui-!(9) Ittaaaaai-!(10) Goshujin is so mean!」

Hiiro: 「Shut up! I'm always telling you not to lick my face, aren't I!？」

As Hiiro used his sleeve to wipe his gooey face, drenched by drool, his cheeks twitched.

???: 「Uu~ but, but, it's been so long da mo~n<sup>(11)</sup>.....」

The individual, no, from appearances, she was completely an elementary schoolgirl. As she had unruly, yellow hair that was cut short, the hair around her ears appeared to grow in a shape that resembled wings.

From her facial expression, one could clearly understand that the individual had a lively character as her large, friendly eyes, adorable nose and cute mouth were perched neatly onto her face. In addition, this child was also wearing clothes similar to Nikki, a 『文』 <sup>(12)</sup> character having been engraved on the back.

Furthermore, the child's charm point was a faint, crescent-shaped birthmark that floated on its forehead.

Nikki: 「Aa-! Mikazuki, that's bad desu zo<sup>(13)</sup>! The only one who is allowed to hug Shishou<sup>(14)</sup> is me after all!」

Mikazuki: 「You're wrong da mon! The only one allow to hug Goshujin is Mikazuki da mon!」

The two children began to quarrel.

Nikki: 「Muu<sup>(15)</sup>.....Shishou is mine desu zo!」

Mikazuki: 「Kuu<sup>(15)</sup>.....Goshujin is Mikazuki's da mon!」

As the two adamantly glared at each other, their mouths pointed in annoyance-

\*Poka-!\* \*Poka-!\*(<sup>16</sup>)

Nikki: 「Nowa-!?(17)」

Mikazuki: 「Nyu-!?(17)」

A fist fell above both of their heads.

Hiiro: 「Alright already. You guys just shut up.」

As Hiiro glared at the two with a displeased expression,

Nikki | Mikazuki: 「 「.....yes.」 」

The two instantly became silent.

Liliyn: 「Oi Hiiro. Hurry up and answer my question.」

Liliyn, as if losing her patience, threw out words infused with anger.

Hiiro: 「Question, you say?」

Liliyn: 「Yes, what's with this situation? Nikki seems to have known about it but why didn't I hear about this?」

Hiiro: 「Because I didn't tell you.」

Liliyn: 「Like I said, I'm asking you why you didn't tell me!」

Hiiro: 「.....haa. Look here, you came here, saying that 'you wanted to come to this country', right? And you also said that you weren't very fond of this country and that you were going to see someone who lived near the country, right?」

Liliyn: 「Aa(18).」

Hiiro: 「As I had also come here without any prior knowledge, I was dumped here after being told to ‘stay at this inn and wait for a bit’.]

Liliyn: 「.....」

Hiiro: 「The fact that war might break out was something that I heard just recently. Therefore, there was no way to tell you as you were absent at that time.」

Liliyn: 「Eei, don’t screw with me! If you used your 《Word Magic》, you’d be able to tell me in a blink of an eye, you bastard!」

As she protested, Liliyn frowned.

Hiiro: 「Don’t screw with me. Why do I have to take the trouble of reporting every single piece of info I get to you?」

Liliyn: 「That much is obvious! It’s because you belong to me!」

As she insisted thus while puffing out her small chest, Hiiro simply glared at her with reproachful eyes.

Hiiro: 「I only belong to me. I have no intention of being owned by anyone else.」

Liliyn: 「-tch. In the past half year, you’re just as stubborn as always.」

Hiiro: 「I don’t want to hear that from you.」

Liliyn: 「Fun<sup>(19)</sup>, oh well. By the way, although I only observed some of it on my way here, the war between races appears to be in full-swing, huh.」

Upon hearing those words, Hiiro seemed to have recalled something as he looked at Nikki’s face.

Hiiro: 「Oi, Baka-Deshi<sup>(20)</sup>. The Maou<sup>(21)</sup> and co. came here, right?」

Nikki: 「Ah, hai desu zo!<sup>(22)</sup> As I thought that something had suddenly appeared, they began to shout something incomprehensible. What exactly was that?」

It was most likely that since she was sent back here while in the middle of her speech, Nikki would have heard her declaration.

Nikki: 「But as soon as she realised that there was no one in the direction of where she was pointing, her face became incredibly red as she said things like Shishou is a Baka<sup>(23)</sup> or that Shishou was unbelievable...」

Her embarrassment at that time was something that Hiiro could not possibly comprehend.

Hiiro: 「That doesn't matter. Where are they?」

Nikki: 「They said that they were going to perform sub-ju-ga-tion<sup>(24)</sup> and left somewhere desu zo.」

Apparently, the Maou's party, after appearing here, headed out to repel the Gabranth insurgents for the sake of quelling the conflict.

Nikki: 「Ah, also, regarding those who are called the Heroes<sup>(25)</sup>.-」

Hiiro: 「Nn? Heroes? .....aa, come to think of it, they were here, huh.」

Although he had completely forgotten about them, Hiiro began to search the surroundings for the figures of the heroes. However, he did not find them.

Hiiro: 「.....they're not here, huh.」

Nikki: 「You see, after Shishou flew to the other side, that Ookami-dono(26) began to talk with the heroes. After that, due to some strange people suddenly attacking, they were sent flying somewhere.」

Hiiro: 「They were sent flying?」

The Ookami was obviously referring to Ornoth. However, as Nikki had also not remembered his name, they referred to him by his only distinguishing feature, calling him Ookami.

Although Nikki's description was vague and difficult to understand, as long as they were not here, Hiiro did not particularly care.

Hiiro: 「They're really like the frog at the bottom of the well.....aren't they? It's probable that they were about to run away after they were assaulted by the Ookami's killing intent. It seems that they haven't yet become accustomed to being the King's discarded pawns. Honestly, just what have those guys been doing since they came here?」

Although he could somewhat guess, as he had determined that thinking about those that he was no longer interested in was unproductive, he began to search for the Demon Lord for now as it was necessary for Hiiro to meet her.

「Seek」 | 『探索』 (27)

As Hiiro activated those words, a pale arrow appeared before him, pointing towards the direction that Hiiro should advance in.

Liliyn: 「Oi, Hiiro. You can't possibly be thinking of participating in the war, right?」

Hiiro turned towards Liliyn's unchanged disgruntled expression.



Hiiro: 「That's what I'm thinking.」

Liliyn: 「Ha? You bastard. Don't tell me you've awoken to altruism and are gonna try and stop this war, huh?」

As she spoke with considerable sarcasm, Liliyn shrugged her shoulders.

Hiiro: 「If you want to know about the reason for my participation then ask that Baka Deshi. Also, that Jii-san<sup>(28)</sup> and Doji-Maid<sup>(29)</sup> are probably on there way here, right?」

Liliyn: 「Nn? .....aa.」

Hiiro: 「Then once they get here, give them an explanation.」

While he spoke, Liliyn stared carefully at Hiiro's face.

Liliyn: 「.....do you want me to lend a hand?」

While he thought that Liliyn's behaviour had changed in the last half year, Hiiro gave a wry smile as he waved his hand.

Hiiro: 「No, since I'll finish it up quickly, all you have to do is just wait.」

As he said thus, Hiiro kicked off the ground and left.

While they saw Hiiro leave, Mikazuki grew depressed, perhaps due to the fact that she was sad at the thought of being separated from Hiiro. However, as she noticed Nikki next to her, wearing a thoughtful expression, she began to ask.

Mikazuki: 「What's wrong, Nikki?」

Nikki: 「Nn~ I feel like there was something important that I absolutely had to tell Shishou, but.....」

Mikazuki: 「Is that so?」

Nikki: 「Uu~n」

Mikazuki: 「If you can't remember it then it can't be anything important, no?」

Nikki: 「Ah, you must be right!」

Mikazuki: 「That has to be it!」

Nikki: 「Un un![\(30\)](#)」

Mikazuki: 「Ahaha!」

Upon looking at the duo who were laughing together, Liliyn exasperated.

Liliyn: (Don't tell me that the one who has to watch over these two.....is me.....?)[\(31\)](#)

The one who cried in their heart, for someone, anyone to quickly return soon, was Liliyn.

Author Note:

Ah, next time will have full-fledged warriors. This time was the preparation before it. The beast men and demonkin and everyone will become warriors and it'll be a \*bla~~~st\*.....hopefully.

## Chapter 125 The Unparalleled Hiroyuki

---

\*Author's Note: This time, I think I'll show you just how unparalleled he is.

"Fortify the defensive wall! Groups 1 and 2, use water magic! After that, groups 3 and 4 should immediately use lightning magic to seal the enemy's movements!" (Eveam)

The Maou Eveam and Aquinas were issuing orders to the soldiers in order to hold back the advance of the Beastmen in front of them.

After the soldiers stationed at the front attacked the Beastmen with water magic, the soldiers on standby behind them used lightning magic. Due to the strengthened effects of the lightning magic, the mobility of their opponents was stolen.

Wary of the magical attacks, the Beastmen didn't advance any further. At that moment, as though black paint had been spilled on it, a black mass spread across the ground.

As that occurred, a number of creatures appeared from within the blackness. No, they couldn't be called creatures. Their bodies had decayed, and the smell of rotten flesh had spread quite a bit throughout the surroundings. However, the things that had appeared from the ground did not stop moving as they continued to advance forward on their own.

"Go forward-nya! My zombie soldiers!" (Black Panther Person)

At that moment, from amongst the Beastmen, an anthropomorphized black panther-like existence appeared. Upon that individual's entrance, the morale of the Beastmen could be seen to have risen greatly. They must have found the individual to be quite reliable.

"Hah! Don't be stupid! There's no way those simple monsters could break through our 《Thunder Net Formation》!" (Evila Soldier)

The one who said that was a single 『Evila』 soldier. The reason for those words was understandable. In reality, after the Beastmen were soaked with water and when lightning was sent throughout the surroundings, they had become unable to move. Amongst them, there were also those who had stepped upon the water and ended up getting electrocuted.

However, upon hearing those words, the black panther person, whose name was Crouch, smiled as though he was looking down on the soldier, and said-

“Look carefully, nya. If that’s the case, then why haven’t the zombies stopped moving, nya?” (Crouch)

Like Crouch said, the monsters which should have been electrocuted by the ground, continued to advance forward as though nothing were happening.

“Wh-why!?” (Evila Soldier)

Naturally, the 『Evila』 soldiers all raised their voices in surprise. However, Eveam had already seen through that mystery and began to speak.

“I see, look my soldiers! All those monsters are species with resistance to lightning!” (Eveam)

The monsters that had appeared were comprised of the Red Mud Golem, which was a monster with a body composed of mud; the Stone Raptor, a monster whose body was clad in stone; and the Voltage Grizzly, a monster which emitted lightning from its body.

Not only that, but amongst them included numerous Rank S monsters and other Unique Monsters. All of them were, like Eveam had said, monsters with resistance to lightning.

“What will you do, nya, Maou-sama? Do you want to try firing a huge magic spell against my troops-nya? If you do nyat, then you’ll destroy the town too-nya?” (Crouch)

Numerous monsters were in the surroundings. If they were to defeat them one by one, it would take up a lot of time, and the chances of their own military troops diminishing were quite high. However, if they were to use magic that could destroy them all at once, like Crouch had said, there would be a large amount of damage to the town.

“Nyahah, or will you have General Aquinas over there use his demon eye-nya?” (Crouch)

However, Eveam and Aquinas quietly stared back at Crouch.

“Nyahaha, I nyo that you can’t do nyat. The 《Demon Eye》 only works on inanimate objects.....nyight?” (Crouch)

“.....” (Eveam)

“But, those monsters have already died once.....could they possibly be inanimate objects-nya?” (Crouch)

Seeing Crouch laughing as though he had seen through everything, Eveam gritted her teeth.

(It's true that right now we can't use Aquinas's 《Demon Eye》. It's also true that it only works on inanimate objects. However, right now there is another reason why we can't use it) (Eveam)

She glanced towards the nearby Aquinas. He had also noticed her glance, but continued to gaze forward. And then, he began to speak without looking at her.

"It can't be helped. Hime.....no, your Majesty. We have no choice other than to rebuild the town later, you know?" (Aquinas)

Implicitly, he was saying that they should use a wide area offensive magic to attack the entire area here. However, it was clear as day that a good part of the town would be blown away.

Eveam truly, if possible, didn't want to damage the town too much, but if they continued to hesitate like they were, the chances of their soldiers and citizens becoming injured would increase greatly..

(.....we can always rebuild the town. But the people.....we can't let their lives be lost!) (Eveam)

Eveam gazed at Aquinas with a stern face. He may have also felt her resolve, as he put down her arm that he had been holding to keep watch over her, and proceeded to walk one step forward. But at that moment,

"So you were over here" (Hiiro)

Walking over using the roofs, was the one and only, Hiiro Okamura.

"Hiiro!?" (Eveam)

Eveam widened her eyes at Hiiro's presence. The ones who had noticed Hiiro's presence did not only include those from the side of the 『Evila』.

(.....hmm? Why do I feel like I've seen that appearance before-nya.....?) (Crouch)

Actually, Crouch and Hiiro had met once before when Hiiro was still travelling with Arnold and co. He had met Hiiro in a certain cave, and then proceeded to forcefully face him off one-on-one. However, even though Crouch felt that the atmosphere of the Red Robe resembled that person from a few months ago. Yet after seeing that Hiiro who clearly had the 『Imp Form』, he had to neutralize that thought.

As Hiiro had the form of a Beastmen when he had met Crouch, it couldn't be helped that Crouch himself had such unfathomable feelings.

“Hiiro, why are you here!?” (Eveam)

“Oi, did you forget our contract? There were various discrepancies; but in any case, I have to do any work that is related to the contract” (Hiiro)

“I-I see!” (Eveam)

Eveam happily smiled, but Aquinas looked at Hiiro, who had suddenly appeared.

(.....after this battle has ended, I'll be asking a lot of questions) (Aquinas)

Of course, this was not to Hiiro, but to Eveam. While she had secretly and arbitrarily made a contract with such an exceptionally strong individual, there was something about Hiiro's existence itself that attracted his curiosity.

Though it had been the same for Hiiro's magic which had allowed him to instantly appear at the conference location, Aquinas had been unable to hide his surprise at Hiiro's ability to instantly heal the fatally wounded Eveam. More than anything else, a sensation similar to the time he had first seen Judom Lankars was rushing throughout his entire body due to Hiiro's atmosphere.

Even though Hiiro could only be thought to have lived for a little more than ten-odd years, Aquinas couldn't believe that he had already become an existence at the same level as himself. Additionally, someone as strong as himself, was surprised at feeling a bit relieved at the thought of such a strong person being on their side.

(Likely, the contract he spoke of was made using the 《Contract Roll》, but with an attitude that allows him to communicate with the Maou in a way that wouldn't normally be done.....how very interesting) (Aquinas)

Hiiro was simply brazen and arrogant, but unknowing of Aquinas's thoughts, Hiiro continued to gaze over the scene in front of him.

“What a, well, tiresome situation” (Hiiro)

In front of the numerous Beastmen were monsters releasing an intense, rotten smell as they turned their hostility towards Hiiro and co. Seeing that situation, Hiiro made a slightly pensive face, and asked Eveam a question.

“Blowing away this town would be the simplest method but.....” (Hiiro)

To Hiiro, that was the simplest method, but as long as he had been hired, he felt that he should ask prior to fighting.

“Ah, yeah.....it seems like that's the only way. Aquinas also agreed to that. That's why, lend me a hand” (Eveam)

Seeing her face warped with bitterness, Hiiro lightly sighed.

“Have you forgotten the contents of our contract?” (Hiiro)

“Eh?” (Eveam)

“The contract states that I must protect the country. In other words, I have to defend the town and protect it, right? Even so, is it alright to destroy it? Not only that, but for me to do that myself is..” (Hiiro)

Hiiro said thus as though shocked, but Eveam then answered with downcast eyes.

“B-but, unless we do that, the damage will spread even further.....” (Eveam)

“Are you an idiot?” (Hiiro)

“A-a-an IDIOT!?” (Eveam)

Not only Eveam, but even Aquinas was a little taken aback by Hiiro’s way of speaking.

“Wh-what are you talking about, Hiiro! I’m not an idiot!” (Eveam)

She hadn’t noticed that her tone of voice had suddenly changed. But Hiiro ignored that and continued to speak.

“You may not understand what kind of power I have, but” (Hiiro)

“Th-that may be true but.....” (Eveam)

“Then, shouldn’t you first be asking whether or not I can do it?” (Hiiro)

“Eh.....no, but.....c-can you?” (Eveam)

“Of course. Who do you think I am?” (Hiiro)

“ .....

“There is nothing I can’t do!” (Hiiro)

Thrusting out his chest with pride, the words ‘Bam!’ seemed to appear behind him as Hiiro spoke so boastfully.

“A-Aquinas.....?” (Eveam)

As Eveam glanced towards him,

“.....can you do it?” (Aquinas)

He similarly asked Hiiro the same thing.

“I told you, didn’t I? That I would do any work corresponding to the contract” (Hiiro)

Hiiro said that as he looked towards the cluster of monsters. Then, a word set in Hiiro’s arm began to glow. That word was [Flight] / 『飛翔』 .

Hiiro began to gently float upwards from his position, and ascended up into the sky. Naturally, seeing a wingless 『Imp Race』 such as Hiiro flying around, anyone would become dumbfounded, causing their jaws to drop in astonishment.

After reaching a certain altitude at which he could see the entire country with a single sweep of his eyes, Hiiro confirmed everything below him.

(The monsters are all.....alright, done checking) (Hiiro)

It appeared that, reflected in his eyes were not only the monsters here, but the monsters raging in other places as well. And once he finished confirming with his eyes where the monsters were, Hiiro began writing a word in midair.

(I'll be reusing this again, but this would be the most effective) (Hiiro)

[Gravity] / 『引力』 and [Monsters] / 『魔物』

Hiiro then fired those words from his fingertips, and continued to float in midair as he returned to Eveam.

“Wh-what are you doing, Hiiro?” (Eveam)

Unaware, Eveam's voice had returned to normal as she asked as everyone's representative.

“It's fine, so just be quiet and watch. ....invoke 《Word Magic》 ” (Hiiro)

His quietly murmured chant appeared to signal the beginning, as the word floating in the sky began to release an intense light. Although that light was surprising, an even more frightening scene soon began to unfold in front of everyone's eyes.

Somehow, the monsters that had been heading their way were being sucked in by the light in the sky, one after the other. What was even more surprising was that except for those monsters, no one else was being affected at all.

As though the light was the South pole, and the monsters the North pole of a magnet, the monsters in the country steadily began to rise up into the air. And as the monsters assembled, they gradually began to turn into the shape of a giant sphere.

“Nya, what's going on, nya!?” (Crouch)

Crouch naturally raised his voice at this abnormal situation that was unfolding before his very eyes.

(It'll be any time now.....) (Hiiro)

After Hiiro judged that no more monsters would be going into the sky,

“Oi, block your ears” (Hiiro)

“Eh?” (Eveam)

Eveam didn't understand the significance of what Hiiro was saying, but



“Your Majesty, let’s do as he says. All of you, cover your ears immediately!” (Aquinas)

As Aquinas said that, Eveam and the soldiers all covered their ears with both hands while tilting their heads.

Then Hihiro concentrated magic into his fingertip and wrote.

[Big Explosion] / 『大爆発』

(The explosive power will be in the air, but will be followed by a large blast wave and a really loud explosive sound) (Hihiro)

Judging what would occur, after sending the word towards the monsters, Hihiro covered his ears. The instant the word came into contact with the monsters, it activated.

Baboom!

A tremendous explosion and blinding light surged out from the sky.

Booom!

Suddenly, an intense wave blasted throughout the country. Trees fell conspicuously, but the buildings somehow managed to withstand the blast force, as they didn’t crumble. Even so, those who hadn’t been prepared for the blast were sent flying.

“Uuu!” (Eveam)

Eveam also staggered, but Aquinas placed his hand on her back and supported her.

“S-sorry about that, Aquinas” (Eveam)

“No problem…….” (Aquinas)

However, his eyes were aimed towards the skies. As Eveam similarly directed her eyes there, various things, having been turned into ash-like substances, began to pour down.

It was understandable that those were likely what remained of the monsters. However, thinking that the explosive temperature had simply been that high, it involuntarily sent a chill down one’s spine.

And Aquinas looked at Hihiro, who had done that.

(It seems that Hime has contracted with a frightening boy) (Aquinas)

Hihiro had so easily accomplished what Aquinas himself had been incapable of doing. And Hihiro, unaware of Aquinas’s feelings, quietly muttered.

“Alright, extermination complete” (Hihiro)

# KONJIKI NO WORD MASTER

---

## Chapter 126

### Hiiro vs. Crouch

---

Crouch was at a loss for words as he froze. Actually, he was wondering if what had just occurred was a dream or not, as he dazedly watched the remnants of the monsters rain down.

However, the beastman soldiers were in a similar state. It was completely unexpected that the monsters which one of their respected 《Three Warriors》, Crouch, had summoned would be killed off so quickly.

And at the same time, everyone motionlessly stared at the person who had done that.

Hiiro, who had noticed their gazes, said-

“All that’s left are the beastmen, huh” (Hiiro)

He said it as though it would be as simple as pie. But of course. Amongst the monsters, there had been both Unique monsters, as well as S-rank monsters. Not only that, but their numbers had been enormous. Yet he had erased them in a single moment.

It couldn’t be helped that anyone would find what Hiiro had done to be ominous and thus instilled fear in everyone that was present. All of the beastmen soldiers then glanced towards Crouch.

“Cr-Crouch-sama!” (Soldier 1)

“Wh-what should we do!” (Soldier 2)

“Please give us some orders!” (Soldier 3)

They truly were voices raised in dependence upon him. As he took a large breath, he glared at Hiiro with a ferocious look.

“Just nyat have you done-nya? The pawns that I had taken great pains to acquire for the war have all basically disappeared-nya” (Crouch)

“That’s too bad. This is also part of my job....hm?” (Hiiro)

Hiiro looked at Crouch in front of him for the first time, and had a sense of déjà vu.

(.....oh? I’ve seen this guy somewhere before.....ah, I remember now. It’s that Nyanko-guy that appeared in the cave near 【Passion】 !) (Hiiro)

As he thought that, anger began rushing out from within him.

“Oi, Nyanko-guy. How dare you steal away my snake that one time” (Hiiro)

“That one time? Snake? Nyat are you talking about-nya?” (Crouch)

“Don’t play dumb! Didn’t you steal away the Clay Viper I had taken down in the 【Gree Caves】 !” (Hiiro)

More accurately, the one who took it down was Arnold, while Hiiro had simply been giving out orders.

“ 【Gree Caves】 ? Hm~.....nya!? Nyow that you mention it, something like that did happen-nya!” (Crouch)

Crouch clapped his hands together as he remembered.

“You stole it away before I could extract a proof of its subjugation. It’s your fault that I got shouted at by Ossan!” (Hiiro)

That’s right. Though he hadn’t particularly been trying to hide it, after finding out, Arnold had reprimanded him for not telling them earlier.

“Nyat’s true. I did take a Clay Viper, nya.....but it has nyothing to do with nyou” (Crouch)

“Haah?” (Hiiro)

“Because-nya. You’re nyot Tarou-nya” (Crouch)

“Tarou? What are you talking.....ah” (Hiiro)

Hiiro suddenly remembered. At that time, he had given the troublesome-looking guy a fake name. And if he recalled properly, Crouch had told him to become his subordinate, which is why Hiiro had to give Crouch his name at the time.

Naturally, he gave a fake name, and had told him his name was Tanaka Tarou.

“Just now they called you Hiiro-nya. That’s why, even if you seem like him, you’re different-nya” (Crouch)

Hiiro unintentionally tapped his temple with his finger and leaked out a sigh. Leaving aside his name, he had forgotten that he currently had the appearance of an 『Evila』 . But returning to his beastman form seemed stupid, so he decided to just go with the flow of things.

“In any case, I’m gonna send you flying. I’ll be returning the favour from that time too, Nyanko-guy!” (Hiiro)

“Nya nya nya? I’m also angry at you-nya!” (Crouch)

“You don’t say? Be prepared” (Hiiro)

Hiiro flew into the sky as he approached Crouch.

“Oi Maou! You guys do something about the other beastmen! I’ve got business with this one!” (Hiiro)

Hearing Hiiro's shout,

"G-got it! Aquinas!" (Eveam)

"Umu, all of you, seize them!" (Aquinas)

At Aquinas's incitation, the soldier's morale rose to the highest level. Thanks to Hiiro's actions, the beastmen's morale had fallen while the morale of the 『Evila』 had risen. As a result, the beastmen were at a clear disadvantage.

Not only that, but because of the sound of the explosion, the beastmen with good hearing had received damage and had difficulty moving. With the 『Evila』's fierce attack, beastmen were defeated and captured in succession.

"Will this suffice, your Majesty?" (Aquinas)

"Yes, we can kill them whenever we want. So if capturing them is possible, then that takes priority" (Eveam)

While Aquinas thought that Eveam was naïve after all, his gaze flew over towards the battle between Hiiro and Crouch that was about to begin.

Hiiro lowered his hips and drew his katana. This was the katana that was once called the 《Thorn Sword – Piercer》. Its form resembled that of a Japanese katana, and its blade had a transparent, ice-like clear colour.

However, currently its name had changed to 《Severing Sword – Slasher》. Its blade was clear like 《Thorn Sword – Piercer》, but both sides of the blade had a red streak zig-zagging down the blade from the hilt to its tip.

When attacking an opponent clad in magic power, this 《Severing Sword – Slasher》 was capable of attacking the opponent's magic power itself. This would lead to the opponent becoming intoxicated by magic power, muddling their consciousness. Naturally, this would not have much of an effect on those with a high degree of control over their magic power. However, it was possible to knock those bad at controlling their magic power unconscious in a single moment.

There were already beastmen who had fainted instantly due to the power of this katana after being attacked by Hiiro.

This sword had been created by a certain person. However, at that time, they had remade it by merging it together with the blade from the 《Thorn Sword – Piercer》, so naturally it still contained its specialized ability in piercing. Not only that, but as this katana had been made with emphasis on its slicing ability, it truly could be called an all-purpose sword upon being reborn.

"Nyahaha, I'm shivering with excitement-nya" (Crouch)

Crouch felt Hiiro's extraordinary atmosphere and involuntarily let a smile escape.

"No matter where I go, beastmen battle junkies are plentiful, huh" (Hiiro)

"Nyat are you saying-nya. Even nyou have trained in order to become stronger, nyright?" (Crouch)

"I won't deny that." (Hiiro)

"Nyen, in order to confirm your strength, nyon't you have to find suitable opponents to compare nyour strength with-nya?" (Crouch)

".....well, you have a point there" (Hiiro)

"Nyen, why don't we enjoy this fight for a while-nya!" (Crouch)

Crouch was intending on using his tremendous speed to toy with Hiiro. Previously, this speed was capable of drawing out Hiiro's spirit, but now, things were different.

And Crouch also realized that Hiiro was certainly capable of following his movements with his eyes.

"Then why don't I raise it up a gear-nya!" (Crouch)

In an instant, Crouch's speed rose another level. Hiiro had confirmed Crouch's 《Status》 prior to fighting. While Hiiro's level had clearly been higher, only Crouch's AGL, or his speed, had surpassed that of Hiiro's.

(He's a beastman specializing in speed. I guess that's to be expected of a black panther) (Hiiro)

As Hiiro's eyeballs moved busily, they followed Crouch. And then, the surrounding people felt some wind pressure. In the midst of it was Crouch's right arm and Hiiro's katana clashing together.

The low-levelled ones were unable to see when the two clashed, but Crouch had approached from Hiiro's rear, while Hiiro had simply dealt with him accordingly by defending. However, it had all occurred so fast that there were many who had missed it.

".....your hands are strange as usual" (Hiiro)

"Nyahaha! You responded well-nya!" (Crouch)

Hiiro's doubts were quite natural. It was the same in the past too, but even though Hiiro was using a katana while Crouch used his bare hands, there wasn't a single sign of his hands getting cut. On the contrary, it felt like a wooden sword clashing against a clay wall.

As Hiiro kicked his leg upwards towards Crouch's arm, he continued to rotate his body and cut down Crouch horizontally. However, by that time, Crouch's figure had already disappeared.

“Che, he’s a quick guy, isn’t he” (Hiiro)

Before Hiiro had realized it, Crouch’s presence had disappeared. He was likely peeking at Hiiro while remaining hidden in the shadows of the nearby buildings, but his appearance was truly like that of a carnivore hunting down its prey.

“Unfortunately, that strategy won’t work against me” (Hiiro)

Although Hiiro muttered so, Crouch did not react. However, Hiiro had not said that while anticipating any reaction. He honestly was just saying that it wouldn’t work because it really wouldn’t work. The reason being that.....

[Find Enemy] / 『索敵』

Instantly, the written word activated. As it did so, the location of Hiiro’s enemy directly entered into his head. He then quickly wrote the word [Extend] / 『伸』 onto his sword’s blade, and directed the blade towards his opponent as it extended.

“Nya!?” (Crouch)

As it pierced through the building, the blade attacked Crouch, who had been hiding behind it. Crouch barely dodged it, but even so, his face was warped in surprise.

Hiiro wrote the word [Origin] / 『元』 on the sword’s blade, and smirked as it returned to normal.

“Like I said, right? Your stealth abilities won’t work against me” (Hiiro)

“Uu~ nya~” (Crouch)

Crouch gritted his teeth as though mortified, and stomped his feet against the ground numerous times.

“How did you know-nya?” (Crouch)

“Did you think I’d answer that?” (Hiiro)

“.....nyen, this time I’ll be serious-nya” (Crouch)

“Hurry up and come at me seriously, Nyanko-guy” (Hiiro)

Crouch placed both hands on the ground. A black shadow which then appeared there sped towards Hiiro. Hiiro reflexively flew in order to avoid it, but-

“It’s futile-nya!” (Crouch)

From the shadow, a black tentacle-like thing extended and twisted around Hiiro’s body.

“Hiiro!” (Eveam)

Seeing that, the Maou Eveam raised her voice. In an instant, the captured Hiiro was ruthlessly dragged into the shadow just like that.

“Hiirooooooooo!” (Eveam)

As Eveam screamed bitterly, Crouch smiled as though his victory was decided.

“With this it’s over-nya. My 《Binding》 is darkness, nya. This 《Shadow Prison》 is a handy ability capable of storing away anything-nya. However, inside of it, there isn’t any oxygen-nya” (Crouch)

“Th-that sort of!” (Eveam)

In that sort of situation, Hiiro wouldn’t be able to breathe, and would die.

“However, nya, inside it are the monsters I haven’t released yet-nya. There’s only 5 of them, nyut they’re all Rank-SS monsters, with one Rank-SSS-nya” (Crouch)

“No.....way!” (Eveam)

If that truly was the case, then Hiiro would have to single-handedly face off against 5 vicious monsters. To make things worse, he had to face them without being able to breathe.

“Aquinas, save Hiiro right now!” (Eveam)

“Wait” (Aquinas)

“Why! At this rate, Hiiro will-!” (Eveam)

As Aquinas appeared like he didn’t understand the current predicament one bit, Eveam unintentionally yelled. However, his eyes were currently focused on the shrunken shadow at Crouch’s feet.

“Aquinas....?” (Eveam)

“Your Majesty, if it’s him, then he’ll be fine. So long as he can use magic within there.....right” (Aquinas)

At those words, Eveam’s gaze also fell to the shadow with realization.

“Nyahaha! I don’t know nyat you’re expecting, but once you’ve entered it, you can’t exit without my approval, nya.....guh.....!” (Crouch)

Everyone’s eyes widened at the scene. It was only natural. Because from the shadow that stretched out at Crouch’s feet, an arm had appeared. The katana that the arm was holding was currently piercing through Crouch’s chest.

“Nya.....nyat.....ha-.....” (Crouch)

Bushuu!

As the katana was vigorously pulled out, blood spurted from the wound. And as Crouch unsteadily staggered while looking behind him, there-

“Whup” (Hiiro)

-completely unharmed, Hiiro had reappeared.



## Chapter 127 Lightning and Darkness

---

Although Hiiro, who was imprisoned by Crouch's 《Shadow Prison》, was surprised at the tentacle that had suddenly appeared from the shadows, after being dragged into the shadows, he was relatively calm.

(I can't breathe.....huh. On the other hand.....) (Hiiro)

His eyes were gradually adjusting enough to see the figures of gigantic wriggling shadows in the surroundings.

(.....I won't be able to hold my breath long enough to face them.....huh?) (Hiiro)

Judging from their appearances, they seemed to be monsters of considerably high level. Not only that, but there were 5 of them. Amongst them, the one that appeared to be the most dangerous was an enormous creature hiding in the innermost area.

In reality, Hiiro figured that if he used his 《Word Magic》, and had the time to go one-on-one with them, he could defeat them. However, the current situation where he had to face five at once while being unable to breathe was honestly rather severe.

Hiiro glanced at his surroundings again. The area was big enough that he couldn't see the end of it. Hiiro nodded in understanding as he realized that this was how Crouch had been able to collect a large number of monsters. In addition, he came to understand why they could only use zombified bodies alone.

It was thanks to the fact that they did not breathe, as normal living creatures would be unable to stay in this space for very long.

(There doesn't seem to be an exit but.....) (Hiiro)

Hiiro kept his distance from the monsters that were gradually approaching him as his face relaxed.

(He was most likely planning to lock me in here and suffocate me to death) (Hiiro)

A bluish-white light trail appeared within the darkness as he swiftly moved his finger.

[Escape] / 『脱出』

In reaction to that light, the monsters started to grow hostile as the atmosphere rippled with the monster's roars.

(Like I could fight in such a troublesome place) (Hiiro)

The moment the word activated, he saw a ring of light in the air just above him. Hiiro sensed that it meant he could exit by passing through the ring.

By the time the monsters were aware of him and finally began approaching, they were already too late. Hiiro tightly grasped his katana and thrust it through the ring of light.

“Hiiro!?” (Eveam)

Although Eveam had raised her voice, Hiiro felt that he had to do something about the enemy who was kneeling in front of him while clutching his chest, rather than answering her.

When Hiiro escaped, Crouch should have received a considerable amount of damage from the katana piercing through him. Even so, Crouch’s fighting spirit did not dull one bit.

“Ku.....how.....nya?” (Crouch)

Crouch had absolute confidence in his 《Shadow Prison》, so it would only be natural for him to be bothered by the fact that Hiiro had escaped from it. More so, in such a short amount of time.

“I am not obligated to answer. Hurry up and fall over!” (Hiiro)

Hiiro brandished his katana and swung at Crouch. When suddenly, the shadow beneath his feet swelled up and protected the Black Panther from the katana.

“.....shadows again, huh” (Hiiro)

Hiiro felt the current sensation was similar to when he had exchanged blows with Crouch earlier. Then, Hiiro leapt backwards to make some distance and gazed at the swirling shadows, observing them.

“I see, I thought that you were taking on my katana with your bare hands, but you.....were covered in those shadows, weren’t you?” (Hiiro)

As he said this, the corners of the kneeling Crouch’s mouth rose up into a grin. Then, the shadows began to concentrate on Crouch’s wounds as if they were being sucked in.

“Gu.....gah!” (Crouch)

Doing that probably caused him some intense pain, as Crouch began to groan while gritting his teeth. Gradually, the shadows began to flicker around his body, as if he was covered in black flames. However, Hiiro rapidly closed the gap between them.

“Sorry, but I’m not so polite as to leave you alone during your transformation scene” (Hiiro)

Hihiro believed that things like that should be left in animes alone, as there was nothing easier than taking down a stationary opponent. As he closed the distance between them, Hihiro used his momentum and stabbed with his katana.

This time, Crouch was not able to dodge or defend against it, and Hihiro easily pierced through Crouch's body. Although Hihiro thought that he had finished him now, by piercing through Crouch's chest twice, Crouch was firmly grabbing onto the blade.

Then, he raised his face and smiled.

"How unfortunate-nya. I'm already done transforming-nya" (Crouch)

"Che!" (Hihiro)

Hihiro immediately fired off a kick, but astonishingly, that kick easily sunk into Crouch's body and his leg stopped in the centre of Crouch's body.

"Wha!?" (Hihiro)

Hihiro was not the only one, as everyone besides the Beastmen raised their voices in surprise. No, even amongst the 『Evila』, only Eveam and Aquinas alone acted as though it was as expected and that they were used to seeing it.

Eveam then opened her mouth with a grim expression.

"So he could use it after all..... 《Transformation》 was it?" (Eveam)

"Yeah, the Beastmen who originally couldn't use magic developed the 《Binding》. The peak point of that technique is when they become magic itself" (Aquinas)

"A body made of magic itself. That means becoming an identical existence to 『Spirits』. It is a technique made possible simply because the 『Gabranth』 are existences close to 『Spirits』." (Eveam)

"However, controlling the skill 《Transformation》 is difficult. Normally, doing a 《Transformation》 on one part of the body alone is the limit. As to be expected from one of the 《Three Warriors》. He can do it for his entire body." (Aquinas)

"Hihiro! Be careful! Normal physical attacks won't work on that one!" (Eveam)

When Eveam's words reached Hihiro, he immediately attempted to pull out his leg, but it was stuck firmly.

"I won't let you escape-nya" (Crouch)

As Crouch said that, the shadow from Crouch's body began spreading up Hihiro's leg.

"This is revenge for earlier-nya" (Crouch)

Crouch was planning to wrap Hihiro's body in the shadow and strangle him to death. But,

Bachibachibachibachibachi!

Electricity suddenly began to surge out from Hiiro's body.

"Gugah!?" (Crouch)

Unable to withstand the immense electrical power, Crouch withdrew. After putting some distance between Hiiro and himself, his expression stiffened from seeing the changes in Hiiro's appearance.

Bachibachi.....bachiii!

Electricity was discharging from Hiiro's body, discharging into the surroundings. Crouch knew that it was not simply magic.

(Magic.....? No, this feeling is.....no, no that's impossible-nya! Nyai is this.....!?)  
(Crouch)

Crouch denied the thought, thinking that it was impossible, but seeing Hiiro right in front of him, he was unable to wipe it away.

The reason being that Hiiro.....

"How is it? It's a similar body to your own" (Hiiro)

Everyone in the area gazed at his body, which appeared to be made of bluish-white plasma.

[Thunder Conversion] / 『雷化』

That was the true form of the word that Hiiro had written.

(According to the word itself, the body will become lightning, but only for a short amount of time. I should settle this quickly!) (Hiiro)

In reality, the word's effects would last for 3 minutes, and once it had been spent, a cool-down period would have to pass before he could use another word with similar effects. That was why he had to end this quickly.

As Crouch could not understand exactly who the person in front of him was, he fell into confusion. Magic that gathered the monsters into the air and exterminated them, the ability to easily find someone when they had completely erased their presence and attack them by extending his katana, the method of escaping from the 《Shadow Prison》, and Hiiro's current appearance.

They were all covered with mysteries, and were all abilities worthy of being feared.

(That is definyately the same as my 《Dark Night Transformation》 -nya.....) (Crouch)

Even when he thought about it, there was nothing he could do. Everyone else didn't know this, but it was also rather difficult for Crouch to maintain his 《Dark Night Transformation》 for long periods of time. Additionally, it wasn't like he had completely recovered from the damage he received earlier either.

That was exactly why he too desired a quick decisive battle as well.

Crouch extended a tentacle-like shadow from his body and thrust it like a spear. Hiiro similarly discharged electricity, and created numerous arrow-shaped figures.

Dodododododododo!

Their attacks collided, and the impact spread out into the surroundings. To avoid being caught in the battle, the people nearby were screaming while moving away.

During the attack, Crouch jumped into the air, gambling on the outcome of the match. Hiiro dispersed the smoke caused by their attacks, and feeling the killing intent from the sky, he looked upwards.

There stood.....10 shadow clones of Crouch.

“This is the end-nya! I'll use my max speed for the finishing blow-nya! Take this-nya! 《The Black Assault of the 10 Follies》 !!!!” (Crouch)

The ten shadows descended from the sky with a speed incomparable to before, making it impossible to differentiate one from another and to pick them off one-by-one.

Seeing that, Hiiro leaked out a small sigh.

“You're quite the guy. If it wasn't me, then that attack probably would've hit” (Hiiro)

As he said that, he once again created 10 lightning arrows in the air. Hiiro then aimed and fired those arrows at the incoming Crouch.

“There's no way such a slow attack would reach mye-nya!” (Crouch)

Crouch swiftly moved as if he were kicking the air. As he looked at the arrows approaching in front of him, he nimbly side-stepped to avoid them, easily evading them. The moment he thought that-

Stab!

“.....eh?” (Crouch)

Before he had knew it, the lightning arrows had stabbed into his abdomen. Then, the words, [Lock-On]/ 『必中』, were floating at Hiiro's fingertips.

Stab stab stab stab stab stab stab stab stab!

The other 9 bodies of Crouch were also pierced through without a single wasted arrow.

Bachibachibachibachibachi!!!!!!

Suddenly, a violent electrical discharge came from the arrows, robbing the freedom of Crouch over his body.

“Nyabababbababababa!?” (Crouch)

Crouch noisily plummeted from the sky towards the ground. And just as he thought the other 9 bodies had come to a halt, they simply turned back into shadows and returned to the main body. It seemed that his body which had undergone the

《Transformation》 was returned to normal, as his electrocuted body was twitching madly.

Shwing.....

Hihiro had thrust his katana at Crouch's neck.

## Chapter 128 How to deal with Zombies

---

### How to deal with Zombies

"You're the ones who started this War. Shouldn't you have been prepared for this outcome?" (Hiiro)

Hiiro looked down on Crouch with cold eyes.

"Kuh... Nyahaha... Can't help it, nya.... I was the weaker one... Nya." (Crouch)

In this situation where you would normally tremble in fear, Crouch was smiling happily. Seeing that, Hiiro felt like sighing again.

"You aren't planning on saying something like 'I don't want to die', are you?" (Hiiro)

"Nyahaha, I won't say anything(anything) that boring, nya." (Crouch)

"Hou, you've sure got guts. As expected of a Battle Junkie." (Hiiro)

"But, remember this, nya." (Crouch)

"Hmm?" (Hiiro)

"I may have lost this time, but if I'm given another, I will certainly win, nya!" (Crouch)

It was shocking how much of a battle maniac Crouch was. As those seemed to be Crouch's last words, Hiiro slowly raised his sword over his head and swung it down immediately.

"Hiiro, wait!" (???)

It was Eveam's voice that brought Hiiro's sword to a halt. Hiiro responded to Eveam, who closed in on them at some point, with a stare.

"What are you doing?" (Hiiro)

"I won't allow you to kill him." (Eveam)

".....and the reason being?" (Hiiro)

"I don't want to kill!" (Eveam)

"..... It's evident that he has been killing 『Evila』 . Even so, you aren't going to avenge them? Do you really believe that the others would agree with this?" (Hiiro)

Hiiro's piercing gaze struck Eveam; Eveam stared back without giving in to the pressure.

"He has certainly hurt my family before, and it may be the same now. However, I don't believe killing him will get us anywhere." (Eveam)

“.....” (Hiiro)

“Others might not be alright with this. But, I still won’t kill him. At least for now.”

(Eveam)

“For now?” (Hiiro)

“Yes, he is even one of the 《Three warriors》, individuals who have top class abilities among beastmen. If we can use him well-” (Eveam)

“Negotiating with them... that’s what you’re after?” (Hiiro)

“Yes.” (Eveam)

“.....Well, I’m just the hired hand here. If you say so then so be it. Just remember, after this I have no responsibility even if he starts to rage around, okay?” (Hiiro)

“Thank you.” (Eveam)

Hiiro shrugged his shoulders in amazement and sheathed his sword. However, at that moment, Crouch’s mocking laughter resounded.

“Nyahaha, nyaive (naive). You are too nyaive, Demon Lord. My life’s worth is the same as that of a dead beastman from the moment I was caught by the enemy. And it isn’t just me, all soldiers of 【Passion】 are the same. That is how we are taught to attack, nya. Do you get what I’m implying, nya? I have no value as a hostage, nya.” (Crouch)

In contrast to what he said, not only Eveam but Aquinas also smirked.

“That might be so if it was only your life we were speaking of. However, what if we add the prince’s life into the mix.... well?” (Eveam)

“... What, nya?” (Crouch)

Crouch’s smile instantly stiffened.

“The second prince Lenion has also come to this land, right? I have confirmation. So, as a priority to capture him, we have sent three of our strongest to face him.” (Eveam)

“Y-you can’t mean!?” (Crouch)

“Even if the second prince has an ample amount of combat experience, I wonder how long he would last facing off with three of the 《Cruel》?” (Eveam)

Crouch’s expression was completely different from a while ago, turning completely pale.

“I won’t let you do that, nya! In that case...!” (Crouch)

Crouch shouted that and his shadow immediately expanded.

“Come out, nya! My strongest servants!” (Crouch)

After that, from the shadow-

Zuzuzuzuzuzuzuzuzuzuzuu.....



Five creatures appeared from the shadow.

“Nyaha...ha... I wanted to summon them... when I had more to spare... Nya...” (Crouch)

Suddenly, the black fur covering Crouch’s body turned pure white, and then he immediately fell to the ground. It seems there is risk involved in summoning monsters.

(The skill probably uses vitality as its power source. Still, he went and did something troublesome again. Moreover, one of those creatures... It’s like that after all.) (Hiiro)

Among the five monsters, one of them was a massive three headed creature that was releasing an extraordinary aura. Of course, similar to the other monsters, this monster had a rotten body as well, it can be understood that even a simple glare from it will immobilize most people in fear.

Just from looking at the monsters, that were so huge they could crush buildings with just by taking a single step, everyone grew stiff from astonishment.

“I never thought... he would summon this kind of monster...” (Eveam)

Eveam said that with an expression like she couldn’t believe what was happening.

“What do you mean? Is that monster famous?” (Hiiro)

Eveam nodded slightly in response to Hiiro’s question.

“Yes, its name is Cerberus. Even in demon world there is nothing like it.” (Eveam)

So it’s Cerberus after all, Hiiro thought in his mind. Even in Japan there are many who know about it.

In Greek mythology, it’s the watchdog of the entrance to the realm of the dead. It is pictured with three heads and snake as a tail, sometimes with addition of numerous snakeheads sprouting from its head and body.

《Guard dog of the netherworld, Cerberus》, Hiiro only knew what he had read in books about it. However, its appearance was identical to the one he knew of.

As a monster belonging to the highest rank in 【Edea】, SSS, it’s a feared existence. A legendary class monster; even if you were level 100 or higher, you were still going to get absolutely trashed for challenging it alone.

“How can we deal with Cerberus...” (Eveam)

Eveam saw this as a huge issue just from that monster alone, but it wasn’t just Cerberus, there were four others as well, and all of them were rank SS monsters.

This was a situation where she had to put protection of the country as the highest priority. Eveam sent a hateful glare to Crouch, who had summoned the monsters, but immediately redirected her gaze to her subordinates and said:

“Seize him and throw him in jail!” (Eveam)

The subordinate soldiers responded, restrained Crouch and carried him away. Then, she returned her gaze to the monsters.

“Ku! Aquinas, since it’s come to this, gather up everyone and stop them together.” (Eveam)

“Is that fine? If we seriously fight against such huge monsters, the area will be devastated.” (Aquinas)

“Uh... But, even though I agree with what you said, if we leave them be, the damage will only increase!” (Eveam)

This was why Hiiro thought of finishing Crouch before something like this happened; however, there was nothing more for him to do about it anymore. he looked around the city like it was someone else’s problem.

And Hiiro coincidentally remembered something. If he was not mistaken, something that Hiiro deeply desired was near here..

And that is the 《Fortuna Grand Library》. Realizing this, Hiiro’s face became stiff.

(Wait a minute, if they start wreaking havoc around here, my precious treasury of knowledge will....) (Hiiro)

In Hiiro’s mind, he saw the library being crushed. The books ripped apart and enveloped in flames..... He didn’t want to imagine any further.

It was necessary for him to immediately take matters into his own hands.

“Wait a minute” (Hiiro)

Hiiro joins the conversation of the two.

“W-what is it, Hiiro?” (Eveam)

“This is no time to sit idle. If the 【Fortuna Grand Library】 gets destroyed by the monsters, I cannot overlook this.” (Hiiro)

When Eveam saw Hiiro complaining, she pointed at Cerberus.

“Eh? Library? Ah, but, just look at that monster! As a zombie it may be slow, but it’s still a creature with enough attack power to blow away a building with a single sweep of its paw! It’ll take time to figure out how we can deal with it!” (Eveam)

"That won't be necessary." (Hiiro)

"...Huh?" (Eveam)

As Hiiro was openly brimming with confidence, Eveam instinctively dropped her jaw.

"I'll confirm it again, that thing is a zombie, right?" (Hiiro)

"Eh... Yes, it is but... what about it?" (Eveam)

As Eveam tilted her head without understanding why would he confirm that right now, Aquinas interrupted them.

"...Can you do it?" (Aquinas)

"Ah? As this is originally the demon lord's fault, I was planning to leave this matter here, but the circumstances have changed." (Hiiro)

Hiiro had to make a move for the books he had yet to read. To Hiiro's words, Eveam asked:

"R-really?" (Eveam)

"Well, fighting them might have taken a lot longer if they weren't zombies, but fortunately they are." (Hiiro)

Then, Hiiro channeled a tremendous amount of magical energy to both of his index fingers. Eveam's group, who felt it, instinctively backed off while fixing their eyes on Hiiro's fingers.

What appeared was a light blue luminescent trail; it wavered like a small flame, swaying back and forth. As he moved his fingers, the light followed along the path.

Then, Hiiro felt a sudden incompatibility in his finger movement.

(Nh? As expected, writing this character is going to take a bit longer.) (Hiiro)

He could not move his finger any faster. What he was about to write would cause rapid changes, and it had a restriction that being it had to be applied directly on the body. The restriction was the same as when he had used 『Sleep』 | 『眠』 against the Red Boar.

But that wasn't the only thing, the difference between Hiiro's and the enemy's level was also affecting it. If the monster was much weaker, he should have been able to write it more smoothly.

"Oi... You, red hair over there, keep that thing occupied so it won't move from there."  
(Hiiro)

"...Very well." (Aquinas)

Hiiro self-importantly gave orders to Aquinas, but he didn't get angry at Hiiro and intended to do what Hiiro said. Aquinas was already convinced that Hiiro was acting for

their benefit. And, if it was Hiiro, Aquinas believed he would be able to do something about this.

Aquinas took a step forward, and-

“Your Majesty, the town is going to be damaged a bit, but forgive me.” (Aquinas)

“Ah, okay, do it!” (Eveam)

Aquinas raised one hand towards the sky. With that the atmosphere trembled, even Hiiro’s eyes grew wide at the magic power surging towards the sky.

“Manifest in my origin, 《Third Sword – Binding Huge Sword: Disintegrator》 ”  
(Aquinas)

The moment he finished the chant, the clouds scattered, and a sword so huge, a person would be unable to wield it appeared. Moreover, there were five of them in total.

“Their numbers are perfect. Even for me, manifesting five of these swords is the limit.”  
(Aquinas)

The gigantic swords pierced the five demons with staggering force. Each making one of their monsters groan; however, since they were already dead, they did not feel pain. They only groaned from being unable to move.

“Hiiro, is this okay for what you had in mind?” (Aquinas)

Hiiro clicked his tongue upon seeing Aquinas face him, after nonchalantly leaving enormous magics in effect.

(Oi oi, even if I didn’t step in, couldn’t he have dealt with this problem alone?) (Hiiro)

While Hiiro thought that, he gazed at the monsters that were skewered into the ground by the gigantic swords. The ground was gradually being destroyed as the monsters were desperately trying to struggle free. There were also huge cracks from the gigantic swords stabbing into the ground.

(Well, there’s some damage to the town...) (Hiiro)

That was the cause for Aquinas’s hesitation. His magic is powerful; however, such powerful magic causes the surroundings to get afflicted too. It mainly causes destruction.

“If you are about to do something, do it already. They aren’t going to wait for long.”  
(Aquinas)

Cracks were beginning to form on the sword that was stuck into Cerberus. And from around the other monsters as well, although not to the extent of Cerberus, came the sounds of the swords reaching their limits.

“H-Hihiro, can you do it?” (Eveam)

As Hihiro was still silent, Eveam asked in worry. Hihiro lightly nodded back to her.

“Yes, that’s enough. I just completed it.” (Hihiro)

Then Hihiro showed both hands’ fingertips towards them. Eveam and the others who saw this did not understand what he was trying to show them.

『Purification』 | 『浄化』 and 『Area』 | 『空間』 .

Those were the words Hihiro wrote. And then he moved into the middle of the five monsters and activated the words.

Paaaaaaaaaaaaa!

The area got covered in dazzling light with Hihiro being in the center of it. The amount of luminescence caused even the 『Evila』 to grimace. There were some of them in the midst of it, feeling sick; however, as it wasn’t lethal to them, Hihiro continued.

The light gradually extended into a hemisphere, stopping at a radius of 100 meters. The bodies of the monsters inside it began to change.

Their bodies started to fall apart like a worn out clay wall. Eveam was completely still, watching the spectacle as if she had forgotten how to talk. Even Aquinas showed his surprise by knitting his eyebrows.

In no time the Rank SS monsters became bare bones and lay asunder on the ground. Only the Cerberus remained.

“It would have been nice to fight normally, but there is the request to protect the country. So I had to take the easy way out of this.” (Hihiro)

As he said that, the Cerberus finally lost two of its heads. The last remaining head groaned painfully while it fell to its knees.

“Becoming zombies sure has backfired. Well, they were out of luck the moment beastmen caught them.” (Hihiro)

“Gigii...Gaga...” (Cerberus)”

“...See ya, 《Guard Dog of Netherworld》 ” (Hihiro)

And then, Crouch’s last resort once again fell to pieces thanks to Hihiro’s sudden appearance.

Looking around, almost all soldiers were uninjured, and the damage was minimal. The one who succeeded in that was a single hire.

It was definitely an overwhelming victory.

## Chapter 129

### Cruel:Three People vs 2nd Prince of Garbranth

---

The Evila army had finally subdued the Gabranth army. Their commander, Crouch had also been defeated single-handedly. In addition, the terror of the zombie outbreak had also passed.

Although the Evila were highly pleased with their triumphant battle in this warzone, Gabranth soldiers and Humas soldiers were still raging in other places of Evila. Eveam invigorated the other soldiers as she instructed them to those nearby.

At that moment, there were only three people left, Eveam, Hihiro, and Aquinas.

“Hey Maou, take this.” (Hihiro)

Hihiro took out a piece of paper and tossed it to Eveam.

“What is this?” (Eveam)

“I was asked by the muscle-man to hand this over to you.” (Hihiro)

“Muscle...man? ...Oh, it is from Judom-dono right? Is it the report that Teckil handed to Judom through the adventurers ?” (Eveam)

She quickly recieved and read the the letter. Her face paled with each character she read. When she was done, her body shook a bit and she wiped a bead of sweat from her forehead.

Aquinas was worried about the contents so he took a look at the letter carefully when it was passed to him.

“.....I see that is what happened” (Aquinas)

His voice was soft but heavy. It was clear that something unexpected was written in that letter.

---

A moment before Hihiro defeated Crouch, the second prince of the [Gabranth Kingdom: Passion], Lenon was in a bad predicament.

When the attack was planned out, the Gabranth were to attack the [Evilia Capital: Xaos] while the Humas diverted Evlia’s attention.

For that purpose, the Gabranth King Leowald and his elder brother Leglos had gone to the conference to face the Demon Lord. One of the Three Warrior Saints requested to

follow them but was rejected by Leowald since the Demon Lord's 『Cruel』 were also present in the conference.

Although it was important to defeat the Demon Lord, Leowald said that capturing Xaos had a much higher priority. As a matter of fact, he was told that the Demon Lord and her group would not be able to leave the 《Sacred Room》 for 24 hours, and would not be able to take part in the battle. Following orders, Leowald was to standby, and should anything out of the ordinary happen he would stop it with all his power.

However, Lenon, who had inherited his father, Leowald's nature wanted to subjugate the Demon Lord who appeared 24 hours later by his own hands. Due to the previous incident, he was angry for being dishonoured by the Demon Lord.

What's more, Aquinas who was regarded as the strongest was present in that place and so Lenon believed it to be a real chance to fight against Aquinas. Rather, this was his intent all along, as he had inherited his father's nature of wanting to fight with a strong person.

At that moment, something completely out of place happened. Before his eye were three Cruel veterans who were supposed to be at the meeting.

"Damn!" (Lenon)

He clicked his tongue as he looked around him. The Evila had defeated his troops and now standing right before him were three of the strongest members of Cruel.

(I need to prepare myself...or else) (Lenon)

But Lenon, instead of being irritated, his face showed a glint of smile. As one would expect from the person who inherited the blood from Leowald. Even though he was in such a dire predicament, with his pride he could never show his back to the enemy.

"I see, it seems like you are not planning to surrender" (Shublarz)

Cruel 《Rank 5》, Shublarz stared at Lenon with her hands on her hips. As ordered by Eveam, she was to capture the second prince. If she succeeded, the war would move in an advantageous direction, and negotiations would be easier.

However, Shublarz was impressed that Lenon's fighting spirit didn't waver in the face of such adversity.

"Hmph, I single handedly can take down this guy" (Marione)

Cruel 《Rank 2》 Marione said in an unpleasant voice

"Right, but, the Demon Lord ordered us to capture him. You are not going to disobey



her are you? If you were alone, you would have killed every one here without holding back. There would be no way for us to capture anyone.” (Shublarz)

“Damn” (Marione)

Shublarz open his mouth to try and say something. But at that moment, the person who spoke was Cruel Rank 4, Ornoth

She does have a point, he thought as he crossed his arm without arguing back. But at that moment, the person who spoke was Cruel 《Rank 4》, Ornoth.

“Prince Lenon, let us take you into custody” (Ornoth)

Lenon opened his mouth and said,

“Heh, if you can, then do it! This Lenon-sama will not go down that easily!” (Lenon)

Lenon took out his sword and raised it into the air, at that moment wind started to gather around the sword creating a small tornado. He gripped the sword with both hands and swung it at the three before him.

“Take this! 《Tornado Slash》!” (Lenon)

The tornado left the blade and flew towards the three people.

“Hmph, this youngster (TL: or noob)” (Marione)

Marione stepped in front and concentrated magic into his right hand.

Bu~i~i~i~i~in ..... Dogaga~tsu! (sound of something hitting a solid object and then exploding)

Pale magic gathered in his fist as he punched the ground. A large hand made of solid earth erupted from the ground.

“Come!, I will turn it to dust with my demonic power!” (Marione)

Using the large hand, it easily crushed the incoming tornado.

“What!?” (Lenon)

Lenon knew that something like that wouldn’t be able to defeat them. But for them to easily defend against it made him grit his teeth in discontent.

“That was so weak, youngster, This is the difference between our levels”

Marione smiled condescendingly at Lenon, who glared back with a scowl.

“Let us crush him like this” (Marione)

“Hey, wait” (Shublarz)

Shublarz raised her voice and said as she looked at Marione that told him not to interfere.

“What?” (Marione)

“Don’t say ‘what?’ Your are not going against the Demon Lord’s orders,are you?”  
(Shublarz)

Marione stopped suddenly at that moment, and a bitter expression appeared on his face. Apparently, he lost himself in the battle.

“Fine, you do something about it then” (Marione)

“Yes, yes. This is all a muscle-head can do” (Shublarz)

She let out a sigh and shrugged. However at that moment they felt a large burst of magic power somewhere nearby. The three people all faced in that direction. Lenon also looked towards that direction.

“What is that!?” (Lenon)

Lenon couldn’t stop himself from looking because in the air was a large black floating mass. It got bigger over time and seemed to pull something up from the ground.

“Are those...monsters!?” (Lenon)

Lenon’s observations were correct, it was monsters, monsters that Crouch had collected, gathered in the sky and then,

Kaboooooooooooooooooooooooooom!

A giant explosion erupted from the cluster sending a violent blast of wind in their direction. Not only Lenon but also Marione and company braced themselves to prevent being blown off balance.

“Ku, what the heck was that !?” (Shublarz)

“Even I have no idea what that was!” (Marione)

“Mu-!” (Ornoth)

The three Cruel all expressed their thought respectively

After regaining balance, they looked up again. The dark mass that was in the air before disappeared without a trace.

(What is happening....What did Crouch do?) (Lenon)

Lenon knew something incomprehensible happened. He also felt an unpleasant presentiment swell up.

(I have no choice but to fight....) (Lenon)

Looking cautiously at the three people before him, he closed his eyes.

The three Cruel members didn't expect such a big explosion. The explosion was so huge, that the three had no idea who would be able to do something like that. The amount of magic in that explosion matched Aquinas, but the Aquinas they knew wouldn't use magic like that.

It was someone else that had caused the explosion. Because they didn't know about Hiirou, they had no idea who it was.

Also, there was a chance that Eveam was caught under that explosion. They wanted to rush toward her to check on their king/queen but they couldn't leave the current situation as it was. At that moment,

"Shubladz, will you leave this to me?" (Ornoth)

"Ornoth? Do you have a plan or something?" (Shubladz)

"No, compared to you guys who are proficient in taking many opponents at a time, I specialize in this kind of situation" (Ornoth)

"Hmph, you are one to talk, for a beast who cannot even use magic" (Marione)

Marione said it harshly but, without batting an eye, Ornoth said.

"Even if that was the case, I'm confident that I can capture that person. That aside, you are anxious about your majesty. Right?" (Ornoth)

"T-that is right..." (Marione)

Shubladz sighed in amazement as she saw the two figures mutually glaring at each other

"Anything is fine, but that person is making preparations right now" (Shublarz)

She looked at Lenon, and noticed that he was concentrating with his eyes closed

"Anyway, leave this to me. Actually, Marione stay with me. Shublarz-dono you go on ahead" (Ornoth)

"Are you sure two people is enough?" (Shublarz)

"Stop joking. Truthfully, even if I'm by myself I would be fine" (Marione)

“That is right, head towards your majesty Shublarz-dono” (Ornoth)

“Understood~” (Shublarz)

Shublarz left the two of them there and headed towards Eveam’s direction.

## Chapter 130 The Bitter Taste of Victory

---

As Lenion channels his spell, he opens his eyes as a fierce windstorm surrounds him.

However, the two people present is firmly rooted to the ground, without being blown off by his windstorm. Lenion intends to use an attack stronger than awhile ago. So this time, he directs his sword towards the sky, and what appears are numerous tornadoes in the sky.

“It was not my intention to destroy this country, but now that it has come to this, I’ll blow everything away!” (Lenion)

If a tornado that can engulf a whole house were to descend upon the country, then the whole region turning into a wasteland wouldn’t be an impossible feat.

“Be blown away! 《Devastating Tornado》 ” (Lenion)

But he was not able to swing down the raised sword.

“...Gah!?” (Lenion)

Lenion began breathing heavily. His face grimaces when he felt an excruciating pain coming from his abdomen. Clenching his teeth, he stares at the person who prevented his attack.

It was Ornoth. With his blinding speed, he was able to close the distance, thus appeared before Lenion. Ornoth had grasped Lenion’s arm with his left hand to prevent the sword from being swung down and then punched Lenion’s gut with his right.

Although Ornoth used a normal attack, the impact was enough to shake the core of Lenion’s body. If Lenion did not manage to skillfully evade that attack, the attack would have caused irrevocable damage to his body

“Impossible...What power-?!...” (Lenion)

One of Lenion’s eyes closes as his face becomes distorted due to pain.

“I won’t let you harm this country” (Ornoth)

Ornoth says calmly as strength fades from Lenion’s arm and the sword falls to the ground. At the same time the swarm of tornadoes in the sky begin to disappear one by one.

“Da...Damnitt!!!” (Lenion)

Although Lenion thrusts out his fist to attack Ornoth, his attack was easily grabbed

“Go to sleep, Gabranth prince” (Ornoth)

Ornoth was about to deal the final blow when he involuntarily jumped away as he sensed an intense blood lust coming from the sky.

Cut,cut,cut,cut!

A bird feather with sharp edges pierced the ground where Ornoth formerly was.

He looks up to see the one responsible for the attack.

Flap, flap, flap, flap!

A human shaped figure was seen in the sky fluttering both of it's arms like wings as they descend down from the sky

It flies to the unconscious Lenion and carries him.

“...Ba...rid...?” (Lenion)

Lenion realizes that Barid came to help

“Oh, are you perhaps one of the 《Three warriors》 , 《Birdman》 Barid? If I remember correctly your other name is... 《Thunder Lord》 Barid isn't it?” (Ornoth)

Ornoth stares at Barid in front of him, whose appearance is completely that of a bird-man.

“...It isn't just me” (Barid)

“What?” (Ornoth)

When Barid says so, the area was instantly covered with ice.

“This is...!?” (Ornoth)

Not just Ornoth, but Marione as well knits his eyebrows and becomes cautious. At the same time, a big lump of ice begins to bulge near Lenion and Barid.

Crack,crack,crack,crack

Suddenly, the lump of ice cracks open and inside it is a child with a small stature. She shows herself wearing what seems to be a white bear costume. However its purposes are unknown.

Ornoth narrows his eyes as he observes the back-up that has arrived and says

“This is...I see, This ice, it’s from you isn’t it 《Ice Shade》 ? I believe your name was.... Putis”

However, their reaction showed neither affirmation nor negation.

“If the 《Dark Night》 Crouch was here it would complete this magnificent view”  
(Marione)

“I say the same words to you, We, as part of the 《Three Warriors》 are the ones that would bring you down. ”(Barid)

When Barid says those words, Ornoth and his companion widened their eyes a little. If what he says is true, Crouch would then have to be defeated and captured

“I see. If that is so then Her Majesty is doing well” (Ornoth)

In truth, rather than Eveam it was actually because of Hihiro’s efforts that things did not turn bad. However, Ornoth obviously does not fully comprehend Hihiro’s existence but at the very least, he understood that Eveam was saved from the explosion and he decided that Aquinas would probably know what had happened.

“It seems you came to rescue your prince, I’m Afraid we’ll have to capture all of you” (Ornoth)

Seeing the enemy’s number increase by 2, Marione himself joined the fray as he let his body be filled with magic power

“.... I won’t let you do that” (Barid)

When Barid said those words, ice spreads out and hardens underneath Ornoth and Marione’s feet depriving their movements. In addition, the ice gradually extends to their upper body.

“Wha?!.....haa!” (Ornoth)

Ornoth crushes the ice that was restraining his body’s lower half. Marione follows Ornoth’s lead and does the same. They immediately prepare for battle, with their eyes set in front, focusin on Barid and the others. And as they are about to dash towards their enemy, they halted.

It is because in an instant Barid and the others are covered in ice.

“Wha, what the...!?” (Ornoth)

Ornoth cries out but, Barid calmly says

“We’ll finish our fight later” (Barid)

Crack!

Ornoth and Marione tries to break open the ice, however the inside was empty.

“Shit!” (Ornoth)

“Tsk. This is why it is better that we got rid of them rather than capturing them.”  
(Marione)

Marione clenches his teeth out of frustration. It seems that the Gabranth’s had escaped the place. But this was expected as it is reckless to fight two people from 《Cruel》 while carrying a seriously injured prince

“...It can’t be helped. Marione-dono, are you alright?” (Ornoth)

“Shut up” (Marione)

As soon as he shouts this Marione begins walking towards another direction. Ornoth manages to let out a small sigh and shrugs his shoulders, then tilts his head to the direction of the town.

(This place marks the victory for the Evila)

However there is another place in trouble. Seeing that the 《Three Warriors》 withdrew from the front lines the other Gabranth would most probably withdraw as well, but even so there are still the Humas soldiers left.

In addition, they failed their objective of securing the prince. The aftertaste of winning turned out to be bad.

(We can’t let our guard down again. But I’m worried about those other guys as well)

He was talking about the four young people. He remembered that before the young guy wearing a red robe vanished he talked to the four heroes and left them trembling afterwards.



## Chapter 131 Ornoth VS The Four Heroes

---

Author's note: This time the story will be told from the Heroes' perspective. The story from when Hihiro went to the Conference. (TL: events simultaneous with Chapter 118)

---

"He....teleported? Child, do you know where did that person head off to?" (Ornoth)

Ornoth asked the disciple of the one who had just teleported. But Hihiro's disciple, Nikki, covered her mouth using both hands while she shut her eyes tight..

"Hmmm....You're called Nikki, am I right? Why are you doing that?" (Ornoth)

"Nnnnnnnnnnnnnnnnnnn!" (Nikki)

".....Do you really not know?" (Ornoth)

Then, Nikki opened her eyes wide and brought her hands to her waist.

"Like I said! Shishou told me that I shouldn't say anything!" (Nikki)

"Hmm...I see" (Ornoth)

Ornoth kept silent as he thought he shouldn't ask anymore if that was the case. His pride wouldn't allow him to forcefully extract information simply due to such a child's antics. While he was bothered by Hihiro, he also was bothered by the heroes.

Certainly, when they had been heading to the conference, they had confirmed the existences of the heroes on the [Mutich Bridge]. There, he had witnessed the four heroes and an encampment of [Humas] soldiers.

That being the case, Ornoth felt that he first had to unravel the mystery as to why they were here. And so Ornoth approached the heroes.

Upon sensing the overwhelming aura of the approaching wolf-faced man, the hero Aoyama Taishi began to step backwards. However, Ornoth thought to himself that he couldn't let them escape and with blinding speed, he placed himself behind the heroes.

"Wha!??" (Taishi)

Sensing Ornoth behind them, Taishi and the rest looked behind as their legs gave out once more and their faces became pale and feverish.

".....First off, allow me to ask." (Ornoth)

“Wha-,wha-, what is it!” (Taishi)

Taishi cried out partially out of desperation. While it may have been out of reflex, he stood up and lowered his waist as he pulled out his sword and took a battle stance.

(His waist is completely falling out on him....is he really the hero from that time?)

At the very least, Marione and Greyald had hurled bloodlust at the heroes at that time. However, even under such a situation, they had remained composed. Based on that, Ornoth had judged them to probably be quite strong, yet compared to then, the current heroes seemed to be completely different people.

I just want to ask you about what happened. Well, as for what will happen to you all after I finish asking, I will not forgive you if you intend on harming our side.

He hit them with a glance that oozed a hint of bloodlust. Taishi’s face turned pale and his body began to shake, yet his hands didn’t let go of his sword.

“Yo-You’re saying...?” (Taishi) (TL: Yeah I know its long but I don’t think Ornoth was trying to tell a story)

“First off I want to ask, are you people really the heroes?”(Ornoth)

“O-o-o-o-o-o-of course we are! We are the Summoned Heroes of 【Victorias】 !”  
(Taishi)

“I really can’t believe that” (Ornoth)

“Wha-What did you say!?” (Taishi)

“When talking about the heroes, they are the Humas’ trump card, their saviors. If that is so then why are those heroes here,trembling at the very center of the enemy territory?”  
(Ornoth)

Ornoth’s words stabbed deeply into their hearts. Savior, the glimmer of hope. In the past, such a person summoned to Edea, had saved the [Humas] from calamity and was worshipped and respected, as a result, by many people.

Courageous, unyielding, with an arm of justice and a heart of compassion. These were the weapons that the brave ones used to fight. Even so, currently not a single one of those qualities could be applied to the current heroes.

Taishi and the others looked down in a dejected manner. Looking at them, Ornoth let out a weak sigh.

“Well, it doesn’t matter whether or not you guys are the heroes. You aren’t needed in this place” (Ornoth)

“...Eh?” (???)

“It’s because, you people came here to lay waste to this country, isn’t that right?”

“Th-that’s...” (???)

“In that case, then I, as a defender of this country, must eliminate you.” (Ornoth)

“A...” (???)

“Additionally, if you all are truly the heroes, all the more reason for me to kill you here for the sake of the [Evila].” (Ornoth)

Ornoth’s bloodlust increased further. Seeing Ornoth slowly approach them, Taishi twitched and reflexively-

“uuuuuuuooooooooo!” (Taishi)

-charged forward whilst swinging his sword.

“Ta-Taishi doooooon’t!!” (?????)

It was as if her voice never reached him, as it seemed he had no intention of stopping his advance.

“...how foolish” (Ornoth)

Ornoth stood still while he gazed at the charging Taishi. And at the moment when it seemed that Taishi’s sword had caught him,

Whoosh!

Ornoth easily dodged by tilting his body sideways.

“You! You! You! You! Yoouuu!!” (Taishi)

Taishi attacked with his sword again and again, but was incapable of grazing Ornoth by even a single millimeter. His movements were completely being read.

“That idiot! He’s completely lost it!” (Chika)

It could have been due to Taishi’s unexpected actions, but Chika, who had managed to regain some composure, similarly drew her sword and took a battle stance.

“Chika-chi!?” (Shinobu)

Akamori Shinobu saw that Chika was planning to fight and instantly raised her voice.

“Shinobu...Please take care of Shuri!” (Chika)

Chika sent a glance towards the still trembling Shuri Minamoto, who had not let out a single voice even now. Her words had the meaning of entrusting the protection of Shuri as well included into them. She then kicked the ground in pursuit of Taishi.

“Wa-Wait Chika-chi!” (Shinobu)

Shinobu also wanted to provide assistance, but couldn’t leave Shuri behind by herself. Shinobu held Shuri’s shoulders but was at a loss for words when she felt her temperature. Shuri’s face was pale and her skin was cold as if it was devoid of blood.

“It’s going to be okay Shuri-chi” (Shinobu)

“Shi-Shinobu...san” (Shuri)

Her trembling lips finally moved, but it seemed that she was at her limit of staying conscious. Even so, Shinobu couldn’t abandon her in such a dangerous situation.

Because she was her friend. But as she watched the backs of the two who were fighting, she once again heard the sounds of explosions and smelt the smell of blood as she thought,

(Did we make...a mistake) (Shinobu)

She repeated the question, answer to which didn’t appear within her again and again.

As for Ornoth, even though his opponents had increased to two people, he remained unscathed. Their movements were undeniably fast. Their levels were also considerably high. It might even be alright to say *as expected of heroes*.

But they were completely lacking in experience. Or rather, even though they should be on a battlefield, their blades only contained fear.

The desire to win against one’s opponents and the resolve to kill one’s opponents. They completely lacked such feelings that were absolutely necessary in a battlefield. You can’t simply swing your blade about just because you are scared. Blades without such beliefs couldn’t possibly reach one of the Evila’s greatest war portentials, Ornoth.

(And rather than the boy, the girl seems to show more promise.) (Ornoth)

As he continued to dodge their attacks, Ornoth glanced at Chika. Compared to Taishi’s sword, hers was more precise and contained a more powerful conviction. She likely wanted to save him. Her strong desire to protect was likely weakening her hesitation, but sadly, her lack of experience prevented her from being able to give Ornoth even a single wound.

“Shit! Shit! Shiiit! Why can’t I hit anything!?” (Taishi)

It was because he continued to swing his word around thoughtlessly. However, Taishi did not understand that at all.

“Calm down Taishi!” (Chika)

“How can I calm down!? If we lose we’ll die! I...I cannot die in a place like this” (Taishi)

“Ta-Taishi...” (Chika)

“Tha-that’s why” (Taishi)

Taishi glared at Ornoth with an incredibly upset expression. As he did so, an absurd amount of magic power began to gather in his right hand. Naturally, Ornoth noticed this and was taken aback.

Then Taishi’s right hand began to shine.

“Disappear! Shinesp.....!??”

He turned his right hand towards Ornoth and attempted to use magic, but a leg kicked that right hand from below.

\*creak\*

The sound of a bone cracking resounded out, as his right hand was kicked up towards the sky. The moment he grasped that arm, however-

\*Thud!\*

A fist was thrust into the pit of his stomach.

“Gah!”

“Taishii! Youu!” (Chika)

Chika attempted to attack the close-by Ornoth, but he easily dodged and retreated.

“uu...guh..!?” (Taishi)

“Taishi hang on!” (Chika)

Chika rushed to Taishi who was holding his stomach while crouching. Looking at the two, Ornoth calmly spoke.

“There are generally two methods to activate magic. Either one must speak the name of the magic, or use magic which does not need to be named. It seems that his magic is of the former type and must be spoken or else it won’t activate. Originally, magic was mostly used for long-distance battles. If you carelessly attempt to use it in this kind of close-combat situation, that is what happens.” (Ornoth)

While he didn't know whether the groaning Taishi could hear him or not, Ornoth continued to speak.

"Seeing as you tried to use light magic, while it seems you all are the heroes, you are completely lacking in experience. It is amazing that they had the audacity to send you all the way to this battlefield. Anyone with a certain degree of combat experience should be capable of knowing that it's still too early to send you all to the battlefield just by looking at you, but.....why did the king not stop you? There's no way that the soldiers wouldn't have advised against it as it was too early for you all." (Ornoth)

Upon hearing those words, Chika said "Eh?" and stared at Ornoth.

## Chapter 132 The Separated Heroes

---

“Your levels do appear to be quite high but....you know, the battlefield isn’t a playground. With that degree of resolve, do you really think that you’ll really be able to return safely? From what I’ve seen, you don’t appear to have even seen people die before?” (Ornoth)

“.....” (Chika)

Chika froze as though she was at a loss for words.

“Or could it be that the king who sent you all simply treated you as pawns to be thrown away?” (Ornoth)

“Th-there’s no way that could be true!” (Chika)

She vehemently raised her voice in denial.

“Then why are you here? It should be easy to figure out so long as you think about it a little right? Exactly what would happen if all of you were sent here. Honestly speaking, for all of you who are unaccustomed to being soldiers, what other reason is there for the king to send you here?” (Ornoth)

To Ornoth, that was an honest question. Yet, to Chika, it was one that gave her an extreme shock. Now that he mentioned it, just why did King Rudolf elect to send them, who had never killed a person before, along with the small battalion here?

If he truly wanted to assault the 【Demon Capital】 , then he should have prepared a greater force. It wasn’t like they had completely trusted the beastmen either. Even so, why did he send such a small number of people here?

*I don’t get it! I don’t get it! No matter how much I think about it, I don’t get it!* (Chika)

“Chi.....ka.....” (Taishi)

It was Taishi’s voice who pulled her confused self back to reality. Thanks to the pain, he had become somewhat calmer. Yet, based on his expression, it could be derived that he would no longer perform any reckless attacks.

“Taishi! Are you alright?” (Chika)

“Ah, yeah. My stomach hurts but.....he probably was holding back.” (Taishi)

“Eh?” (Chika)

Taishi held his stomach as he glanced towards Ornoth.

“He didn’t use his full power at all. Probably.....his level is way higher than ours. Not only that, but I feel that he specializes in physical attacks.” (Taishi)

“Hou, unlike before, that’s a good analysis.” (Ornoth)

Ornoth was impressed with Taishi for the first time. To be able to see through his opponent’s physical capabilities after receiving just a single hit, Ornoth felt that it truly was as expected of one holding the title of ‘hero’.

“Magic is not your only weapon. I, at least, can understand that.” (Taishi)

Looking carefully, Ornoth’s body was dangerously ripped. Taishi understood that he had simply thrust his fist at him, but it had felt as though he had been hit with steel. Having trained and forged his body, as soon as he had regained his composure, Taishi had become capable of analyzing that in his head.

“Now then, if you obediently surrender then your lives, at least, will be spared. But if you plan to continue resisting any longer, then as one of the 《Cruel》, I will see you all to hell.” (Ornoth)

His terrible force of intent sent a shock rippling through him. Having become calm, Taishi once again realized what a monster-like existence the person in front of him was.

(Even so, if we were all to join forces we could beat him.....but) (Taishi)

Indeed, at the very least, currently the only ones who could fight were Chika and himself. If they fought seriously, then they should at least be able to wound him, but as expected, to defeat him, magic was essential. However, even if they tried to use magic, Ornoth would likely stop the two of them.

That was exactly why it was necessary for Shinobu and co. to cover them from a distance, but that too would be too much to wish for.

“Ta-Taishi.....” (Chika)

Chika looked at him anxiously. He didn’t know if she was thinking about the same thing as him, but, at the very least she seemed to feel that they had no chances of winning if they fought here.

Taishi closed his eyes and thought for a bit. And just as he opened his eyes determinedly and was about to speak,

“I found you, 《Cruelllllllllll》 !” (Lenion)

The one who suddenly appeared was Lenion, the second prince from the 【Gabranth Capital: Passion】. Not only that, but he appeared to already be in battle stance as a large tornado was being produced from the tip of his sword.



“Defeating the 《Cruel》 here will bring me another step closer to becoming the strongest!” (Lenion)

Lenion brandished his sword and swung it down towards Ornoth. Taishi and co. were also nearby, but it seemed that he didn’t take the slightest notice of them.

As the tornado left his sword, the area was attacked by a gale.

“Kuh!” (Ornoth)

Ornoth immediately attempted to evade it, but the tornado didn’t stop. A wind containing vacuum blades began to attack Taishi and co.

“Uwaaaaahhh!?” (Taishi)

“Kyaaaaaa!?” (Chika)

Taishi and Chika, who took it straight on, were swallowed by the tornado and sent flying outside of the capital. And then, the ones who were a little distance away, Shinobu and Shuri, similarly received some damage.

The two of them were blown away by the wind and crashed into a building wall. Ornoth continued to dodge Lenion’s continuous stream of attacks as he ran somewhere else.

What remained was Nikki, who had hidden in a building unnoticed, and the two injured girls who had been blown away by the wind.

“C-Could it be that they have d-died?” (Nikki)

As Nikki quietly approached the two of them to check, Shinobu’s body twitched. Nikki also twitched in surprise, but became relieved after seeing that they were still alive. They wouldn’t be happy seeing the corpses of young girls like them.

“Uu.....o-oww.....” (Shinobu)

As she rubbed her waist, it seemed that she was still conscious as she raised her torso.

“Wh-what was that all about geez.....you okay, Shuri-cci?” (Shinobu)

She glanced at the Shuri, who was lying on her side, as she said that. In the next instant, Shinobu’s eyes opened wide. The reason being that quite a bit of blood could be seen coming from Shuri’s head. It appeared that she had hit her head when crashing into the wall. She was also unconscious.

It might be expected that the worst possible situation would occur.

“Shuri-cci!” (Shinobu)

“Ahh, you mustn’t do that!” (Nikki)

“Eh?” (Shinobu)

As Nikki suddenly called out to stop her, she reflexively twitched and froze.

“When they’ve hit their head, it’s better not to randomly move them about, is what Shishou told me!” (Nikki)

Raising their index finger, Nikki explained as their ahoge swayed from side to side.

“Shishou....you mean Okamura-cchi?” (Shinobu)

“Okamura-cchi? Is that some kind of spell?” (Nikki)

Nikki asked as they cutely tilted their head to the side.

“Ah, sorry. Umm, I mean Hihiro Okamura.” (Shinobu)

“Ohh, that’s right! So you knew Shishou!” (Nikki)

They smiled happily. Shinobu reflexively smiled back, but her expression darkened as she did so.

“That’s true, but I can’t just let her sleep here like this.....” (Shinobu)

“Then how about having her rest a bit in the inn over there?” (Nikki)

“.....excuse me?” (Shinobu)

Nikki pointed towards the inn that Hihiro came out of.

“We should put a towel on her head and neck to be safe, but I don’t think there should be any problems if we carry her slowly. From what I can see, there is some bleeding, but her breathing seems to be steady after all.” (Nikki)

Shinobu stared dumbly as Nikki spoke smoothly and took a towel out from her bosom.

“Hm? What’s wrong?” (Nikki)

“Eh? Ah, no, it’s just, I was wondering if you really were a child.” (Shinobu)

Certainly, for them to be that knowledgeable, it was difficult to see Nikki as a child.

“Mufufu~ even though I look like this, I’m an adult!” (Nikki)

Having felt that they were complimented, Nikki’s chest swelled.

“Heh, how old are you?” (Shinobu)

“I’m 10!” (Nikki)

“.....you’re a child.” (Shinobu)

“Mumuu! It’s mean to treat me like a child!” (Nikki)

“Ahh, sorry, my bad. Then like an adult.....umm, your name was Nikki right?” (Shinobu)

“It’s Nikki! For those close to me, I don’t mind if they call me Ni-cchan either!” (Nikki)

“Alright, then it’s Ni-cchi!” (Shinobu)

“.....umm, were you listening to what I was saying?” (Nikki)

Having been called 'Ni-cchi' even though they said to call them 'Nikki', Nikki became dejected.

"Maa maa, don't mind the small details! For now, help me carry Shuri-cchi." (Shinobu)

"This is also a way of saving people! Leave it to me!" (Nikki)

And so, the two of them carried Shuri to the inn.

---

\*Author's Note: Next time, Hiiro will be lecturing them.

# KONJIKI NO WORD MASTER

---

## Chapter 133 The Preaching Hiiro

---

Hiiro: 「.....Oi, what's the meaning of this?」

Currently, Hiiro had just returned to the inn where he was staying at. Eveam had told him that because the 『Gabranth』 had unanimously retreated back to their country, they would be capable of somehow dealing with the rest by themselves. As Eveam had asked Hiiro to wait because she would contact him upon the completion of the process, Hiiro had returned. Yet.....

For some reason, in his very own room, there were two strangers that Hiiro had neither conversed with nor looked directly at before. One of them was currently occupying the bed he slept in. The other was currently treating the wounds sustained by their body with healing magic.

Even though he could not see them well, Hiiro knew them. The two strangers were two of the four heroes. Although he couldn't remember their names, Hiiro was not mistaken. Why were these two here? Also, what happened to the other two? He began to make an inquiry towards the one that had created this situation.

Hiiro: 「Give me an explanation, Baka-Deshi<sup>(1)</sup>.」

He grabbed Nikki by the neck in a manner similar to lifting up a cat.

Nikki: 「Uu~<sup>(2)</sup> Please forgive me desu zoo~<sup>(3)</sup>. I forgot to mention it desu zoo~」

The one who was floating in midair dejectedly was Nikki. As she saw that, Mikazuki merrily laughed. 「Ba~ka Ba~ka, you got scolded~」 <sup>(4)</sup>. Although Hiiro heard Mikazuki say this almost as if cursing Nikki, he simply ignored it for now.

From what Nikki said, at the time when Hiiro returned from the conference location, Nikki felt that they had something important that they had to communicate to Hiiro. Yet,

due to an exchange with Mikazuki, Nikki appeared to have completely forgotten about it.

As he received Nikki's explanation as to how this situation had come about, Hiiro involuntarily began to hold his temples.

Hiiro: 「I see. That would mean that as they were caught up by the tornado user's attack, the other two were sent flying, huh?」

Shinobu: 「A-ano<sup>(5)</sup>, Okamura-cchi?」

Hiiro: 「Shut up for a bit.」

Shinobu: 「Ah.....un<sup>(6)</sup>.」

As Hiiro flatly cut off Akamori Shinobu who was trying to enter the conversation between him and Nikki, Shinobu, who had seen and understood that Hiiro was in a foul mood, remained silent.

Hiiro: 「What happened to Aka-Loli?<sup>(7)</sup>」

Nikki: 「Ah, about that. As she said she was going to go and pick up the Hentai<sup>(8)</sup> group, she went away somewhere desu zo!」

Hiiro: 「.....haa, this is really a pain.」

Although it seemed like she was going to pick up her companions that haven't come back yet, it was no different than just running away because she didn't want to deal with babysitting Nikki and Mikazuki.

As he scratched his head while expressing grief, Hiiro sent his gaze towards the one sleeping in his bed, Minamoto Shuri. Following this, he spat out a light sigh before directing his face towards Shinobu. She returned his gaze with uneasy eyes.

Hiiro: 「As it can't be helped now I'll lend you the bed. Just get out once it becomes night, alright?」

As he coldly shot out those words, Hiiro turned on his heels and tried to leave the room, yet, Shinobu hastily raised her voice.

Shinobu: 「Ah, w-wait a sec!」

Hiiro: 「Ah?」

Shinobu: 「Eh.....ah, you know.....you really are Okamura-cchi<sup>(9)</sup>.....right?」

Hiiro: 「What of it?」

As Hiiro was currently taking the form of an 『Imp』, her confusion was not unreasonable. However, from what Shinobu could tell, his voice, physique, and even his attitude clearly belonged to Okamura Hiiro himself.

Shinobu: 「I'm so sorry-!」

Hiiro: 「.....」

Hiiro expressionlessly stared at Shinobu who had suddenly lowered her head with great momentum in apology.

Shinobu: 「I know that you have no obligation to listen to my request! But besides Okamura-cchi, I don't have anyone else I can rely on!」

Hiiro: 「.....」

Shinobu: 「Since there's so many 『Evilas』 around here, we can't carelessly leave here.....that's why.....」

Hiiro: 「Please shelter us for a while.....is basically what you're getting at, right?」

As Shinobu's shoulders trembled, she gently raised her face.

Shinobu: 「.....can't you.....do it?」

After staring at her eyes for a while, Hiiro let out a sigh.

Hiiro: 「Look here, you guys are the enemy that came to attack this place, you know? In addition, although it's due to a request, I'm currently placed in a position where I have to protect this country. What kind of nerve do you have to be able to ask such a thing?」

Hiiro was truly amazed. It seemed that she did not understand her current position at all.

Hiiro: 「You guys are heroes, right? You are the saviors summoned by the 『Humas』 in order to destroy the 『Evila』. Yet, you guys are asking 'since we can't fight anymore, can we please live here until our wounds heal?'. You really have quite some nerve.」

As she could not say anything in the face of Hiiro's bitter words, Shinobu bit her lower lip.

Hiiro: 「In the first place, didn't you guys think something was strange? For example, the reason why a group of carefree, game brains like you were sent to the battlefield」

Shinobu: 「.....eh?」

Apparently, they were still unaware.

Hiiro: 「.....haa, you guys are merely discarded pawns.」

Shinobu: 「S-such a thing can't be true!」

Hiiro: 「Nope, I confirmed it directly with the King.」

Shinobu: 「Heh? You say directly but how.....」

Although Hiiro was in this country, Shinobu did not know when he had confirmed it as she wore a blank look.

Hiiro: 「That stupid king, he didn't deny it you know? I mean, when I told him that you guys were discarded pawns.」

Shinobu: 「.....i-it can't be.....」

Hiiro: 「Actually, how were you guys able to put your trust in such a king? A king that sacrifices his own daughters can't possibly be a just king.」

Shinobu: 「.....-!？」

Impact ran through Hiiro's words. It was as if Shinobu had been beaten over the head with a hammer.

Hiiro: 「In addition, there's no magic that will send us back in this world.」

Shinobu: 「.....he? There isn't?」

Hiiro: 「That's right.」

Shinobu: 「T-there's no way! I mean, the King even said that the Demon Lord knows it!」

Hiiro: 「Did you really believe that? Stop and think about it. Why would the Demon Lord know of it? Suppose that they did know it, why would the 『Humas』 who know summoning magic not know it?」



Shinobu: 「T-that's.....」

Hiiro: 「Besides, have you guys read any of the literature and books of this world?」

Shinobu: 「Books.....?」

Hiiro: 「Although it's written that the summoned heroes certainly saved the 『Humas』, no matter which book you read, none of them say that the heroes returned to their original world.」

As if she had received an incredible shock, Shinobu did not blink as she was rendered petrified. Following this, her face gradually grew pale.

Hiiro: 「You guys, ever since we came here over half a year ago, what exactly have you guys been doing?」

Shinobu: 「.....」

Hiiro: 「At any rate, you probably completed missions as instructed by the King, faced off against great opponents, and enjoyed every single day in the castle, am I wrong?」

As Shinobu recalled the past, due to the fact that it was exactly as Hiiro had indicated, Shinobu swallowed. Upon seeing such behaviour, Hiiro simply shook his head in disgust.

Hiiro: 「As I thought. As long as you walked on the rail laid out before you at the instructed pace, you thought that you would win the war? Aren't you guys severely underestimating this world?」

Shinobu: 「Ah.....」

Hiiro: 「Have you guys ever tried to leave on an adventure by yourself even if it was just once? Have you nearly been killed by a monster? Have you cut down a person with your very own hands? Have you killed?」

Shinobu: 「Uu.....」

Hiiro: 「There's absolutely no way that a dog tenderly raised in a comfortable environment would come out unscathed after being thrown out onto the battlefield of feral beasts and rabid dogs.」

As Shinobu had been unable to stand any longer, her knees buckled.

Hiiro: 「The king was most likely aware, you know. The fact that you were a useless bunch that was incapable of killing people. That's why he turned you into disposable pawns in this war. In the event that you guys were to die in this war, the King would use that as a reason to fuel the people's anger and spark further war. Something along those lines.」

Shinobu: 「Lies.....」

Hiiro: 「The heroes fought with all their might. However, the 『Evila』 used cowardly methods to deceive and kill them. Can we allow such a thing? To dispel the regrets of those deceased heroes, everyone shall take their revenge for them.....saying something like that, he would have handled your deaths as the detonator.」

Shinobu: 「.....that can't be.....if that's the case, all that we've been doing up until now.....」

As if she were expressing disbelief, Shinobu held both hands to her cheeks and made an expression filled with despair.

Hiiro: 「Well, although your misfortune was mainly caused due to the fact that no one around you had been aware of this, it's normally something that one would notice, you know. That country's dubiousness, I mean. That's why I left.」

Shinobu: 「N-No way! If that's so, at that time, wouldn't it have been fine if you had told us!」

Hiiro: 「Don't be so fucking naive.」

Shinobu: 「Uu.....」

As she was assaulted by a gaze infused with killing intent, Shinobu was overwhelmed.

Hiiro: 「It's something that anyone would understand if they thought about it a little. Anyway, you guys were in high spirits, right? This is a game-like world and we're heroes. There's nothing to be afraid of.....or something to that effect.」

Shinobu: 「Ah.....」

Hiiro: 「That's why you guys didn't notice anything strange as you enthusiastically thought that things would somehow work out. Without properly looking at any of the uncertainties, you followed the words of a stranger as you lived your daily lives. This is the consequence you received due to living in such a dangerous world without a single care.」

Shinobu: 「Uu.....」

Hiiro: 「This world is not as accommodating as games. Although you may be heroes, this world is not so easy as to let you become saviours without doing anything. The current situation is the result that your naivety has invited.」

Shinobu: 「T-that might be true, but.....」

Rather than being unable to accept the situation, Hiiro saw that Shinobu did not want to accept it.

Hiiro: 「.....when that foolish king spoke of return magic, I was certain that you two, unlike the other stupid duo, held slight doubt on your faces. However, it appears that I was simply mistaken.」

As Hiiro continued to talk, he continued to recall the events that occurred when he was

summoned.

Alt: Following this, during the time King Rudolf spoke of return magic- no, even up until the point where he spoke of others returning to their own world, he had arranged his sophistry infused words, his speech implying that those worlds did not exist. During this time, Hiiro remembered that, at the very least, Shinobu and Shuri's themselves wore expressions that seemed to hold doubt towards those words.

Shinobu: 「T-that's.....」

As Hiiro saw Shinobu hang her head, wearing a downcast expression that indicated it was hard for her to speak, he was utterly convinced.

Hiiro: 「At any rate, you probably held these thoughts, right? 'Although I'm not sure if it's a lie or not, since there's magic that brought us to this world, there must be magic that can send us back home'.」

Shinobu: 「.....-!？」

Hiiro: 「In addition, after obtaining the title of heroes and being placed in this fantasy world, you guys were so ecstatic that you simply disregarded such critical doubt. 'It will somehow work out. We have four friends on our side. As long as we look out for each other, we'll someday return to our original world'.....or something like that.」

In the face of Hiiro's words, Shinobu's mouth stiffened. The fact that sweat gradually began to flow from her forehead demonstrated that Hiiro's words had completely hit the nail on the head.

Hiiro: 「Although there was no conclusive evidence whatsoever to support such thoughts, you guys merely suppressed such considerable doubts. Should I just say it bluntly? It's not an exaggeration to say that this situation was brought about by the both of you, the one sleeping in the bed included.」

Shinobu: 「T-that's.....」

Hiiro: 「Even if the slightest doubt floated into your mind, if you discussed it with the other two, then you would have been able to hold doubt towards the king's actions. The two of you who didn't do so have brought about this result due to your naive situational decision making. Your foolishness is so deep that it's astonishing.」

The reason why Shinobu said nothing in response to Hiiro's words was because she understood that what Hiiro was saying was right. Certainly, if she had voiced her doubts at that time, she might have been able to create an opportunity for the four of them to have a discussion.

At the very least, there was the possibility of being pulled out from the stupidity of not realising anything up until this very moment. However, she - no, as Shuri was also included, they, as Hiiro had indicated, were elated by the bright future before them, forgetting any of the small discrepancies that may have appeared.

Without knowing that those doubts would influence their own fate, they simply avoided it. The fact that this situation was their fault was completely irrefutable.

Silence followed soon after. As Nikki and Mikazuki who were nearby realised that the current atmosphere did not warrant any unnecessary banter, they remained silent.

Shuri: 「.....we were horribly mistaken.....weren't we」

In the midst of that atmosphere, the one who had raised their voice was the one who was thought to have been asleep, Shuri.

# KONJIKI NO WORD MASTER

---

## Chapter 134 The Irritated Protagonist

---

Shinobu: 「S-Shuri-cchi!?(1)」

Shinobu involuntarily rushed towards the bed and stared at her face. As her complexion had somewhat improved compared to earlier, Shinobu felt relieved as she exhaled.

Shinobu: 「I was worried, you know.....Shuri-cchi」

Shuri: 「I'm sorry.....Shinobu-san(2)」

As she did so, Shuri attempted to lift her upper body as her face distorted in agony.

Shinobu: 「Ah, I told you that you have to rest!」

Shuri: 「No, I'm.....fine.」

Shinobu: 「Shuri-cchi.....」

Following this, as Shuri roused her upper body while ignoring Shinobu's words of restraint, she looked at Hihiro who was observing them with folded arms.

Shuri: 「You really are.....Okamura-kun(3).....am I right?」

Hihiro: 「.....fuu, will you understand if I do this?」

Then, using the spell 「Origin」 『元』, he reverted into the human Okamura Hihiro. Of course, it went without saying that the two were startled. Yet, as they understood that this was definitely the Hihiro that they knew, the two of them were somewhat convinced.

Shinobu: 「How do I say this, Okamura-cchi looks better this way.」

Hiiro: 「This is the Demon World. In order to avoid annoying disputes, isn't it obvious that taking the appearance of an 『Evila』 is better?」

As she looked at Hiiro, who spoke thus in an unfriendly manner, Shuri slightly smiled.

Shuri: 「Fufu, you're definitely Okamura-kun. Do you perhaps remember, Okamura-kun?」

Hiiro: 「Ah?」

Shuri: 「Although you said that you had no memory of ever talking to us when we were in Japan, you actually talked to me during the entrance ceremony, even if only once.」

Of course, Hiiro didn't remember any of that. Rather, Hiiro had thought that she was spouting bull shit. Although Shuri held slightly melancholic, downcast eyes, she began to move her mouth in an attempt to explain herself.

Shuri: 「Okamura-kun, after the entrance ceremony, you went straight to the library, right?」

Come to think of it, I did go there. As Hiiro thought thus, he nodded in his mind.

Shuri: 「At that time, I had also gone there. As I also enjoy reading books, I was so excited about what kind of books they would have there that I accidentally tripped over my feet.」

Hiiro: 「So you're saying that we met then?」

It seemed that he did not remember.

Shuri: 「Yes. As I was about to enter the library, you contrarily came out. At that time, as I had just knocked your shoulder, the book that you were holding fell to the floor.」

Hiiro: 「.....ah」

Hiiro gradually remembered that something like that had certainly occurred.

Shuri: 「Have you remembered? Although it was a conversation that couldn't be called one, when I picked up the book, I spoke the following. 『Do you like books?』 At that time, do you remember what kind of answer you gave me?」

Hiiro: 「.....no idea.」

Hiiro did not remember in precise detail. As she was capable of remembering such things, Hiiro expressed admiration towards Shuri.

Shuri: 「You told me this. 『It's my reason for living.』 」

Suddenly, silence assaulted the room as everyone's eyes began to focus towards Hiiro. Perhaps due to slight embarrassment, Hiiro turned his eyes towards the sky.

Hiiro: 「Did I really say such a thing? Isn't that just some bull shit?」

Shuri: 「No. Although we had only conversed to that extent, it was so simple yet complex that it left a great impression on me.」

She answered as she wore a delicate smile. 「As expected of Shishou<sup>(4)</sup> desu zo! Yo, Reincarnation of Intellectual Lust<sup>(5)</sup>!」 As Nikki had spoke while getting carried away, Hiiro's fist decided to pay them a visit. Mikazuki, who had witnessed the spectacle,



began to make fun of Nikki who had been scolded.

Hiiro: 「Haa, so? For what reason did you bring up such a story? You couldn't possibly be trying to elicit sympathy from me with that, right?」

Shuri: 「No, I simply just wanted to try and have a talk with Okamura-kun. I mean, ever since we came here, you immediately got separated from us.」

Shinobu: 「Is that so.....to think that Shuri-cchi and Okamura-cchi had such an encounter.」

Hiiro: 「Our encounter has nothing to do with this, right? At the moment, the problem is with you guys. To me, as long as you guys get out of here by night time, then that's fine with me.」

Shuri: 「.....that's right. If we impose any more than this, we'll be causing trouble for Okamura-kun after all.」

Shinobu: 「W-wait! You alright with that, Shuri-cchi!? There's no way that your condition has gotten better, right? Not to mention, even after we walk out of here, it wouldn't be strange for us to get assaulted at any time, you know?」

Shuri: 「But we still have to look for Chika and Taishi as well.」

Shinobu: 「Y-Yeah, but.....」

Certainly, they were worried about the whereabouts of the two that had been blown away. However, they were currently in, what some might call, the heart of enemy territory. Furthermore, as they were heroes, on top of being 『Humas』, it was unthinkable that they would be able to easily escape from the country under the current circumstances.

Shinobu: 「Also, Shuri-cchi. If what Hiiro says is true, then wouldn't that mean we no longer have a place to stay in the human world?」

Shuri: 「T-that's.....」

The two depressingly hung their heads. Indeed, the King had used the heroes as disposable pawns. If they were to perhaps return to him unharmed, they would simply be treated as puppets once again. The two were not so foolish as to still possess the desire to fight under the command of such a King.

Hiiro: 「I don't really care, but one of the Demon Lord's envoys are coming here soon to call me.」

???: 「Eh-!？」

The two's faces paled respectively. That was to be expected. After all, they had come this far with the intention of slaying the Demon Lord. Such a Demon Lord would undoubtedly show them no mercy. The idea of them thinking that they would be killed if found was only natural.

Nikki: 「Mumu?[\(6\)](#) Why would Shishou be called for？」

Nikki asked as they tilted their head to the side.

Mikazuki: 「Nikki is such a baka![\(7\)](#) Isn't it obvious that it's because Goshujin[\(8\)](#) is so cool mon![\(9\)](#)」

Mikazuki followed it with thus.

Nikki: 「Muu~[\(10\)](#) what do you mean by baka!? Also, I'm the one who knows the most about how cool Shishou is desu zo![\(11\)](#)」

Mikazuki: 「You're wrong mon! The one who knows best is Mikazuki da mon!」

Nikki: 「It's me desu zo!」

Mikazuki: 「Mikazuki da mon!」

\*Poka-!\* \*Poka-!\*(12)

Nikki: 「Nowa-!?(13)」

Mikazuki: 「Myu-!?(13)」

Hiiro: 「You guys go outside for a bit. You're annoying.」

As they saw Hiiro's cheeks twitch due to anger, the two rubbed their heads as they dejectedly left the room.

As Shuri had seen the three's exchange, she-

Shuri: 「You get along well, don't you?」

Hiiro: 「Have your eyes gone rotten? Those guys are my subordinates.」

Shinobu: 「Subordinates, you say.....you've really made your way up in this world, huh.....Okamura-cchi」

Hiiro: 「That's just because, unlike you guys, I haven't been playing around.」

As they were told such, they could not object. Although they wanted to believe that they were not playing around either, it was also a fact that the difference between their level of experience compared to Hiiro's was so overwhelming that one might call it embarrassing.

Hiiro: 「By the way, hurry up and decide what you're gonna do. Just to give you a warning, I won't be lending you a hand.」

Shinobu: 「B-But why?」

Hiiro: 「Because we're unrelated parties.」

As she was told thus frankly, Shinobu hardened.

Shuri: 「We were just together at that time.....we are unrelated.」

Hiiro: 「That's right. You guys and I have no relationship whatsoever. We just share the commonality of being summoned together.」

Shinobu: 「Because we're strangers.....because we're unrelated, are you saying that you don't care what happens to us?」

Her tone had become slightly infused with anger.

Hiiro: 「Aa<sup>(14)</sup>, that's right.」

Shinobu: 「No way!」

Hiiro: 「Even you guys didn't bother to wonder about how I was living in this world all by myself, right?」

Shinobu: 「T-that's.....」

Hiiro: 「The thoughts that I felt when I killed a monster that resembled a person. The fact that I had almost died while fighting a Unique Monster. Even the fact that I had used these hands to wound people, you guys didn't know anything about it, right?」

Shinobu: 「B-But isn't it only natural that we didn't know about it!?!」

Hiiro: 「Aa, of course it's natural. After all, we're unrelated.」

Shinobu: 「But that's.....」

Hihiro: 「Then are you saying that you would rush to my side over such long distances just for my sake? While you guys were sleeping and eating in the castle without a care in the world, if you had know that I was surrounded by monsters in the Demon World, are you saying that you would have rushed to my side at full speed?」

Shinobu: 「.....」

Hihiro: 「That doesn't seem to be the case, huh. If you guys possessed such benevolent thoughts, then when I said that I would live in this world by myself, you guys would have tried to stop me by using any means necessary.」

Shinobu: 「.....」

Hihiro: 「Ultimately, you guys haven't been thinking about anyone else but yourselves. Even when you were told to participate in the war, you guys didn't bother to investigate whether or not the 『Evila』 were really such an existence that had to be exterminated, right? That's because you guys didn't think about anything else but yourselves. Have you looked around this city or the Demon World? Have you ever been to the village of the 『Orchid Race』 ? Even though those guys over there have had their friends destroyed by the Humas, they have been enduring for all this time while believing that, as long as they have patience, the war will soon come to an end, you know? What about the 『Shukaara Race』 ? Did you know that they have a history of saving humans, and that they pray as they believe that, one day, humans can fall in love with 『Evila』 ? Furthermore...」

Shinobu: 「Please, enough already-!」

Hihiro: 「.....」

As Shinobu covered both of her ears, her attitude conveyed that she did not want to hear anymore.

Hihiro: 「Even so, you guys were thoughtlessly going to exterminate the 『Evila』 ? It's comical, you guys' short-sightedness. Look at your surroundings. The world is not so simple, you know. A variety of people hold various thoughts as they live their various lives. I don't know what kind of justice you guys held as you fought your way here, but, in my opinion, you guys who don't see anything are the evil ones.」

Hihiro simply opened the window and went outside. The two that had been left behind hung their heads, as if their time had stopped.

Next time, as I had said before, Hihiro will make a serious decision.

If you were to think 'Heh~ so it's come this' then that would be fortunate ww

# KONJIKI NO WORD MASTER

---

## Chapter 135 Start Of His Dreams

---

As Hihiro left the room, someone spoke to him out of the blue, while wearing an amused smile.

“You were quite the bully out there, you know? To the baby chicks who have yet to know anything of this world” (???)

“.....So you have returned” (Hihiro)

The person who called out to him was none other than Liliyn, AKA Aka-Loli

“Why do you look so irritated? Usually, you would have left them without even hearing a single word from them.” (Liliyn)

“.....I guess so.” (Hihiro)

“..... By the way, how long are you going to keep that appearance?” (Liliyn)

“Huh?” (Hihiro)

“Well as far as I’m concerned, I don’t mind it either way. Kukuku” (Liliyn)

Then, Hihiro finally remembered that he was still in his human form, which he seemed to have forgotten about , since he had become a little emotional. In regards to Liliyn, he did not have any problems about his form, as she had seen it half a year ago. And he was glad she mentioned it, things would get troublesome if he were to go out like this.

Hiiro used the character 『Change』 | 『化』 to transform into an 『Evila』 again, and went straight outside the inn. Although he did not know when they returned, outside the inn was Mikazuki, the Hentai gentleman known as Silva and the clumsy maid Shamoe.

“Nofofofofof! Well, well, it’s been a long time Hiiro-sama!” (Silva)

“I, I-i-i-i-i-i-i apologize for my long leave!” (Shamoe)

“Ah” (Hiiro)

He gave a half-hearted reply, the two people who looked at him seemed puzzled. And Silva approached Liliyn, [Did something happen? ], and then heard about the circumstances.

“I’m amazed at the cowardliness of those people from your district” (Liliyn)

Liliyn approached Hiiro as she spoke.

Hiiro inhaled and exhaled. Even he was not able to understand why he felt resentment towards those two women. Maybe because a part of his hasty inference still lingered, or maybe he just felt sick when he considered the fact of being summoned alongside such people.

He merely wanted to release the stress he was holding in from that time. Hiiro chose to tread along a dangerous road, live that way, and he found pride in it. So much that he said to them “I can live by myself.”



They were protected by the country, respected and trusted by its people, only to be betrayed by the very same people. This situation was far too similar to a tragic heroine tale, stripped of all grounds to stand on, and so for them to request for help was naturally inevitable.

Hiiro was unable to comprehend their naivety. Those words “ we need help”. They honestly believed that someone would help them just cause they asked.

They didn’t even consider the fact that there are some who would not aid them even if asked for help. Even if they shouted for help, they simply would be ignored, or their plea’s would not even be registered. But still, they did not recognize those people whom they could possibly cry for help.

They had not even experienced failure, neither despair, but the easy life for them ended now. If they didn’t change, they won’t be able to pay their bills for living that easy life they had. Hiiro never expected them to ask him for help.

“ I thought that those idiots were fools, to think they were this incompetent.” (Hiiro)

“Guess there is no helping it, those little seedlings haven’t experienced our journey. They do not understand the world we live in, not to mention the fact that we are at war right now.” (Liliyn)

Kukuku, Hiiro furrowed his eyes as he stared at the woman who was happily laughing, sighing as he thought that these guys have the same bad taste for their laughter.

“Well, just leave them be. The Demon Lord here is gentle. Even if they are found out, they won’t be killed immediately. ” (Liliyn)

Hiiro thought over Liliyn’s words. He did indeed truly felt that Eveam was an unusual

Demon Lord for a war. Showing mercy to the enemy that instigated it, even Hiiro did not understand her way of thinking. Although she said that she would use them for negotiations in the future, but to Hiiro it sounded like an excuse for not dirtying her image.

Even so, Hiiro still respected anyone's way of life. It was one of his noble virtues, that was only if the situation was at his favour. In fact, if he had simply delivered the finishing blow to Crouch that time, Crouch would not have had a chance to use his last-resort on Hiiro.

"The rulers of this world are all idiots." (Hiiro)

The 『Humas』 ruler Rudolf was a completely fool of a King. The Demon Lord was an inexperienced bunhead. Although, he had confronted the Beast King, Hiiro understood that he was nothing more than a foolish Battle Junkie.

"Kukuku, in any country, all the rulers and it's colleagues are fools. I would to establish a new country rather settle in one of [these](#).It might be good, right? You can even become a ruler yourself." (Liliyn)

"Are you kidding me? I'm not interested in that kind of thing" (Hiiro)

"Kukuku, I thought you would say that. But, frankly speaking, it's not such a bad idea, you know?" (Liliyn)

"Ha?" (Hiiro)

"Right now, none of the countries are upright. And I believe, you know the reason why it happened, right?" (Liliyn)

“The rulers are stupid....rather, the existence of races.” (Hiiro)

“ That's right, everything starts with different races getting involved in a big cat fight, the reason behind the argument being, different races refuse to recognize each other, and it gets to a point where they could not control the problem itself.” (Liliyn)

Although in olden times, everybody was struggling side by side.

“Even the current Demon Lord, she is only concerned with the well being of the 『Evila』 . Even though her mind is set on, everyone should get along. She is still focused on the wellbeing of the Evila.” (Liliyn)

“I believe that is the most natural thing to do.” (Hiiro)

Everyone prioritises their own rather than someone from another race. This is the way of life in this world.

“But what if there was a country that treated all races equally?” (Liliyn)

“...What did you just say?” (Hiiro)

When Hiiro looked back at Liliyn, she had a content look on her face.

“...Didn't I say it before? That I have an ambition.” (Liliyn)

“... Nope, I only heard it from Jii-san and Doji-maid a few times.” (Hiiro)

“ I see” (Liliyn)

Liliyn unexpectedly gazed at the clouds in the sky with a distant look in her eyes.

“This ambition.... The ambition I have for myself is....” (Liliyn)

“.....” (Hiiro)

“.....I want to establish 【A Place for all to Enjoy】 .” (Liliyn)

“ To Enjoy?” (Hiiro)

“Yeah, everyone has their own preferences right?” (Liliyn)

“Yeah.” (Hiiro)

“I want to make a place that anyone can enjoy without getting bored.” (Liliyn)

Honestly, Hiiro was surprised. Liliyn was pretty much a selfish person, he did not expect the notion of her being considerate of others.

“You bastard, you just thought of something rude, didn’t you?” (Liliyn)

“....Who knows.” (Hiiro)

He thought, this fellow is as sharp as ever.

“Okay then? What is the reason for you to establish a place like that?” (Hiiro)

“Ha? It’s because the idea itself is very interesting.” (Liliyn)

“.....Ha?” (Hiiro)

“Think about it. We are talking about the whole nation, right? 『Humas』 ,  
『Gabranth』 , 『Evila』 and 『Pheom』 gathering in one place to endeavor in pleasure  
and amusement! Such as magic tournaments, physical strength matches, wisdom  
competitions and fast eating contests. Don’t you think it’s interesting-?! “ (Liliyn)

Hiiro received the impact of her idea. Certainly, it will surely be something like a  
dream-like story in the present situation. However, if that ambition were to come true,  
Hiiro would surely want to see it happen.

“Then, I recommend a marathon and cooking showdown as well.” (Hiiro)

“OH! As to be expected from Hiiro! That is an interesting idea! I surely should surely  
reward the finest cooking that I have yet to seen yet!” (Liliyn)

Kuhaha, Hiiro glared eyed at the woman who was laughed quite happily., It was  
probably the first time Hiiro felt a sliver of respect sprout out in him for Liliyn.

“.... I see, 【A Place for all to Enjoy】 ...huh?” (Hiiro)

“Well, I thought that, it would be more interesting to let all the people live in a rather  
big land, without establishing something troublesome as a country, kuhahahaha! ”  
(Liliyn)

“.....I just realized something for the first time too.” (Hiiro)

“Hm? What do you mean?” (Liliyn)

Why did Silva and Shamoe trust Liliyn? Both of them are a existence treated as a black sheep in this world. But, after Hiiro heard Liliyn’s ambition, he understood that they might have been attracted to her and felt a glimmer of hope for their future.

Moreover, she said the whole nation.... in other words, the 『Demon Beasts』 or the taboo race of halves, and even the heretic 『Spirits』 were all the people included in this category, and Liliyn looked at them without discrimination. This was probably the reason why Silva and Shamoe were attracted to her.

“.... It’s nothing.” (Hiiro)

“Is that so? Well, leaving that aside, about my story awhile ago. Supposing that country is established, Won’t you become the King, Hiiro?” (Liliyn)

“I already told you, right? I have no interest in becoming a King” (Hiiro)

“Mu....Mu.” (Liliyn)

She sulked a little and glared at Hiiro.

“If you found a nation, then shouldn’t you be leading it?” (Hiiro)

“Why would I become such a person? It’s quite tiresome.” (Liliyn)

“Then do not force your ideals onto me, if it’s tiresome, idiot!” (Hiiro)

“EhNa?! Who is the idiot huh?!” (Liliyn)

His jaw droppedloosened his cheek a little as he glanced at the indignant face of the woman.

“But, you know..... I kind of want to see what becomes of your dream” (Hiiro)

“Hee....Ah... Is that so?” (Liliyn)

Liliyn turned her flushed face in embarrassment as she suddenly saw Hiiro’s smile.

(Interesting. The way this guy thinks is really interesting. If such place really existed, then I want to see it) (Hiiro)

However, her ambition was not something that would come to being overnight, it takes years to be established. If they managed it untactfully then Hiiro might not possibly witness it while he was still alive.

(Oh crap. I’ve began to seriously consider about perpetual youth) (Hiiro)

Although the thought of becoming inhuman is still out of the question, if possible, he wanted to see the beings of this world work hard for Olympics and sports-like events similar to the people who lived in earth.

Her idea was really interesting. He ascertained himself to become one of the judges for the cooking showdown. He had a relieved expression as he found a hope he would look forward to in the future.

However, the road would be a long and steep one, he thought as he looked around the tattered town, damaged by the war brought to the country.

However, the road would be a long and steep one. Hiiro surveyed the worn-out town caused by the war again.

“A Dream... huh?” (Hiiro)

“N? What’s wrong?” (Liliyn)

“Hm, after coming to this world, this is the first I have considered about something like a dream” (Hiiro)

“A Dream? Do you also have a dream?” (Liliyn)

“That’s rude. Besides, I told you a while ago you know?” (Hiiro)

“Eh?” (Hiiro)

“My dream is to see your dream come true with my very own eyes” (Hiiro)

“... A-Are you alright with that? That sort of dream” (Liliyn)

Hiiro never thought of the details of his dream. He only felt the trance of wanting to dream.

“I do not mind it, I only want to see it. The sort of 【Edea】 you had in mind” (Hiiro)



“I-I see..... I understand!” (Liliyn)

Liliyn who looked like an enthusiastic child expressed a full bloomed smile

“Nevertheless Aka-Loli, this path is absurdly difficult” (Hiiro)

For a moment, she stared at Hiiro’s word in puzzlement, then she immediately laughed fearlessly while she crossed her arms.

“Humph, That’s where I want to be! The word impossible is not in my dictionary! kuhahahahaha! “ (Liliyn)

“..... I see. So you are prepared for it?” (Hiiro)

“Of course!” (Liliyn)

“Then, I will lend a hand as well” (Hiiro)

Thereupon, Liliyn became flabbergasted. She did not expect that Hiiro would be so quick on deciding to help her.

For this reason, she had been worried on how she would coerce him in the future, as she usually hardens on the thought of persuading him, which made her dodge the thought unintentionally. But due to his words, she couldn’t help but think that Hiiro was quite a strange guy.

“That’s natural! Y-you are after all my possession! It’s natural that you would help me!”  
(Liliyn)

Although Liliyn thrust her fingers at him, she was undeniably glad from the bottom of her heart as a smile starts spilling over her face. She frantically tried to hide her embarrassment by shouting.

“Don’t joke around. This is received to the last as a request. The compensation is hmm..... How about freedom at that place?” (Hiiro)

“D-Did you say Freedom?..... What are you planning?” (Liliyn)

“I’m not sure. Should I let you know? Or maybe I shouldn’t?” (Hiiro)

“Mumuu..... Eei! Do not make light of me! Even I can give freedom to such a place!”  
(Liliyn)

“Heh, then promise established” (Hiiro)

Even if she were make an excuse later, he could show this memory using the character 『映』 | 『Project』 . And if she still refused to agree then he would use his 《Word Magic》 on her to forcibly listen.

Actually, when he first came to this country, rather, when he started traveling with Liliyn, everything had been really good. He did not think that, he would find a dream to fulfill through it.

Of course he dreamt of touring around 【Edea】 , but if he was pushed to say then, that was just Hiiro’s extra innings that can be addressed as a hobby.

This dream of Hiiro was, indeed, boundlessly difficult in this world. However, he had made up his mind that he would realize his dream without fail.

(Therefore, while I support Aka-Loli, I must do something about this war first...) (Hiiro)

Yes, a certain resolution was essential for Hiiro's dream. And that would be to end the quarrel between the three countries or to lead them to a new direction. He understood that it would be difficult due to the danger it imposed. Still, he decided to do something about it despite all the difficulties.

(That is right, I should do what I have to do. For that reason, I can do nothing but work without rubbing it)(Hiiro)

Even Hiiro did not expect that he would make such a decision for himself as his heart was strangely cheerful. It would seem this was the favour he would receive after spending all his days lethargic.

(Even if things would get troublesome, this is worth the effort) (Hiiro)

He kept his determination to himself as he looked up into the sky.

Although he was in a good mood, apart from that, he turned his gaze to Nikki who was joyfully smiling while playing with Mikazuki.

"Oi Baka-deshi, you will do a one hour-seiza later" (Hiiro)

"W-Why is it?!" (Nikki)

"This is the punishment for not reminding me about those fools" (Hiiro)

“T-that is.. you see...u...uu...” (Nikki)

“Seiza later” (Hiiro)

“.....Yes” (Nikki)

Since Nikki really forgot about reminding Hiiro, Nikki could do nothing but nod without objection.

“Ahaha! Nikki made Master angry~!” (Mikazuki)

Next to Nikki, who saw her down hearted, Mikazuki joyfully pointed her fingers at her. But her smile freezed instantly on hearing Hiiro’s following words.

“You are the same, Drool Bird” (Hiiro)

“.....fue?” (Mikazuki)

Mikazuki’s smile hardened.

“Previously, when I was talking, you were annoying. This the crime you have committed” (Hiiro)

“ N-No way! That’s mean Masteeeeeeeer!” (Mikazuki)

“Shut up. Do what I have told you to. You will have no meal for the time being if you refuse” (Hiiro)

“Yes! Mikazuki will gladly eat obey!” (Mikazuki)

When Mikazuki hears her meals being pulled out, her attitude changed immediately. It was evident that she really hated her meals being pulled out.

“Kui..... this is also because of your fault Nikki” (Mikazuki)

“You’re wrong~zo. This is the consequence of your deeds” (Nikki)

“That is not true~mon! The reason I had become annoying wa because of Nikki~mon!”  
(Mikazuki)

“Mu.... Even I as well wouldn’t be in this situation if it weren’t for you Mikazuki” (Nikki)

“Ahh! That is not true~mon! Compared to Nikki, Master takes care of my body~mon!”  
(Mikazuki)

“Ah....mumumu” (Nikki)

“Hehe~n! BA~KA, Forgetful Nikki, boooo~” (Mikazuki)

“Uuu, this is so mortifying!” (Nikki)

Hiiro had a cramp on his cheek while hearing the communication of the two people.

“Maybe I should make it two hours instead?” (Hiiro)

Hearing his words, both of them felt a shiver run down their spine.

“ “ We won’t be annoying anymore!” ” (Mikazuki & Nikki)

The two of them cheerfully answered.

## Chapter 136 Invitation to the Castle

---

When Hiiro left the room, the shock of his words left Shinobu Akamori and Shuri Minamoto speechless for a while. All that they could do was continuously overlap their sighs continuously.

Following this, Shinobu sat on the floor with her hands on her knees while quietly muttering.

“.....just what should we do.....?” (Shinobu)

Whether those words were actually directed towards someone, or if she simply wanted to voice out those thoughts, even she herself did not know the real reason why she said that.

She wanted an answer as to what she should do. She wanted someone to answer that. Because that would be easier. In particular, since she had come to this world, she had obeyed the orders of another and lived without having to seek out any answers.

It was possible to say that their environment had been manipulated. Even so, like Hiiro said, it still would have been possible to hold their own opinions within that and move while thinking on their own. That was something that they had not done.

That was exactly why she had been incapable of refuting Hiiro’s lecture that could have been thought to be too severe.

Those feelings were similarly held by Shuri as well, who, upon realizing it after being told, truly felt that she was quite shameful.

Although what Hiiro said didn’t have an exact basis, it was correct.....yes, it was possible to judge it to be correct.

On one hand, it could be said that, because they were words he could say due to how strongly he had lived in this world, they had persuasive power.

And so, she felt that they couldn’t continue being like this. While Hiiro’s words had been relentless, she could somehow feel that he had told them so in order to open their eyes.

That was exactly why she felt that, this time, they had to think carefully about what it was they should do now and reach the answer on their own.

“.....Shinobu-san” (Shuri)

“Hm? What is it Shu.....ri.....cchi?” (Shinobu)

Upon raising her face to look at Shuri, Shinobu was involuntarily rendered speechless upon gazing at Shuri's serious expression.

"Shinobu-san, I've decided." (Shuri)

".....decided what?" (Shinobu)

Upon hearing Shuri's decision, Shinobu stiffened with an astonished expression.

A person that seemed to be an 『Evila』 soldier approached Hihiro and co. outside of the inn. The reason he had come was to extend an invitation to come to the castle to Hihiro, who had made many great achievements in this war.

Hihiro had at least been told by the Maou, Eveam, that once the war settled down, she would send over someone to call him over. Although she had said 'once it settled down', they had only managed to expel the beastmen from the country so far. It seemed that the beastmen still remained hidden near the country, but, for now, the immediate threat had been removed.

From what he had heard from the soldier, currently, the eyes of the soldiers deployed in the surroundings of the country were sparkling with motivation. Thus, even if something happened, they would be able to move immediately. As the situation had calmed down in comparison to earlier, Eveam wanted to invite Hihiro and co. to the castle so that she could also introduce them properly to her subordinates. Therefore, she had decided to have Hihiro follow the soldier there.

"Ah, what are you guys gonna do?" (Hihiro)

Hihiro turned his eyes towards Liliyn and co.

"Umm....would they happen to be your companions?" (Soldier)

Amongst them were ones that couldn't be seen as 『Evila』, so the soldier gazed at them with doubtful eyes.

"For now, I suppose" (Hihiro)

Upon hearing that, the soldier gave a thoughtful look and said,

"If that's the case, then there shouldn't be any problems. If they are Hihiro-dono's companions, then I will guide them with all my being." (Soldier)

"I see. You guys wanna come?" (Hihiro)

The first one to bite into that offer was Mikazuki.

"If you're invi~ted to the castle, does that mean there's gonna be a meal!?" (Mikazuki)

"Eh, ah, that....well, it is being prepared but-" (Soldier)

"Waa~!" (Mikazuki)



At the soldier's words, Mikazuki's eyes shined radiantly. A shameful amount of drool also began to spill out as well.

"Th-then I want to go as well! I'm so hungry!" (Nikki)

It was Nikki who jumped on the bandwagon.

"Fumu, then what do you guys wanna do, Aka-Loli?" (Hiiro)

"Hmph, there's no way I wo....." (Liliyn)

"Nofofofofofo! Of course we will accompany you! By all means, we would love to join you in going there! Nofofofofofo!" (Silva)

"Feeeeeeee! C-Can someone like me go too!? H-H-How gracious! B-B-B-But, I've always wanted to go at least once!" (Shamoe)

As if they were obstructing Liliyn's words, the two attendants unanimously fired off words as they liked.

"Give up Aka-Loli, they completely intend on going" (Hiiro)

".....haaa, even though I don't want to go" (Liliyn)

As Liliyn scratched her head, she displayed absolutely no desire to go.

"Do you hate it that much? There might be some delicious food you know?" (Hiiro)

"Hm.....iya, mu.....there's a fellow I don't want to meet at the castle" (Liliyn)

"Hou" (Hiiro)

Looking at her, it certainly seemed like there was someone she didn't want to meet as she frowned reluctantly. For an existence like her, who wore arrogance like clothes, the existence of a person that she hated this much sprouted a bit of interest to Hiiro. However, coercing her would be troublesome.

"Then do you want to stay here alone?" (Hiiro)

After being told that by Hiiro and thinking for a bit, Liliyn looked at how merry Silva and co. were being as she heaved a large sigh.

"Iya well, I suppose I'll just try going for now. I don't know if I'll actually end up meeting them after all." (Liliyn)

It seemed that it had ended with everyone accepting the invitation.

"Then shall we go?" (Hiiro)

Just as Hiiro said that,

"Please take us as well" (Shuri)

Seeing the person who had said that, even Hiiro was momentarily at a loss of words.

The person in question was Shuri. Behind her, Shinobu could also be seen. The question of why they had decided to appear at that place, at that moment, emerged within him.

In front of them stood the 『Evila』 soldier. If he was someone who knew their faces, then another troublesome event might occur.

“.....are they your acquaintances?” (Soldiers)

Naturally, it was the soldier who had asked. It seemed that the soldier didn't know that the two girls were heroes. But he honestly worried about how exactly he should respond. This was because the two of them had the external appearance of 『Humas』 .

If he said they weren't companions, then it would lead to a discussion about why exactly humans were here. Because of their appearance, it would become obvious that they were humans who had come to participate in the war. Upon judging that, the chances of a battle resulting were high.

If he said that they were his companions and they were investigated later, it'd be revealed that they were heroes. At that point, it'd be annoying to explain why he had said they were 'companions'.

(These guys.....they've really done a troublesome thing now) (Hiiro)

As he instinctively turned a displeased face towards the two girls, upon seeing Shuri's expression he went, “Oh?”

(She.....) (Hiiro)

On Shinobu's face, although it was a bit cloudy, it seemed to be coloured with determination as well.

(.....I see. So they're trying to move a bit forward) (Hiiro)

However, as their method involved dragging him into it, Hiiro became sullen. Realizing Hiiro's feelings, Shuri lowered her head.

“I'm sorry Okamura-kun!” (Shuri)

“.....” (Hiiro)

“But right now, we do need Okamura-kun's power after all! Please take us with you!” (Shuri)

It seemed that they felt bad about dragging him into it. Shinobu similarly lowered her head.

Seeing the two of them lowering their heads, Hiiro thought,

(.....I don't have any obligation to do what they want, but it'd be annoying to have to think of an excuse. And I'm also a bit interested in seeing what kind of answer that Maou will give.....) (Hiiro)

More importantly, he didn't want to waste any more time here. He wanted to enjoy the delicious meal as soon as possible.

".....fine. But I won't take responsibility for whatever happens at the castle, alright?" (Hiiro)

As he said so, Shuri, who had been vigorously lowering her head, beamed.

"Thank you very much! Really!" (Shuri)

As she seemed to dislike the smile Shuri sent to Hiiro, Liliyn's eyebrow twitched as she made an unhappy face.

"Oi! We're going to the castle, right! Let's get going already Hiiro!" (Liliyn)

Liliyn aggressively grabbed Hiiro's hand and brought him to the soldier, as if she were tearing him away from Shuri.

"O-Oi, let me go! I can walk on my own!" (Hiiro)

"Aaa~that's sly, Liliyn-dono!" (Nikki)

"Yeah, yeah! Mikazuki should be the one holding hands with master!" (Mikazuki)

As Nikki and Mikazuki said that, they attempted to take Hiiro's other hand but,  
Pokan! Pokan!

The pitiful two each received a punch on the head from Hiiro. And as he swung off Liliyn's hand-

"I told you that I can walk on my own" (Hiiro)

His mouth made a displeased look and he headed towards the soldier.

"Ahh Shishou! Please wait!" (Nikki)

"Don't leave me behind!" (Mikazuki)

Even after being hit, the two of them didn't want to leave Hiiro's side. They each stayed on one side of him and walked together with him. Seeing that, even the soldier somehow had a peaceful feeling.

"Ahaha, then please follow me" (Soldier)

The soldier guided them as they walked to the castle.

Having had her hand forcefully torn away, Liliyn stared at the hand she had been grasping with a red face. Even though he was capable of reading that mood, but dared to ignore it, the butler then said-

“Nofofo, Ojou-sama, would you like to hold my hand? It can be my right or left hand, ah, or if you’d like, I can even piggy-back and hug you!” (Silva)

“Why don’t you just go and hug the wall!” (Liliyn)

Dogasu!

“Ugaahh!?” (Silva)

Silva received a tremendous slap and was sent flying into the wall of a nearby building.

“Feeeeeeee!?! Are you alright, Silva-sama!” (Shamoe)

“Leave that pervert alone, Shamoe! Let’s hurry up and go!” (Liliyn)

“U-u-u-u-u-understood!” (Shamoe)

“Oi, you two as well, hurry up and come!” (Liliyn)

As Liliyn said that in a displeased manner to Shuri and co., the two of them, who had been gazing at the scene in a dumbfound manner, hastily began following after the group.

## Chapter 137

### Threat

---

Having dodged the attack of the second prince of 【Beast Kingdom Passion】 , and having been sent flying out of the country, the two Heroes, Aoyama Taishi and Suzumiya Chika, were lying unconscious in a forest near 【Demon Capital Xaos】 .

“... Uu.”

The first one to open his eyes was Taishi. Countless cuts had been engraved onto his body, but his bones were untouched, and he was able to move without a problem. Of course, pain still accompanied every movement.

He gazed at Chika, who had suffered the same injuries as him.

“O-oy, Chika! Chika! Wake up!”

She showed no signs of regaining consciousness, so his face turned pale as he imagined the worst possible situation. But after slapping her face a couple of times...

“Uu...”

She let out her voice, so he was able to determine there was no real danger to her life.

“Right, we were...”

He remembered why they had ended up in a place like this. Perhaps he had hit his head on the way down, but he had been unable to pull up his memory for a while. He gradually began to recall the circumstances surrounding himself.

And he hung his head.

“That’s right... I lost...”

He participated in the war and shrunk back at its fierceness. He fought a man who seemed to be a 『Gabranth』 , but he couldn’t inflict a single injury, and after receiving an attack from who knows what, they were separated from Shuri and the others.

“... Just what the hell am I doing... dammit.”

Seeing Chika, who was sleeping through her injuries, he began to feel the regret of not having been able to protect her. And the other thing that made him clench his teeth was the existence of a certain someone.

Unlike himself, a certain Okamura Hiroyuki had experienced a clear growth in strength. Taishi had witnessed him fight, but to put it bluntly, Hiroyuki's movements were so fast that he was only able to see a blur.

He was just supposed to be a guy dragged into their hero summoning by accident, and Taishi was honestly happy that he was alive and well, but he had never even imagined that Hiroyuki would ever have grown stronger than his own party.

What's more, it seemed he paid no attention to them, and didn't want to deal with them at all. He looked down on the four whose legs had given out due to fear, as he laughed to himself at their pitiful display. At the very least, that's what Taishi saw.

As a Hero, Taishi didn't want to believe he had been looked down on by a simple bystander like him.

"I'm a Hero... and yet, why is he..."

He clenched his teeth tightly.

"So you were in a place like this."

The voice he suddenly heard from behind made him tense up and instinctively turn around. And before him, was a person wearing a robe that covered their entire body.

(W-who is this...?)

Taishi's instincts screamed out, that this person was dangerous. As if he was being entranced by a giant snake, it was as if his entire body was being paralyzed. He couldn't move.

"... Two..."

That individual muttered lightly to themselves. Judging just by the voice, the person seemed to be male.

"Where are the others?"

It was as if he had been discarded in a place without oxygen, and it suddenly became difficult to breathe. He couldn't move his mouth as he wished, and he couldn't let out any sound. A cold sweat broke out all over his body.

"... Aren't you supposed to be a Hero? Why are you being affected by miasma of this level?"

He didn't know what the man was saying, but he was able to understand that amazement was mixed into his voice.

And looking at Taishi, who had yet to say a word since their meeting, the man said as such.

“Well, I don’t really care about your status. Just shut up and follow me.”

Saying that, he began to approach Chika, who had yet to regain consciousness.

“... er.”

“... Hmm?”

As the man tried to understand what it was Taishi had said, he stopped moving.

“Don’t.... touch her!”

Taishi’s face was pale, but he had a frantic expression on his face as he desperately wrung out his voice.

“... It seems you care for this girl quite a bit, but you have no right to refuse. And of course, neither does she.”

The man casually tossed Chika over his shoulder. In that moment, something hot seemed to well up from Taishi’s chest, and his immobile body, that felt as if it had been entangled in chains...

“Let go of Chika!”

Began moving for Chika’s sake. His sword had fallen somewhere while he was flying through the air, so his hand was empty. Without any other choice, he thrust forward with his fists.

“... It’s useless.”

From where the man was standing, something suddenly shot out and wrapped around his body.

“Wha!? T-this is... gu!?”

It was something like the roots of a tree. Several separate roots intertwined around Taishi’s body to bind him.

(E-even though they’re so thin, why do they have such power...!?)

By their appearance, they would have broken at any instant, but even with all his strength, they showed no signs of breaking.

“I guess I should say something. If you’re going to annoy me any more than this, then the first thing that goes will be this girl’s hands.”

“What!?”

“Is the right fine? Or perhaps the left?”

The man grasped Chika’s slender arms, as he let out cold words.

“S-stop it!”

“If you want me to stop, then just shut the hell up and follow.”

Taishi could feel it from the man’s attitude. To him, pulling off Chika’s arms and legs was nothing. If it would make Taishi follow, he would probably take any cruel action without hesitation. And sensing that, Taishi relaxed the power in his body.

“... Got it. I got it, so please don’t hurt Chika.”

“Then let’s go already.”

The roots slithered back into the ground. He wondered whether that was the man’s magic, but as long as Chika was a hostage, he was unable to do anything. No, even if there was no one held prisoner, the gap in strength was just too big.

Taishi clenched his fists in anguish, but without anything for him to slam them against, they eventually grew exhausted and gradually began to relax.

“H-hey, can you tell me just one thing?”

“I believe I told you to shut up, did I not?”

“...”

The intimidating aura once more began weighing down on his body. But the man conceded but a single bit of information.

“... My master is waiting.”

Master...? Taishi really just wanted to ask where they were going, and it seems they were headed to wherever the man’s master was.

And for a brief moment, he was able to see the expression under the man’s hood. But it was only for an instant.

(A cross-shaped scar on his face...?)

There was truly a large cross on the man’s face.

“Get your feet moving.”

“G-got it.”

Taishi knew there was nothing he could do now but listen to the man’s words. He began to step forward.

(Shuri... Shinobu, please be safe.)



## Chapter 138

### The Heroes and the Demon Lord, Face-to-Face

---

The 【Evila Capital: Xaos’】 palace was a large castle that was commensurate with the scale of the country. Although it can be said that the palace is located within the heart of the country, high walls were erected, existing as if to protect the castle.

Below the palaces seemed to be a flowing river. However, if one were to fall in, they would be soon be able to understand it’s nature within a single glance. The river, that appeared to be connected to the sea, was flowing into the country.

Of course, in order to enter said castle, one would be required to pass through its gates. If you were to try and enter the castle from elsewhere, you would be regarded as an intruder, captured, and be met with the fate of being sent to prison.

Although there was a large bridge established for the purpose of crossing the valley, a hefty soldier was standing there acting as a gatekeeper. Even though Hiiro Okamura’s party had crossed over the bridge and were currently entering the castle, they had, as predicted, felt various feelings from the soldiers’ gazes.

That was to be expected. Although Hiiro, who was active in the war, was an exception, there were 『Evila』 that they had clearly not seen before, as well as beings of other races that had dived through the gates. Usually, they would attempt to apprehend such subjects.

In addition, the stares directed towards the human Shuri and Shinobu were particularly hostile, any possible hint of friendliness being undetectable. However, that could not be helped. After all, this time, the humans had betrayed the 『Evila』 .

Following this, they had also conspired with the 『Gabranth』 in order to destroy the 『Evila』 . As the humans had also assaulted them with complete disregard, they committed such acts believing that they were just.

Although it was undetermined whether or not the soldiers had understood their place or they were issued a strict order by the Demon Lord...no, it was most likely that both had occurred. If they were to handle this situation poorly, it was highly likely that another conflict would arise. Thus, they could do naught but merely glare as they restrained themselves.

As Shuri and Shinobu had a sufficient understanding of the meaning behind those stares, they held downcast, anxious eyes as they contracted their bodies while walking behind Hiiro.

Due to the guidance of the soldiers, Hiiro and co. were brought to a place called the «Ruler's Room». There, red carpet was spread out onto the floor, and, further in the back, a chair that looked like a throne existed.

Starting from the throne, a straight road was lined with soldiers on both sides, as if enclosing it. In addition, within close vicinity of said throne, individuals that Hiiro had seen previously were congregated together.

Eveam: 「You did well to make your way here, Hiiro!」

The one who hospitably welcomed Hiiro was the Demon Lord, Eveam. Although under normal circumstances, she would be planting her waist onto the throne with a dignified demeanor, Eveam was currently standing in a similar manner to the others.

Eveam: 「I apologize. Originally, I was planning on heading out, yet, as you can imagine, Marione and the others had objected.」

Marione: 「Of course! Her majesty is the Demon Lord. To have to perform the labor of stepping outside just to show appreciation for a single, mere 『Evila』 is a mistake.」

As Marione spoke thus, Eveam's mouth distorted into a pout.

Eveam: 「That is inexcusable, Marione. Hiiro is not only my lifesaver, but he is also an individual that displayed a great amount of effort for the sake of this country. To express courtesy towards him is only natural!」

Marione: 「Mu<sup>(1)</sup>.....that may be, but.」

As Marione had witnessed the scene where the seriously injured Eveam was instantly cured, he could no longer express any sort of objection.

Shublarz: 「I heard it from her majesty, you know~, you're really strong, aren't you?」

Seeing Shublarz speak seductively while moving her large breasts with a \*purun\*(2), Liliyn's cheek twitched.

In a small voice- 「What the hell's with those breasts.....did she stuff something in them? No, it's most likely that those aren't real. If that's not the case, then I.....」 - Lilliyn had muttered thus.

Hiiro: 「Stuff like that is irrelevant.」

This was Hiiro's 'slogan'. Obviously, everyone froze as their eyes spread wide open.

Hiiro: 「You've prepared a meal already, yes? Then hurry up and let me eat. I'm hungry.」

It was his indifferent, 'my pace' attitude. As expected, even Marione possessed a blank expression on his face. However, only Eveam and Aquinas had faintly loosened their cheeks.

This was the proof that they had been able to slightly grasp Hiiro's personality, even though they had been exposed to it for a short period of time.

Eveam: 「Aa(3), that's right. Preparations will be finished in a little while longer. However, before then, would it be alright if you were to introduce me to your comrades, Hiiro?」

Hiiro: 「I don't really care, but two of them are not my comrades, you know?」

Eveam: 「.....Nn?(4) Eh? Not comrades? What does that.....」

As Eveam returned such a question while tilting her neck to the side, Shuri and Shinobu stood before Hiiro and fell onto their knees.

Shuri: 「It is an honor to meet you in this way, Demon Lord, your majesty. 」

Even though Shuri issued such words, she was clearly trembling. Her voice was also shrill and imbued with nervousness. One could grasp that she was tense to quite a large extent.

And as they saw the two girls slowly raise their face, tension ran rampant through not only Eveam, but each and every single one of the 《Cruel》 .

Marione: 「W-Wha-!? Y-You bastards are heroes!?!」

At Marione's cry, the soldiers simultaneously surrounded Hiiro and the others.

Hiiro: (As I thought, it's come to this.....now then)

Hiiro was wondering what would now occur- no, he had already assumed the position of idly observing how the two girls would survive this.

Marione: 「What's the meaning of this, Red Robe! Why are the heroes here! Depending on the circumstances.....」

As Marione's thirst for blood smashed into Hiiro, Nikki stood in front of Hiiro as if to protect him while a distraught Mikazuki grasped onto Hiiro's clothes.

Nikki: 「Depending on the circumstances, what will happen? If you are saying that you will injure Shishou, I will not forgive you desu zo![\(5\)](#)」

A furious Nikki face Marione with hostility.

Marione: 「What's with this little brat.....」

Shuri: 「Please wait-!」

At that point, Shuri raised a resolute shout.

Shuri: 「Please.....please listen to my story, Demon Lord, your majesty.」

Marione: 「How can you so shamelessly.....」

Eveam: 「Marione, please quiet down for a bit.」

Marione: 「B-But, your majesty, these people are heroes!」

Eveam: 「It's fine, this is an order.」

Eveam silenced Marione with a single glance. Following this, she spoke while looking down upon Shuri.

Eveam: 「I believe in Hihiro. They were brought here by that Hihiro. I wonder if there is a reason.」

Although Eveam looked towards Hihiro, he simply had his arms folded and his eyes closed. It was a gesture that expressed that Hihiro had no intention of answering. After glancing at Hihiro, Eveam once again returned her gaze towards Shuri.

Eveam: 「You, you said that there was a story?」

Shuri: 「Yes.」

Eveam: 「Talk.」

Shuri: 「Thank you.....very.....much.....」

However, Shinobu, who was also on her knees, had noticed that Shuri's physical condition was poor. In addition to the wounds that she had received previously not having been fully cured yet, Shuri was currently being assaulted by a wave of murderous intent from the surroundings while in such a tense-filled scenario, a scenario where their lives could be lost at anytime.

It would not be strange if one were to be both physically and mentally exhausted. Furthermore, originally, Shuri did not possess such a personality that allowed her to easily expose herself to such a situation. It was understandable that the mental load place on her was considerably strenuous.

As Shinobu thought thus, she placed her hand on Shuri's shoulder.

Shuri: 「Shinobu.....-san?[\(6\)](#)」

Shinobu: 「I'll take care of the rest. Please rest for a bit.」

Shuri: 「B-But.....」

Shinobu: 「I've also made my resolve, you know?」

Shuri: 「.....」

Shinobu: 「So.....please?」

Shuri: 「.....I understand. Please take care of the rest.」

And following in Shuri's footsteps, Shinobu began to speak.

## Chapter 139 Hiiro's Coming-Out

---

Shinobu spoke about their group, the heroes who had been summoned to 【Edea】 , as well as the reason for why they had come to the 【Demon Country: Xaos】 without concealing a single detail.

After discussing it with Shuri, they together had decided that she should do so. It had been Shuri's idea to talk with the Maou about themselves.

Naturally, Shinobu had been unable to deny the possibility of them being executed on the spot. However, if they remained where they were, not only would they continue to cause trouble for Hiiro, but the chances of them eventually being discovered was high.

Rather than begging for mercy after being found, she felt that coming to the Maou by themselves to appeal to her would be much safer. Even Ornoth had told them that if they were obedient, they wouldn't be killed, furthering supporting her decision.

"I see. You two are undeniably heroes, correct? However, that leaves one small question." (Eveam)

"Wh-what might that be?" (Shinobu)

Shinobu asked as she held her breath.

"You said that you had already entered the demon continent when we were crossing the bridge. If that is the case, then who were the heroes that we saw on the bridge?" (Eveam)

"Saw.....on the bridge?" (Shinobu)

As Shinobu gave a blank look, Eveam similarly muttered, "Hm?" and-

"Why are you making such a face? You four heroes were undoubtedly on the bridge you know?" (Eveam)

".....that must be some kind of mistake.....because we were definitely.....we met an 『Evila』 called Iraora, who allowed us to cross the bridge." (Shinobu)

Upon hearing the name Iraora, Eveam displayed a clouded expression. She had heard about the tragedy that occurred on 【Mütich Bridge】 . And, in order to confirm it, they had performed an investigation, yet it seemed to be true.

Former 《Cruel Brigade》 member Iraora. She had recognized his strength, and believed that she could leave the defense of the bridge to him. Hence, she had trusted

him and left that duty to him. However, she didn't think that he would betray them, and as a result, lead to the loss of numerous comrades and Greyald.

"Then you, no, all four of you had already crossed thanks to Iraora quite a while ago?" (Eveam)

"I believe so. The king did say that the plan would work out 'cause he was on our side." (Shinobu)

"I see.....however, if you two don't know of them, then just who were the heroes that we saw....." (Eveam)

Eveam muttered with a pensive look on her face, but was unable to come to an answer.

"Allow me to ask one thing." (Aquinas)

During such a discussion, Aquinas posed a question. Simply by standing there, it was clear that he was a different existence from the others due to his intimidating aura. Shinobu's nervousness rose even further.

"Kiria.....do you know that name?" (Aquinas)

"Kiria? N-no, I don't.....but" (Shinobu)

"Then what about the name Valkiria?" (Aquinas)

"N-no....." (Shinobu)

Aquinas stared fixatedly at Shinobu. It appeared that he was checking to see if she had lied or not. Then, he glanced towards Eveam.

"Your Majesty, it is likely that these two do not know anything. It's the King of Victorias after all. He likely sent the heroes over here, and was planning to use them as a pretext for war later on." (Aquinas)

It was the same view that Hihiro had told Shinobu and co.

As she realized that it was like that after all, Shinobu hung her head in shame as feelings of frustration overflowed from her chest.

"If the heroes died here, then he would use that as the reason for a new war.....huh. If it's that king, then it seems plausible that he would be capable of such a thing." (Eveam)

Eveam frowned sorrowfully.

"Then you really weren't told anything after all. Even though you're heroes....." (Eveam)

"Also, about the heroes that we saw. If you think about how Kiria betrayed us, then those heroes were....." (Aquinas)

"I see.....dolls, huh." (Eveam)

"Yes, not only that, but they were made quite.....elaborately. If it was Kiria, who was a



doll-maker to begin with, it's possible. Up until now, we have been helped on numerous occasions thanks to her abilities after all." (Aquinas)

".....That's right.....she did help us. Even so....." (Eveam)

Eveam gave a bitter expression as she ground her teeth. Aquinas continued speaking in her place.

"Ornoth, is it true that the remaining two heroes were blown away?" (Aquinas)

"Yeah, it's true. Due to Prince Lenion's attack. I made some soldiers looking for them for the time being, but it seems like they can't find them." (Ornoth)

".....fumu. It appears that there were no lies within what they've told us. However, there is one thing that doesn't make sense." (Aquinas)

Shinobu was startled once more. Naturally, there was nearly nothing left that they hadn't told them already. They had intended on answering any questions they gave honestly. Her heart began beating violently at the thought that there were still some inadequacies with their explanations.

"You don't need to get that nervous. Although, even if I say that, I guess it can't be helped. What I don't understand isn't about you, but Hiiro.....about his actions." (Aquinas)

".....eh?" (Shinobu)

Shinobu became dumbfounded, but the surrounding people simultaneously glanced towards Hiiro. The person in question, Hiiro, still had his eyes closed, but-

(So it came to this after all.....) (Hiiro)

As though he had expected it, Hiiro opened his eyes and raised his face to look at Aquinas.

"That's right. What I don't understand is why Hiiro, who should have been your enemy, brought you heroes all the way here. If you were simply strangers, he would either ignore you, or kill you two human girls. Either way, there's no way that Hiiro and the two of you are completely unrelated. That's what I sensed, but how is it?" (Aquinas)

Hiiro clicked his tongue internally. Probably, if it was Eveam, then she wouldn't have thought of that question. Whether for the better or the worse, since she had such a straight-forward personality, she may not have held any doubts with regards to the meaning of Hiiro's actions.

Even if she held some doubts, she wouldn't have had the confidence to relay them well. However, the other party was unfortunately a top-ranking person amongst the Maou's army. Hiiro felt that he didn't seem to be a person who would be amused by word games. Honestly speaking, he had wanted things to go on without that question arising.

However, Aquinas had magnificently managed to point out that question. The first one to react towards the identified issue was Shinobu.

“A-ah, that is! We.....it’s because we earnestly asked him for such an unreasonable request! That’s why he really didn’t do anything bad!” (Shinobu)

Though she spoke in a very flustered manner, she didn’t want to cause any more problems for Hihiro, who had brought them here, and tried to give an excuse. However, when Hihiro had brought the two of them here, he was more than prepared for this kind of situation to result.

“Iya, I cannot imagine that this man would do something like this for complete strangers. There would either need to be some secret agreement, or.....perhaps elicited empathy caused by an old friendship.....huh.” (Aquinas)

At Aquinas’s inquiry, Shinobu’s face became pale and was about to object when-

“Yeah, that’s right. I’ve been acquainted with these guys before.” (Hihiro)

Hihiro’s expression didn’t change as he uttered so indifferently. Some of the surrounding peoples’ facial colour changed. At the thought that he was an acquaintance of the heroes’, their level of wariness increased further.

The soldiers began to get noisy as their hostility gradually increased. Even Marione gave him a glare that suggested that it wouldn’t be strange if he started to attack him now.

However, Aquinas did not show any signs of surprise, and, instead, gave a face of comprehension as he spoke once more.

“.....as I thought. I heard about it from the soldier who guided you here. That you were behaving as though they were acquaintances. And that Ornoth also seemed to know about it as well.” (Aquinas)

When Hihiro had first met with the four heroes in this country, Ornoth had also been nearby. Based on the conversation they had at that time, even if they couldn’t be thought of on friendly terms, he had at least judged them to have known each other from before.

“Hi-Hihiro? Is that true?” (Eveam)

As Eveam still couldn’t believe it, she timidly asked thus.

“Yeah.” (Hihiro)

“I-is that so.....iya, it’s not like I intend on condemning you for just being acquaintances. But um.....” (Eveam)

“Why is an 『Evila』 like myself the acquaintance of heroes...right?” (Hiiro)

“Ye-yes, but.....” (Eveam)

“That’s simple.” (Hiiro)

Other than Hiiro’s companions, the eyes of all the people in the room popped out and widened as they froze. It was because Hiiro suddenly began using magic and-

“.....it’s because I was also one of the summoned people.” (Hiiro)

-returned to his human form.

---

\*Author’s Note: Next is the about how the heroes are dealt with, and the next real meal!

## Chapter 140

### The Two Heroes' treatment

---

For a short while, nobody said anything. Liliyn only sighed as though amazed, while Nikki's voice could be heard saying, "Ooh~! That form of Shishou's is the coolest after all!". Soon after, Mikazuki's voice rang out, saying, "Yeah yeah! Master's normal appearance is the best!"

Even Aquinas was completely surprised at Hiiro's words and actions, that he had forgotten to blink as he froze.

"Wh-wh-wh-wh....." (Eveam)

Eveam simply repeated the same short sound at regular intervals. As she did so, an incredible killing intent welled up from Marione, and just as he was about to aim his right hand at Hiiro-

Gatsu!

-Aquinas had grabbed his arm before Marione had realised it.

"Wha-!? Aquinas, you bastard!" (Marione)

While telling Aquinas to let his arm go, he forcefully attempted to break out of his restraining grasp.

"You bastard! Why did you stop me! He is a 『Humas』, you know! He conspired with the heroes and brought them here while intending to slaughter her Majesty!" (Marione)

The surrounding soldiers were startled by Marione's words, and began looking at Hiiro with gazes full of killing intent.

"Uu~ I'm scared....." (Mikazuki)

Mikazuki nervously gripped Hiiro's clothes. Nikki, in a very childish way, said, "Shishou's enemies are my enemies!" while taking up their stance.

Silva's previously optimistic expression crumbled as it turned into a grim countenance. Liliyn was watching over the proceedings as usual, while Shamoe remained behind her, going "Feeeee" in a flustered manner.

"Your Majesty! We should arrest them immediately!" (Marione)

"W-we can't do that!" (Eveam)

"Wha-!? Why!?" (Marione)

"I-it's true that if he's a 『Humas』, then it explains the reason why he is the

acquaintance of the heroes. I was surprised at the fact that he was summoned, but, if that is the truth, then he is someone from another world. He was likely forcefully summoned by the King of Victorias. If you think about it like that, then Hihiro should be a victim of the circumstances!" (Eveam)

"Mu-muu. B-but it's possible that was merely a falsehood meant to trick your Majesty!" (Marione)

"It's not." (Aquinas)

Marione scowled as Aquinas cut into their conversation.

"Wh-what do you mean? Do you have some evidence for that?" (Marione)

"My eyes can see through the truth. You know that as well, don't you? That it is impossible to lie to my questions. What Hihiro has said is undoubtedly the truth" (Aquinas)

Aquinas locked eyes with Hihiro.

"And Marione, if you had done something then, you may not have gotten out of it lightly, you know?" (Aquinas)

"What did you say.....?" (Marione)

If Marione had attacked at that time, Hihiro himself had prepared various methods of coping with him. As he put his hand in his pocket, he maintained magic at his fingertip. In doing so, Hihiro was prepared to write a word to react to any situation that might arise.

As Aquinas had, no, not only Aquinas, but Eveam as well, had realized that, they didn't want a dispute to occur here.

It was precisely because *they* were aware of Hihiro's true strength that they didn't want such a thing to occur.

"I-In any case, I'm judging what Hihiro said to be the truth! Marione, even if he's a human, I owe him a debt! If you try to hurt him, then I'll have to punish you. That's why please, trust me and give me some time." (Eveam)

".....understood. However, if he tries to do anything funny, I will put my whole soul into destroying him, okay?" (Marione)

After saying that, Marione began giving Hihiro a stare that was even warier than before. However, at that point-

"Are you done talking? Then how about continuing on with the conversation already? I only came here to eat. Hurry up and end this." (Hihiro)

"U-umu. My apologies Hihiro. Y-you'll have to wait a bit longer for the food. It should be

in the midst of being prepared right now.” (Eveam)

“Geez, there’s gotta be a limit to how unprepared you are.” (Hiiro)

At this exchange and Hiiro’s completely unrestrained attitude, Marione ground his teeth, while the soldiers were staring at Hiiro in a shocked manner.

There were also those who were internally admiring him for having broken through the calmness of one of the 《Cruel Brigade》’s members to this extent.

Suddenly, Aquinas leaked out a sigh and opened his mouth.

“However, healing and teleportation, explosions and lightning, and now transformation? Your existence itself truly is like a box of surprises.” (Aquinas)

“Like you’re one to talk. Don’t you have the power to create swords with your 《Demon Eyes》, and are also a Unique Magic user?” (Hiiro)

In truth, he actually knew that Aquinas was a dark attribute magic user from when he peeked at his 《Status》, but figured that there would be troublesome repercussions if he revealed that here. Hence, Hiiro purposely stated an incorrect explanation.

However, the surrounding soldiers swallowed nervously at Hiiro’s words. All of them were aware. Of who exactly the strongest person within this country was. However, there was no way that any one of them would be capable of talking so casually with him using such an arrogant attitude.

Even so, Hiiro calmly spoke without a hint of fear. The soldiers fidgeted nervously as they watched the scene of Hiiro and Aquinas staring at each other, wondering whether or not it would suddenly break out into battle.

“.....Fu, you’re an interesting guy.” (Aquinas)

“Don’t look at people and then laugh, Red-hair.” (Hiiro)

Due to Aquinas’s sudden smile, everyone was shocked. After all, it was a very rare sight to see him laugh at anything.

Ignoring them, Aquinas continued.

“However, you said that you were summoned, but does that mean that you are a hero as well?” (Aquinas)

Everyone became taken aback and looked at Hiiro.

“Normally, I would reply by saying that I have no obligation to answer, but it would be annoying later on if I left you guys with that misunderstanding. I guess this calls for an honest explanation.....do it.” (Hiiro)

“M-me!?” (Shinobu)

As Hihiro had suddenly looked at Shinobu's face while prompting her, she suddenly shouted, as she did not think she would be nominated suddenly like that.

"Talking about it would be troublesome, and you guys came here to gain their trust right? So do that." (Hihiro)

She watched Hihiro as he closed his eyes and crossed his arms once more, giving off the impression that he wouldn't speak any more than that.

".....thanks Okamura-cchi." (Shinobu)

She said with a small murmur. She was thankful for the fact that Hihiro had thought of them, and thus gave them the chance to talk. In addition, if they were able to prove their connection to Hihiro, it may become easier for them to gain the Evila's trust.

Although she thought that, to Hihiro, it truly was just too troublesome to explain. As he figured that they did not have any information that would inconvenience him if known, he had simply judged that there was no longer any need for him himself to speak any further.

Following that, Shinobu told Eveam and co. about how Hihiro was a human from the same world as them, and how he had soon left on a journey by himself soon after being summoned. In addition, she spoke of how they had met again after a long while in this country, and then been lectured by Hihiro as well.

"I see, so Hihiro explained the reality of the situation, and because you two felt that it wouldn't be good to continue going on as you were, you came all the way here. Is my understanding of it correct?" (Eveam)

"Yes." (Shinobu)

She answered Eveam's question without a single lie.

".....I understand your situation. And so, having come all the way here, and having spoken of your circumstances, what do you want me to do?" (Eveam)

".....We will follow her Majesty the Maou's decision." (Shinobu)

".....are you seriously saying that? You two are still heroes, and the 『Evila』 your natural enemies. And yet, you seek the decision from me, the Maou who governs those 『Evila』 ?" (Eveam)

"Yes." (Shinobu)

"Did you not think that it would be natural for me to have you killed?" (Eveam)

".....no, of course we thought that. However, we decided that this was the best that we could do. Although we hadn't deeply thought about how scary and painful war is, it is true that we came all the way to this country as the allies of humanity." (Shinobu)

"....."

“We were split up from our comrades, lectured by Okamura-cchi, and finally realized that we were wrong. But, that’s exactly why we can’t just stay motionless forever. If we did that, then I feel that, in itself, would be wrong.” (Shinobu)

As she concentrated on Shinobu’s words, Eveam silently closed her eyes. She herself no longer felt that the two girls in front of her were a danger to her.

However, in this incident, she was met with numerous large betrayals. It was to the point where she couldn’t just believe in people so early on. It’d be a simple matter if she believed them, and then went soft with the heroes’ treatment. However, if she did that, the surrounding people would undoubtedly oppose her decision.

She had heard from Ornoth that the two girls had not hurt any of the 『Evila』, but even so, the position of a ‘hero’ was big. Even if they came while lowering their heads, Eveam felt that it would be wrong after all to not give them any punishment at all.

“.....I understand what you wanted to say. I have received your sincerity. However, you two have still not completely grasped your own positions.” (Eveam)

Hearing Eveam’s words, Shinobu’s body faintly trembled. Beside her, although her mouth was closed, Shuri’s facial colour became a little worse than before.

“Surely you didn’t think that you’d be released without any punishment at all?” (Eveam)

“.....yes.” (Shinobu)

Although she answered feebly, that was all she could say.

“However, I won’t needlessly take your lives.” (Eveam)

Hearing those words, the oppressive mood relaxed a little. However, Marione appeared to be amazed, as he shook his head numerous times.

“I’m sure that you two also have things you’d like to do from now on, but I can’t let you do that so easily.” (Eveam)

“.....yes.” (Shinobu)

Truthfully, they wanted to immediately go to find Taishi and co., but figured that saying something like that here would be impossible after all, and so they remained silent.

“Starting today, I will have the two of you live under our surveillance for a short while. Don’t worry, we won’t throw you into a jail cell. However, your standing will be about the same as a prisoner of war. You may find it a bit small, but I’ll give you two a single room to live in. Are there any objections?” (Eveam)

“.....no.” (Shinobu)



They couldn't possibly have any. And even if they did, there's no way they could say them. They were in a position where they had been partly resigned to living in a cell, but they couldn't possibly have thought that they would be given a room.

Hiroyuki had told them, but Shinobu felt that the Maou was quite soft. However, she was thankful for that soft heartedness that had saved them.

"Take the two of them to the guest room in Tower B" (Eveam)

As Eveam said that, the soldiers approached them in response. However, at that moment, Shuri suddenly collapsed.

"Shuri-ccchi!?" (Shinobu)

Shinobu carried her in her arms as she attempted to wake Shuri in a flustered manner.

"Wh-what's wrong?" (Eveam)

Eveam's eyes widened at the sudden situation.

"Her bodily condition is probably poor. Ever since I first met her, she was the most affected by the state of war around her after all." (Ornoth)

The one who said that was Ornoth.

"I see, understood. Contact the medics and get them to take a look at her." (Eveam)

"Th-thank you very much!" (Shinobu)

Shinobu was thankful for Eveam's courteous support.

"It's because I can't allow for my prisoners of war to be killed. That's why you should rest. As long as you are here, I won't allow anyone to hurt you." (Eveam)

As Shinobu thanked her once again, the soldiers brought over a stretcher and placed Shuri on it. Following that, the two of them headed over to Tower B together.

# KONJIKI NO WORD MASTER

---

## Chapter 141

### Real Food, Demon Capital Cuisine!

---

“Sorry for all these problems that have been cropping up Hiiro” (Eveam)

As Eveam said that,

“If that’s how you feel, then hurry up and let me eat. Haven’t I been telling you since earlier that I’m hungry?” (Hiiro)

“Th-this brat.....do you even know who the person in front of you is? Even though you’re just a human, do you not know how to speak respectfully?” (Marione)

Marione tossed those words at him as an angry vein appeared on his forehead.

“Who, you say? Isn’t it obvious that she’s the Maou? Even if you say I’m ‘just a human’, it has nothing to do with it. I was only working to complete her request. So as long as she has prepared a meal for me in exchange, then I have the right to demand for it. If you still want to continue talking, then I’m gonna leave because it’s troublesome, ‘kay?” (Hiiro)

Marione’s face cramped at seeing Hiiro, who spoke to one of the 『Evila』’s second most powerful Cruel members without any change at all in how he normally treated others.

Shublarz was saying, “Oh my, what an interesting child~” while observing him. Ornoth and Aquinas, naturally, were watching the scene in silence.

“Marione, like I said before, Hiiro is my saviour. If you continue to insult him any longer, I will have to order you to leave, you know?” (Eveam)

“-Is what she said, Moustache Baron?” (Hiiro)

“Mu....hm? By Moustache Baron, are you referring to me?” (Marione)

“Yeah, because you have such a splendid, handlebar moustache. Doesn’t it fit perfectly?” (Hiiro)

Marione truly did have a very curly moustache. However, the soldiers suddenly became noisy. Lines such as, ‘what did he just call Marione’ could be heard coming from them.

The person in question, Marione, trembled. Just as Eveam was thinking that she would have to make Marione leave before his inevitable explosion,

“Fufufu, you understand quite well, don’t you, brat.” (Marione)

“.....eh?” (Eveam)

Eveam, no, the soldiers as well, gasped with amazement.

“If you can understand how splendid this moustache is, then you have quite the discerning eye.” (Marione)

Marione happily smiled as he touched his moustache lightly.

“Yeah. Up until now, I’ve never seen a moustache like that before. I was quite surprised.” (Hihiro)

“Fufufu, I see, I see. That’s because I take one hour every morning to set it.” (Marione)

“I see. I was quite surprised at how concerned you are with your moustache.” (Hihiro)

Hihiro wasn’t, by any means, trying to compliment Marione. He simply found such a suspicious-looking handlebar moustache that would usually only appear in anime and mangas to be unusual. Marione mistook that fascination to be praise.

“.....w-well, it seems like the two of you have reconciled, so that’s fine but.....” (Eveam)

Eveam’s face twitched as she said that and coughed, giving a glance towards Marione, who was currently engrossed with his moustache.

“In any case, you really helped us this time around, Hihiro. We still can’t completely relax, but, for now, the crisis has been averted. This is also largely thanks to Hihiro’s efforts. As thanks for that, we’ve prepared a modest meal. I would love for you to partake in it.” (Eveam)

Hihiro thought to himself, “Finally!” as he persuaded his stomach to endure for a little longer.

“Then please follow me.” (Eveam)

They arrived at a large hall with a long table positioned in the middle of it. On top of the table were numerous radiant dishes which drew one’s attention and tempted Hihiro greatly.

Naturally, it was not only Hihiro that was tempted, but Nikki and Mikazuki as well. In particular, as Mikazuki’s mouth began to have a large amount of drool leaking from it, Hihiro had to warn her to be careful. Even so, he understood the reason for her actions as the prepared meal was just that extravagant.

“Sit wherever you’d like.” (Eveam)

Upon hearing Eveam's words, Hihiro sat down on a seat in the middle of the long table. As he did so, Liliyn immediately sat in the seat directly on his right in a shrewd manner.

"Then I will be on his leffffffffftttt!?" (Nikki)

Just as Nikki arrived at the seat on the left of Hihiro,

"The early bird gets the worm!" (Mikazuki)

Mikazuki took the seat.

"No fair! That's unfair Mikazukiiii!" (Nikki)

Having become fed up with Nikki as they shouted with teary eyes, Hihiro attempted to calm the situation.

"Then why don't you just sit across from me?" (Hihiro)

"O-Ohh! Sitting opposite of Shishou while watching his face! That is also pleasant in its own way!" (Nikki)

Nikki burst out with a smile as they restlessly moved to sit in the seat across from Hihiro.

"Good grief, isn't it fine to just sit anywhere? Why do these guys purposely try to sit near me....." (Hihiro)

"Hmph, to be unable to understand something like that, you really are a brat, Hihiro." (Liliyn)

As Liliyn said that as though looking down on him, Hihiro glared at her with half-lidded eyes.

"Iya, even if you say something like that....." (Hihiro)

Indeed, as Liliyn had, for some reason, come to sit close to him, Hihiro felt that she was also a weird one. At Hihiro's words, Liliyn's face reddened. Glancing at her as she turned away, Hihiro said-

"Well, I don't really mind." (Hihiro)

The cuisine was more important. It all appeared to consist of things difficult to choose from.

"So everyone's seated. Then let's eat." (Eveam)

As if to say that they had been waiting for those words, Hihiro and co. began shoving food into their mouths.

"Allow me to introduce the head chef who prepared this food." (Eveam)

Upon saying that, the figure of a woman who seemed to be the chef appeared near Eveam.

“Her name is Musun. She is this country’s top chef. I was thinking of having her give an explanation for some of the dishes here for a bit.” (Eveam)

When Eveam pressed her to speak, Musun took a hat which appeared to be a cook’s cap and began talking.

“As she said earlier, I am Musun. Now then, without delay, everyone has a meat dish on the plates immediately in front of them.” (Musun)

Like she said, on top of each of their respective plates sat an object that could be recognized visually as a steak.

“That is the 《Silver duck’s meat》. Its body is very tender, and has little fat. It is an extremely rare and expensive bird meat.” (Musun)

Its skin was glittering to the point where one might think silver dust had been sprinkled on it. Upon putting it in one’s mouth, it gave a crunchy feeling, despite being meat. Yet, it wasn’t tough. It was easy to bite through.

They relished the earth-shatteringly new texture. While the skin seemed to be crunchy, as if it had been wrapped in a fresh vegetable, the soft meat inside of it overflowed with meat juices.

Hihiro and co.’s faces relaxed as they felt the new meaty texture in their mouths. Musun also smiled as she watched them.

“I’m pleased that it seems to have met your tastes. Next, please try out the soup next to it.” (Musun)

A sticky-looking soup which resembled corn potage sat next to the meat. However, its colour resembled the reddish-brown of consommé soup.

“That is 《Crow Potato Potage》. Do you know of the 《Crow Potato》? It is a potato with a splendid black skin. However, it is quite the valuable ingredient, as it has only been found within the Demon Continent.” (Musun)

In other words, it was a Demon Continent specialty.

“At first, the 《Crow Potato》 is as hard as a rock and doesn’t seem edible at all. However, if you heat it up in hot water at 80°C for one hour, it becomes soft and the skin changes to reddish-brown in colour.” (Musun)

Based on that, it could be understood why the soup wasn’t black, but, instead, had become this kind of reddish-brown colour.

“After that, if you take it out for a bit and cool it in cold water for one hour, it then absorbs the water and changes into a sticky liquid. It is quite delicious like that, but, when the 《Crow Potato》 is cooked together with minced 《Red Okra》, it becomes even more delicious. Please, it might be a bit spicy, but I’m sure you’ll become quite hooked on it.” (Musun)

As she had indicated, even though the potage was sticky, the taste of potatoes spread across the tongue. Additionally, there was also a slight spiciness which stimulated the senses. Yet, in spite of this, it gave one the impression that it would not be odd to become addicted to it.

“I’d also recommend dipping the bread in the soup and eating it like so.” (Musun)

Upon eating the bread like fondue according to her instructions, everyone found it to be another delicious way of eating. Rather, their hands simply wouldn’t stop. Feeling that she had done a good job, Musun’s face swelled with pride.

Mikazuki and Nikki both gave an extremely satisfied feeling as they wholeheartedly munched away at the food. Liliyn remained quiet, but continued to eat without complaint, so it seemed that she was also quite pleased with the food.

Silva was also satisfied with the prepared wine as he nodded. Shamoe was taking memos of everything, as she spoke, “Th-th-th-th-th-this is quite informative!” while studying the recipes.

“Well then, I believe that there is something that may be on everyone’s minds.” (Musun)

At Musun’s words, everyone’s gazes did indeed focus upon a single point. There lay a miniature mountain, no, a volcano-like object standing in the middle of the table.

It had been placed upon a large pot and appeared to truly be like a volcano as a red substance occasionally erupted from the crater-like top of it.

And like magma, that substance flowed down to the bottom of the volcano.

“That is 《Volcano Pudding》. Ah, incidentally, it is a dessert.” (Musun)

.....ha? This is dessert?

It’d be understandable if this steaming large dish was the main course, but they hadn’t thought that it would have been the dessert.

“First, please appreciate the liquid that has collected in the pot.” (Musun)

Everyone took their spoons and scooped some of the red fluid that had flowed into the pot from the crater as instructed. Upon bringing it to their mouths, they were taken aback as their hands froze.

An extremely sweet smell drifted about from their spoons. Pudding....indeed, it was a sweet smell like caramel.

“.....m!?” (Hiiro?)

When he put it in his mouth, his body stiffened. Then, after a few moments, Hiiro’s face naturally relaxed.

(S-sweet! But it’s not too sweet. This soup alone is good enough to be called the full dessert!) (Hiiro)

Seeing everyone’s relaxed faces, Musun nodded as if satisfied and gave a light cough.

“Now then, this time, please try the mountain part of it. While it might look rough, it should be soft enough to scoop up.” (Musun)

The sound of saliva being swallowed sounded out as numerous spoons approached the volcano. Like she said, the spoons managed to cut through the mountain with basically no resistance at all.

The pudding jiggled as they carried it to their mouths in one go. As the soup clung to it, it truly did appear to be as soft as pudding.

“Fuwaa~ it’s yummy~” (Mikazuki)

“I-I can’t stop eating it!” (Nikki)

Mikazuki held her face with both hands as she showed a face of ecstasy, while Nikki was demolishing the mountain at a tremendous speed.

“Mu.....yeah, it’s not bad.” (Liliyn)

Liliyn’s face relaxed with satisfaction.

“Nofofofofo! This is exquisite! Quite exquisite~!” (Silva)

“I-I-I-I-It was worth trynggg!” (Shamoe)

The pervert and maid both expressed their own opinions. Meanwhile,

“.....fuu.” (Hiiro)

Hiiro also liked sweet things. Not only that, but amongst them, pudding in particular was one of his favourites. Normal pudding, or custard pudding, was usually a cold dish.

However, having been made aware of the existence of this piping hot pudding, Hiiro felt that he could no longer eat normal pudding.

The pudding was simply that delicious. Out of all the desserts he had eaten since coming to this world, it was, without a doubt, the most delicious.

“How is it, Hiiro? Did I manage to pay back some of my feelings of gratitude?” (Eveam)

At Eveam’s words, Hiiro nodded in response.

“Yeah, it’s delicious. It’s the first time I’ve felt grateful for having come to this country.” (Hiiro)

“I-I see! That’s great!” (Eveam)

As Eveam turned towards Musun with a happy face, Musun began to continue explaining the dishes a bit more. Following that, she gave a bow and left.

“Pufu~I’m so full~” (Mikazuki)

“Me too~” (Nikki)

Mikazuki and Nikki held down their bulging bellies as their faces melted with happiness. And after a short while-

Suusuu.....suusuu.....

Their breathing evened out as they fell asleep while still sitting. Having filled their bellies, they both were likely assaulted by a comfortable drowsiness. The eyes of the two girls quietly closed.

“These two.....” (Hiiro)

Hiiro tapped his temple with his finger and let out a sigh as though he were troubled. Seeing such a Hiiro, Eveam gave a pleasant smile.

“Fufu, it seems that they’re quite satisfied.” (Eveam)

“These two enjoyed it way too much.” (Hiiro)

“Isn’t it fine? Since they’re still young.” (Eveam)

“Haa, good grief.....” (Hiiro)

“Allow us to prepare a room for you. Tonight, all of you may rest there.” (Eveam)

“Is it really okay?” (Hiiro)

“Yeah, there’s also the other promise that I exchanged with you this time, Hiiro. It won’t be possible to enter it right now, but I can still issue you a permit. I’ll have it prepared so I can give it to you tomorrow.” (Eveam)

Hiiro went, “*Alright!*” as he fist-pumped internally.



At that moment, Liliyn made an unamused expression. She had heard from Nikki that Hihiro would be receiving a permit for the 《Fortuna Grand Library》 as compensation for having participated in the war this time around.

However, originally, that permit had been something she was going to prepare as payment for Hihiro's information. Well, for her, it had simply been an excuse for her to accompany Hihiro on his journey. But upon coming to this country, she figured she would try to obtain the permit herself for Hihiro's sake.

Although it could be said that she no longer had to do any extra work, she somehow had a dissatisfied feeling as she swallowed all her wine in one gulp.

As Liliyn did so, Aquinas briskly walked towards Eveam. After he whispered something into Eveam's ear, she gave a slightly sad look while replying, "I see".

Then, Eveam stood up from her seat.

"I'll have a maid guide you to your room. You truly helped us today, Hihiro. Allow me to express my thanks with this. Thank you." (Eveam)

".....is it really alright for a ruler to lower their head so easily like that?" (Hihiro)

After Hihiro asked that, she smiled while countering.

"I have no intention of becoming a ruler that doesn't express their gratitude at all." (Eveam)

"....." (Hihiro)

"If you need anything, ask one of the castle's people without restraint. Then I'll see you tomorrow, Hihiro." (Eveam)

".....yeah." (Hihiro)

Upon saying that, Eveam left the hall. And, just as Aquinas was about to exit the hall as well, Hihiro firmly felt him locking eyes with Liliyn.

(Does he have some business with Aka-Loli.....?) (Hihiro)

That's when he suddenly remembered. That Aquinas and Liliyn had a common feature.

Hihiro continued to stare at Aquinas as he left, and thought-

(.....well, it's not something that should bother me.) (Hihiro)

He was as dry as usual. If needed, Liliyn would probably talk about it with him, but Hihiro judged that there was no need for him to ask about it himself.

Following that, Hihiro and co. carried the stupid children as they headed to their room with the maid's guidance.

## Chapter 142

### Late Night Conversation

---

The night grew late, and at a time where everyone else would normally be asleep Aquinas stood alone on the terrace, looking up towards the starry sky while holding a glass of wine in one hand.

After taking a small sip, he lightly closed his eyes.

Aquinas: 「...To think that you would return to this country」

He said as he stood there, as if speaking to himself. Then a small shadow appeared from behind him. Her face, illuminated by the moonlight, could be clearly seen.

Aquinas's eyes widened slowly, as though he knew about this individual, and spoke.

Aquinas: 「...Liliyn?」

Yes, the one who had appeared was Liliyn.

Liliyn: 「Hmph, I didn't return because I wanted to」

Aquinas turned to face her. With the way she frowned as she spoke like she was in a bad mood, he could see her as nothing more than a child.

Aquinas: 「Hmph, but I'm surprised. To be together with an individual like that. What kind of strange turn of events brought this on?」

Liliyn: 「Why would that concern you?」

Aquinas: 「What a harsh thing to say to your own brother」

Liliyn: 「Don't kid me. I've never thought of you as my brother」

Aquinas: 「Hmph... You're the same as always. ...Hm?」

Aquinas, as though he had noticed something, focused his gaze behind Liliyn. Liliyn however, as if she already knew about that existence, lightly shrugged her shoulders.

Liliyn: 「It's fine to show yourself」

The one who appeared from the shadows, obeying his master's words, was Silva.

Aquinas: 「...It seems like you have a capable guard as well」

Aquinas looked towards Silva with admiration.

Liliyn: 「Hmph, he's just a worrywart」

Silva, unlike his usual self, kept quiet and stood near Liliyn with a serious expression. It seemed like he had noticed Liliyn leaving her room and followed after her as a guard.

Aquinas: 「...To think you'd come back on your own despite hating this country so much... I guess that goes to show the calibre of the one known as Hiiro」

Liliyn: 「Who knows? Think about it yourself」

Liliyn chuckled as she gave a vague answer. After looking at her, Aquinas smiled kindly.

Aquinas: 「...Hiiro's gained the attraction of a rather troublesome person」

Liliyn: 「W...W-W-W-W-W-What do you mean by attracted!? W... W-W-W-Why do I have to be a-attracted to a g-guy like that!? No way! Impossible! I demand you take back what you said immediately!」

She pointed and yelled at Aquinas, her face beet red with embarrassment, but Aquinas only looked surprised.

Aquinas: 「This is... I only said it half-jokingly to tease you a little, but it seems like I wasn't completely wrong」

Liliyn: 「D... D-D-Don't act like you just understood something! Listen, what you're thinking of right now is completely impossible without a single doubt!」

Aquinas shrugged as he looked at the girl in front of him shout a barrage of excuses. However, he knew saying anything more than this was pointless so he changed the topic.

Aquinas: 「By the way, I haven't asked you yet」

Liliyn: 「Haa... Haa... Haa... Ah? About what?」

Aquinas: 「The reason you returned to this country」

Liliyn: 「Hmph, relax. I don't plan on starting anything in this country. I just had something to do nearby」

Aquinas: 「...You did?」

Liliyn: 「Yeah, if anyone has a reason to be here, then that would be Hiiro」

Liliyn told Aquinas about how Hiiro wanted to read everything that was found in the 《Basement 5》 of the 《Fortuna Grand Library》.

Aquinas: 「I see. So Her Highness was telling the truth」

Aquinas had heard from Eveam that Hiiro wanted an entry permit for the library as compensation for his assistance in the war.

Aquinas thought that Hiiro may have been lying about risking his life just for the sake of reading books, but he was surprised that Hiiro had actually participated with books as compensation.

Aquinas: 「If it's about the entry permit then it should be issued shortly, so be at ease」

Liliyn: 「Obviously. Because that was the promised reward」

Aquinas smiled at the girl who answered in a manner similar to Hiiro.

Aquinas: 「That's right. In that case, will you be in this country for a while?」

Liliyn: 「I probably will」

At the very least, she couldn't leave until Hiiro got bored of reading the books in the library.

Aquinas: 「I see...」

Liliyn glared at Aquinas, who looked like he was thinking of a serious matter.

Liliyn: 「Oi, I don't know what you're thinking about, but if you plan on binding Hiiro to this country then you better stop while you're ahead」

Aquinas: 「...Oh? And why is that?」

Liliyn: 「He's the kind of person that doesn't like being restricted, and I can't think of anything in this country that could be used to bait him」

Aquinas: 「...」

Liliyn: 「If you try to forcibly make him stay in the country, then the country will become his enemy」

Aquinas: 「...」

Liliyn: 「Furthermore...」

Aquinas: 「...?」

Liliyn: 「If you try to do anything like that...」

Liliyn's red glare intensified.

Liliyn: 「I won't just stand by quietly. Understand?」

Aquinas eyes slightly widened as Liliyn glared at him with obvious killing intent. He also noticed that Silva behind her was also full of hostility.

Aquinas: 「He really is an interesting person, that Hiiro」

Aquinas was surprised that Liliyn would be so attached to another, and a 『Humas』 at that. Furthermore, he had never seen her defend someone that wasn't her servant.

Aquinas didn't show it on his face but he was shocked at how much Liliyn had changed. His interest in Hiiro, who had caused her to change so much, grew even more.

Of course, with his participation in the war, there were many things that Aquinas wanted to know about Hiiro in addition to his character.

He had also noticed that Eveam held feelings towards Hiiro that was stronger than that of a mere friend. It was natural that she would develop an interest in Hiiro, who had already gained Aquinas's attention despite having met a limited number of times.

Aquinas also understood that from the partners Hiiro brought with him to the audience today. Nikki, despite being so young, stood in front of Hiiro to protect him when Marione glared at him with hostility.

Mikazuki just hid behind Hiiro, but that goes to show how she believed that she would be safe if she was near Hiiro. Plus, the two in front of him.

Aquinas: (Now that I think about it, it seemed like Marione had also accepted Hiiro all of a sudden)

Aquinas began to feel that the existence known as Hiiro attracted those around him merely with his presence.

And despite being a 『Humas』, he had allies that were 『Gabranth』, 『Evila』, and even mixed races.

Aquinas: (This guard also looks like he's got a few stories to tell)

Aquinas hadn't noticed that Silva was a 『Pheom』, but he could determine that he was not an average being.

Aquinas: (To gather this many people of different races together... He really is an interesting individual)

As he thought that, he matched gazes with Liliyn who was still glaring at him.

Aquinas: 「Liliyn, let me ask one thing」

Liliyn: 「...What is it?」

Aquinas: 「Have you still... not given up?」

Liliyn folds her arms arrogantly and shouts,

Liliyn: 「Of course I haven't!」

Aquinas: 「...I see」

After asking that, Aquinas had nothing else to talk about. His expression was one of understanding, but was also sorrowful.

Liliyn also had nothing else to say and so left.

# KONJIKI NO WORD MASTER

---

## Chapter 143 Permit Received!

---

At about the same time, the Demon Lord, Eveam was also gazing at the same starry sky with Aquinas watching.

What had taken place today would surely leave a mark in the history of this world.

The betrayal of 『Humas』 in the peace conference. Then, the conspiracy of the 『Humas』 and 『Gabranth』 to invade 【Demon Capital Xaos】. Furthermore, the internal betrayal of some 『Evila』.

War. If spelled correctly, it's a very short word. But in reality, it contains pain and death.

There was nothing one would gain from it. However, one can obtain security if the threat from the other side is destroyed. And, it's possible to obtain peace.

Still, is this the right answer? Fighting against someone, wounding them, killing them, and hating each other for doing so..... will one truly obtain peace with such methods?

Why did people stop taking each other's hands? Long ago, the people in this world were laughing with each other. Of course, there were some personal fights as well.

However, the fights never developed to the point of depriving another person's life. At the very least, it definitely happened somewhere in the past.

Yet, why did the world become something like this?

Eveam had a clouded expression as she gazed at the beautiful stars.

“.....Although we live under such peaceful stars.... Why does a person stain their own hearts with hatred for each other?” (Eveam)

Because it was approaching winter, her breath came out as white mist.

She remembered the words of Victoria’s King Rudolf, who was at the conference..

『In that case, supposing, from now on, a part of your family was assumed to be killed by someone, and revenge is meaningless for you. By resolving it through conferences ..... Can you still make the same face while settling the matter to those people? 』

Even so, if one asked her that question, she will still never give up on creating a peaceful world. However, the reality was, she was betrayed, and a lot of her brethren who lived in the country were hurt. Some died among them.

When she remembered those things, she felt a dark feeling breaking out from inside her. In addition, there was Greyald’s death, and the report from Aquinas that Teckil is still nowhere to be found.



This was all caused by the war the other party raised. If only they did not resort to this kind of violence, everybody could have attained good results at the held conference, and might have been able to live happily with each other.

She heard that death was the worst form of pain. It's painful, difficult, sorrowful, and detestable. She wanted to convey these feelings to everyone by all means.

Eveam painfully gripped the handrail of the terrace.

“Don't succumb to it Eveam.....if I act on these feelings, I might really do something that cannot be undone...!” (Eveam)

She tried to calm herself by desperately speaking out her feelings. Yet, her hatred didn't weaken at all.

(.....Kiria) (Eveam)

During such times, if Kiria were beside her, comforting words would have always soothed Eveam's heart. But, that person was no longer with her.

Eveam's heart seemed to have broken from the betrayal by the person who she had trusted the most. Thus, when she recognized the reality that she was alone in the night and Kiria was not with her anymore, Eveam was not able to hold her feelings back.

A stream of tears flowed out without end from her eyes.

(Why.... Why did you do that.....Kiria) (Eveam)

Kiria had always supported her by her side. She was the one who helped her when she had strayed off her path. They had always been together ever since they were small children, spending all their time with one another.

A best friend, an elder sister, and a mother, she was a very warm existence for Eveam.

“Kiria... Kiria.....” (Eveam)

After that, her sobbing continued for a while

Next morning, Eveam called Hiiro and his companions to the 《Ruler’s Room》 .

Hiiro noticed something about Eveam when he saw her face. Her eyes were swollen compared to the previous day. She seemed to have covered it with a light make-up but it didn’t seem to hide it.

It was obvious that she cried last night and the reason could be understood somehow. This time, she had experienced a lot of betrayal. He also heard that the person who she trusted the most had deserted her.

As a Demon Lord, she didn't seem to have matured yet. Although her age and appearance didn't look that way, her mentality seemed to have not changed from that of a teenage girl.

Incidentally, when they first talked with each other, those were actually the impression he had on her. Naïve and fragile.

She was by no means someone who possessed the caliber to govern her race. Despite this, she still stood up, chose such a difficult road and was burdened with that painful choice. The pressure was way too heavy for her.

Besides, no one can calmly sleep through the night with a betrayal from a person they most trusted. Hiiro can understand her situation as a thin line of nerves appeared on him.

Other chief vassals didn't mention it to her as they seemed to have noticed her face too.

"My guests, I believe you have slept well" (Eveam)

Although he wanted to hear what's wrong with her, Hiiro became silent and looked at her. Then, she took out a something like a card from her bosom.

"Hiiro, as promised, here it is" (Eveam)

It looked like a telephone card; the outside frame was decorated by gold, with a shape of a black wing embedded on it.

Eveam handed the card to Hiiro when she approached him.

“I see, so this is the permit to enter the deepest level of 《Fortuna Grand Library's》  
《Basement 5》 ” (Hiiro)

Hiiro surveyed the card after receiving it, it seemed this permit was for 《Basement 5》 as it was etched on it. With this, he can now enjoy every nook and cranny of the library.

A smile floated on his face unintentionally. He thought that he won't be getting bored for quite some time.

“Don't lose it. Please take care of it because reissuing the card takes a considerable amount of time. ” (Eveam)

Hiiro returned her advice with a nod.

“S-Shishou! I want to see it as well!” (Nikki)

“Ah, Mikazuki wants to see it too!” (Mikazuki)

Two children tried to hop and grip the card in Hiiro's hand.

"Although I particularly don't mind, but supposing you guys lose it.....You know what that means right?" (Hiiro)

Both of them stopped their movements as they felt a chill run down their backs from Hiiro's gaze. However, they still had the look which conveyed that they wanted to see card.

After his attention was drawn to them again, he reluctantly handed it to them. Immediately, he saw Nikki and Mikazuki cordially smiling with each other.

"However Hiiro, we are still in war right now. Hence, the library is closed. I hope you understand" (Eveam)

".....It can't be helped" (Hiiro)

If he was not mistaken, there were still enemies lurking in the surroundings of 『Evila』 . So it was not the time for them to carelessly open the library in such a state of emergency.

Still, considering Hiiro, he wanted to enter it as soon as possible. The dilemma where he cannot possibly enter it, got him very irritated.

"Hey, when will the library be open?" (Hiiro)

It was the question he would naturally ask first.

“Let’s see. It’ll be, at least, after the prospect of the war ends” (Eveam)

Certainly, he seemed to agree to her words. The country was in a situation where they did not know when an attack would commence and so, it has been in tension for a long time. Even as an outsider, rather, because he was an outsider, they cannot consent to his selfish action

“I see. But I want to read the books as soon as possible. I guess I need end this war quickly” (Hiiro)

Eveam was speechless on Hiiro’s word. [Haa] Liliyn similarly leaked a sigh in amazement.

“H-Hiiro, although we want to end it as well, we are mutually looking for a method for that right now. I believe this situation will continue for a little while” (Eveam)

“I agree. For those guys, a lot of their war potential were cut down. So it is natural for them to give priority on waiting for reinforcements from their home country” (Hiiro)

Eveam nodded in affirmation to Hiiro’s opinion.

“Legally speaking, if we had captured the second prince Lenion, we could have used him to negotiate an end to this war” (Eveam)

But that plan could no longer be used anymore since Lenion managed to escape.

(Hm, considering that Beast King, the real question is whether the war will be controlled by his own son's life) (Hiiro)

From the impression he had when he fought Beast King Leowald, Hiiro felt the Beast King not to be a person who gave priority to the life of someone and thereby let such an opportunity to slip by.

As predicted by Hiiro, this was a good opportunity for them. The current situation favoured the enemies as they could now cross the bridge, thus letting the beast men to bring over their war potential and finally crush the 『Evila』 .

Naturally, they would besiege 『Evila』 even though it was not easy to bring it down. Notwithstanding, they would freely dispose all their war potential to the surroundings of this country.

“..... For the time being, let's try this. First of all, it is necessary to cut off the route” (Hiiro)

Eveam puckered up her brows from Hiiro's mutter.

“Route? What route?” (Eveam)

“Ha? You haven't noticed yet? I'm pretty sure those guys' lifeline is the bridge “ (Hiiro)

Naturally, everyone shifted their attention to him.

“Don’t you agree that the bridge is their only path of retreat?” (Hihiro)

“Y-Yes” (Eveam)

“If you cut off that course, their war potential will not increase any further either, those guys who are in the demon continent can then be confined. Like a rat in bag cornered bit by bit” (Hihiro)

“T-that’s true.....” (Eveam)

Eveam place her finger near her mouth as she had a convinced look.

“But Hihiro, I do agree that it would bring good results, but how can you bring the bridge down? The enemy is guaranteed to have stationed their main forces to defend the bridge. It’s not easy to destroy it” (Eveam)

“I heard that you destroyed a bridge before?” (Hihiro)

As he said, she along with Aquinas had dropped the bridge that connected the continents of 『Evila』 and 『Gabranth』

Therefore, he mentioned those words, thinking she would easily pull of something similar, but the person in question had a troubled expression.

“.....It’s impossible” (Eveam)



## Chapter 144

### The Heroes and Teckil's Meeting

---

Hiiro: 「Why?」

Eveam: 「At that time, destroying the bridge was our immediate priority. Thus, I was able to make preparations in advance. Moreover, as the enemy didn't think that I would try to destroy the bridge, they simply stood there, dumbfounded.」

Previously, in order to make the bridge collapse, Eveam used an enormous amount of magic power and a large quantity of blood in order to construct the ultimate magic. However, it appeared to be something that required a lot of preparation before use.

The magic at that time could only be used for the first time due to Eveam and Aquinas' magic being synchronized. It could be said that they had practiced quite a bit for that purpose.

For the most part, it appeared that they would be capable of synchronizing better than the previous time. Yet, even so, it would still take time and, above all, the current situation was not one where the enemy would silently watch over them as they performed the ritual required for the utilisation of such a magic.

As soon as Eveam appeared, she would be, without question, the first one to be targeted. What's more, she would be on the receiving end of a focused attack. Although not absolutely certain, one would be unable to cast a spell that requires such intensive concentration. They would definitely be interrupted.

Hiiro: 「Certainly, they aren't such idiots as to repeat their previous mistakes.」

Eveam: 「Aa<sup>(1)</sup>. Besides, the magic used at that time requires me to construct formulas before hand.」

Hiiro: 「Nn?<sup>(2)</sup> What do you mean by that?」

Eveam: 「What I'm trying to say is, the day before you want to use the spell, there is a need to assemble the formula and carve it onto the body as a crest.」

In actuality, last time, on her very own belly, the magic formula, aka the so-called magic circle, had been drawn onto it. Moreover, once the magic circle has been drawn, one cannot use any other magic until the large magic has been casted. A large amount of magic is needed to even draw the circle.

The ‘prior preparations’ she was referring to was exactly that. Additionally, that magic circle required a total of three days to draw.

Eveam: 「Furthermore, if I were to use it, I would be rendered useless for a while. That’s because I’d become bedridden. In the current situation, I cannot afford to fall.」

Hiiro: 「.....」

Eveam: 「Moreover, there is a significant distance between us and the bridge. Right now, I am unable to leave the castle for long periods of time. That is something that also holds true for the 《Cruel》 here, but」

Eveam spoke while directing her line of sight towards Aquinas and the others.

Hiiro: 「I see. If there are such circumstances, it seems that you can’t afford to use such magic at a moment’s notice. In addition, if we head to the bridge, it would undoubtedly turn into a fight and might create casualties, huh?」

Eveam: 「Exactly. It goes without saying that there are many advantages to be gained from destroying the bridge. Of course, I genuinely do not wish to destroy it, but now that it’s come to this, we are left with no other choice.」

A sad, fleeting expression surfaced.

Eveam: 「However, due to the present situation, it has proven quite difficult to direct the necessary forces towards destroying the bridge. The enemy must have strengthened their defences in order to prevent the bridge from being broken. If we

were to collide with them, it would turn into a battle of considerable magnitude.」

To the opposition, it was their lifeline. In order to not allow this chance to slip by them, they would most likely guard it desperately.

In all honesty, ambushing the incoming enemy was not a difficult task. This was because, if they took the rear posts, as long as the ability difference between them and their enemy was not too overwhelming, they would be able to continue to maintain their defence.

However, this time, it was the reverse. If they were trying to destroy the bridge, the subject of the opposition's protection, then they would require a considerable amount of military might. Furthermore, a fight would undoubtedly result, bringing about further casualties.

Eveam: 「That's why, even though I think that Hiiro's judgement of destroying the bridge is correct, it is difficult to execute such a plan.」

Eveam shook her head side to side in an exhausted manner.

Hiiro: 「Then it's fine if someone just goes alone, right?」

Eveam: 「.....eh?」

As Hiiro had issued such words in a natural manner, Eveam was caught off guard as her gaping mouth hardened.

Hiiro: 「Why are you spacing out? Were you listening to me?」

As Eveam didn't return an answer to Hiiro's words for quite a while, he scowled in displeasure. Eveam, who had suddenly returned to reality upon hearing those words-

Eveam: 「Eh, n-no, Hihiro? A-alone, you say.....w-what do you mean by that? .....alone?」

The word 'alone' had most likely caught her attention as she had repeated it twice.

Hihiro: 「Aa, you don't want to lose your war potential. If you say that you don't want to dilute your defensive forces, wouldn't it be fine if one were to go alone?」

Eveam: 「.....ah, no, un<sup>(3)</sup>, that's right. It's as Hihiro says, if we only sent one person, then it would not become an inconvenience. However, I should have also said earlier that the 《Cruel》 cannot move, yes?」

Hihiro: 「Since I've heard you say that a little while ago, I'm already aware of that. I didn't say that we should mobilise these guys, you know?」

Eveam: 「Eh? .....y-you don't mean?」

Eveam's eyes blinked rapidly as she looked towards Hihiro.

Hihiro: 「If I go, then there won't be any problems, right?」

As the atmosphere in that location grew silent, only Liliyn's sigh could once again be heard.

As something chilly fell onto his cheeks, he suddenly opened his eyes as he realised his sudden predicament. Although he was asleep until now, even though it could not be

confirmed whether he was fully awake or not, as he was unable to determine where he was, he wore a blank expression as he surveyed his surroundings.

And as he finally remembered what had happened to him, light dwelled in his eyes as he began to restlessly shift his line of sight about, as if he were looking for something.

Taishi: 「Chika-!」

As Chika was sleeping next to him in a similar manner, Taishi called out Chika's name. Taishi then placed a hand on her cheek and became relieved as he could still feel warmth emanating from them, even if slightly cold.

Taishi: 「Thank god.....Chika.」

Although she had yet to awaken, Taishi felt comfort due to the fact that it appeared that she had not yet passed away. Following this, Taishi once again checked his surroundings.

This place appeared to look like a limestone cave. If one were to look up, one could confirm several groups of rocks that resembled needles. In addition, water was dripping from said sharp rocks.

It appeared that Taishi had been roused from his sleep due to said droplets landing onto his cheek. The falling water had most likely been caused by the moisture in the air condensing due to the cold, or so Taishi had thought.

The reason for this was because the chill within the cave's interior was quite dominating. For the time being, they had been given blankets, yet, even though they had wrapped their bodies with the blanket, it was still cold.

In this situation, Chika's safety was Taishi's salvation. If he was alone in this situation, he might have gone mad.

???: 「You've finally woken up, huh su?[\(4\)](#)」

At that moment, a voice could be heard coming from within the darkness. As he winced at the sudden voice, Taishi's body stiffened as he turned around and squinted towards the darkness.

\*peta peta\*(5) The sound of someone walking could be heard. Following this, a shadow shaped as a person began to surface from the darkness.

???: 「To think that we'd be reunited in a place like this, it's real surprising, huh Hero-kun(6)? 」

Taishi's eyes opened wide. Of course, that was to be expected. The reason for this was because the one before him was somebody that Taishi was familiar with.

Taishi: 「.....f-from that time.....the painter?」

Taishi had remembered. He was certain that he had met this individual at the 【Victorias】 palace, during the time when they attended the Birth Festival of King Rudolf and the first princess Lilith.

Accepting Lilith's explanation that he was a famous painter of sorts, Taishi had exchanged words with him. If he were to express his thoughts of him, although Taishi thought that he was an unusual individual, as he felt that he possessed the atmosphere of a good person, Taishi remembered that he had a favourable impression of him.

Taishi: 「I-It was.....Nazaar, right?.」

Taishi was unable to comprehend why Nazaar was in such a place, nor why he had his hands restrained by handcuffs.

Nazaar: 「Oo~(7), it looks like you remember me su.」

Nazaar's eyes narrowed happily as they peeked out from his annoying, unkempt hair that covered half of his face.

Taishi: 「W-Why are you...?」

Obviously, Taishi was not aware of why he was here. Moreover, even though he was handcuffed and trapped in here, it was a fact that Nazaar had, like himself, been captured.

Yet, Taishi could feel a eeriness from this entity. Without thinking, Taishi stood up, as if he were trying to protect Chika. Looking at such a Taishi, Nazaar, in a humbled, yet troubled manner-

Nazaar: 「It's alright su. I don't really have any intention of doing anything to you guys su」

Taishi: 「.....I don't believe you.」

Nazaar: 「Well, that's to be expected su. In that case, I won't move from here so I'd appreciate it if you were to calm down su」

As he expressed his intention of not moving, Nazaar dropped his waist down onto that spot. Although it wasn't clear as to whether Taishi had believed him or not, while not diverting his gaze, Taishi sat down in a similar manner.

Nazaar: 「First things first, I guess I should perform a self introduction su.」

Taishi: 「Self Introduction? Aren't you Nazaar?」

Nazaar: 「Nn~ That's just an alias su」

Taishi: 「Ha? Alias? Eh, why?」

Taishi couldn't comprehend the meaning behind why the famous painter was claiming that his name was merely an alias.

Taishi: 「Ah, I see. An 'Art Name'[\(8\)](#) or something like that, right?」

Taishi thought that it was something similar to a Mangaka's pen name or the net world's handle name.

Nazaar: 「Nn~ I guess so su...if an artist were to make such a claim, then that would be correct, without a doubt. However, because of this situation, allow me to once again introduce myself with my real name su.」

Taishi: 「O-oo.」

Teckil: 「I'm called Teckil Shizaa su. Even though I look like this, I hold the position of the Cruel's 《Rank 3》 su.」

Taishi: 「Na-!？」



## Chapter 145 The Mysterious Boy

---

Involuntarily, Taishi stood up and entered a combat stance. It was only natural. The opponent, was an 『Evila』 and to top it off, a person who had top-class power. Taishi's reaction was only normal.

*I'm a hero, and in hopes of gaining control of 『Evila』, I came to 【Demon City · Chaos】. Then the war broke out.*

As he started to think, he understood that it wouldn't be strange for Teckil to come and kill him, since Taishi was a hero after all. Such thoughts caused his face to turn pale. Seeing Taishi in such a state, Teckil shrugged his shoulder.

"You can relax, it's not like I'm thinking of killing you-su." (Teckil)

"Wha-, Why?" (Taishi)

"I didn't receive an order like that-su~." (Teckil)

"Order?" (Taishi)

"That's right-su. I haven't received any order to kill the heroes, from her majesty-su." (Teckil)

"....." (Taishi)

"Besides, in this situation, I believe it is better to join you guys, rather than oppose you-su." (Teckil)

"This situation..... Do you know where this is?" (Taishi)

"That is something, you who was brought here should also know-su." (Teckil)

Taishi recalled the time he arrived at the place.

He was caught up in a big tornado, and when he thought he had been blown far away, a strange person appeared in front of him. It took Chika as hostage, and since Taishi had no means to use magic, he had to listen to that person.

He obediently followed him, and then arrived at a cave. The inside was very dark; it seemed to be like a space that blocked the light.

He was taken into a hole inside the cave, where there was a blind alley. At its entrance, there were grid patterns established, along with the structure of a prison cell.

Then, the man who guided them here, tossed Chika carelessly to the floor, and in his rage, thrust a fist into Taishi's abdomen; an intense pressure had caused him to fall to his knees.

The man had then faced towards Taishi and Chika who were in a crouching position, and threw a blanket at them. He then placed a bracelet like object on both of their wrists. Then, Taishi's consciousness faded away after that.

"W-What, about you Teckil-san?" (Taishi)

"Just call me Teckil-su." (Teckil)

"Ah..... Teckil were you caught by those guys?" (Taishi)

"That's right-su. Though, I don't know about the man who brought you two here. I'm your senpai here-su. " (Teckil)

He said it in a light tone. Looking at him, it was highly likely to forget the seriousness of the situation they were caught in.

"You don't know him? Then who brought you here?" (Taishi)

"That is....." (Teckil)

At that moment, the grid pattern made a rattling sound as it opened. Both of them changed their line of sight in that direction. There was one person standing over there, it was the man who had brought Taishi and Chika to the cell. A wound in the form of a cross decorated his cheek.

"Ho~, finally that man has also woken up" (suspicious person)

He faced Teckil and started speaking. Teckil had been pretending to be asleep all this time, after giving Judom the information he had.

Thus, it was his first time meeting this person face-to-face.

"My lord, is calling for you guys. Come with me" (suspicious person)

Taishi made a gulping sound involuntarily.

"Uu....." (Chika)

As if measuring the timing, the other prisoner woke up.

"Chi, Chika!" (Taishi)

".....Ta.....Taishi.....?" (Chika)

Chika gazed at Taishi with half opened eyes. As she opened her eyes, Taishi felt relieved.

“Excellent. You three, stand up quickly.” (Suspicious person)

The Person said the same thing again, and stood near the door, Taushi gripped his fist and considered taking the person out but,

“Don’t do that-su” (Teckil)

Teckil said in a low voice.

“Wha-, Why?” (Taishi)

“You don’t understand-su. This is right in the middle of the enemy territory. Even I don’t know how many enemies are here, and if we made an untactful move, not only you but that child over there will also be exposed to danger.” (Teckil)

“Ah.....” (Taishi)

What Teckil said was undeniably right. Certainly, right now there was just the cross cheeked man as the enemy, but it might not be the same outside, there might be many of them lurking outside.

Even if they did subdue the man, there was no guarantee that they would be safe after.

“Besides, he is strong-su. Are you thinking of winning without a weapon-su.” (Teckil)

“Well, there is magic, right?” (Taishi)

“It seems like you don’t know about it-su, so let me tell you-su.” (Teckil)

Teckil jerked his chin and motioned it towards Taishi’s right hand.

“Those bracelet are called 《Magic Sealing Bracelet》 -su” (Teckil)

“Eh? Is this a Magical Tool?” (Taishi)

“They are similar to my handcuffs” (Teckil)

The handcuffs placed on Teckil were more powerful than the ones on Taishi and Chika. It meant they viewed Teckil as more of a threat, but in this situation both of their magical powers were sealed.

“Now then, in this situation can you defeat him without any weapon and magic-su?” (Teckil)

“Tha-, That is.....” (Taishi)

“In addition to that, this girl has only just woke up. At the moment, it would be better to quietly obey him for our own sake-su.”

Taishi accepted the words from Tekil and dropped his shoulder.

“.....Understood. Chika, can you stand up?” (Taishi)

“Y-Yeah.....” (Chika)

Without understanding the situation she was in, she could only nod.

“I know there are many things you would like to ask, but for now bear with it” (Taishi)

“I want to ask, where is this place, what happened, also about that person, but it doesn’t seem like the right place for it.” (Chika)

When Chika woke at last, judging that the situation was not favourable, she agreed.

“What are you doing? Follow me fast.” (Person)

Upon hearing the man’s voice, the three stood up and left the prison.

The place Taishi and others were taken was supposed to be inner part of the cave, but the place was surprisingly bright. However, it was not the sunlight rather; it was a bluish-white gemstone casting a strong light.

The sources of the strong radiance were four giant gemstones. From inside the cave sprouted roots similar to that of a giant tree which supported the four giant gemstones, the roots wrapped and entwined around them.

There were two giant gemstones at each side of entrance. In front of the entrance was the stairs and on top of stairs, an ornamented chair like a throne was erected.

“I was waiting.” (Throne guy)

There was a person sitting on that throne and on the left side were two women, standing close, holding some kind of white paper in their hands.

“A child?” (Taishi)

Taishi upon seeing the figure of the person sitting on the throne involuntarily muttered. As Taishi saw it, there definitely was a child sitting on the throne.

His age seemed to be around 10 years old. He had blonde hair, and his smiling face had the charming power to capture the heart of anyone regardless their gender or age.

The word ‘bishounen’ won’t be able to cut it. As Taishi saw his face, he thought, if the boy were to go on television, he would become a ‘super-idol’ overnight.

Even Chika, who was standing beside Taishi, was staring at the child, astonished and in blank amazement.

(He has the atmosphere of a character that only comes out in games)(Taishi)

Taishi, who on reflex prepared to walk towards a beauty like that. If the boy grows up to be an adult, his beauty would be more polished and would attract each and everybody, Taishi gulps.

“Come on, over here. Let’s talk.” (Bishounen)

As if the boy understood what the three were thinking, he chuckled.

Involuntarily, Taishi’s legs start walking in his direction, but the moment Teckil’s face entered his vision, he is brought back to his senses, and his eyes open wide.

“He-, Hey Teckil, what happened?” (Taishi)

Taishi asked him, because Teckil, for some reason was sweating, from his head, abnormally.

His eyes were wide open, as if he had seen something unbelievable.

Following this, Teckil’s mouth, apparently becoming tongue tied at a single word, began to heavily ask the following.

“N-No way..... such.....did you betray us.....?” (Teckil)

Teckil said those words towards the person sitting on the throne. Taishi thought that the boy had betrayed Teckil, and so he was saying such words.

“I need an answer-su. Did you betray us-su .....Kiri-chan!?”

That was obviously a way of calling some close to you, due to that Taishi now believed his thinking was right.

“D-Do you know, that kid?” (Taishi)

Regarding the question, Teckil slightly shook his head.

“It’s different.....no, it’s not-su . I also know about the boy-su. But, the person I’m talking to right now is you, Kiri-chan-su.” (Teckil)

And so, the line of sight of Teckil fell not on the boy, but on one of the girls standing beside the boy. Judging from the flow of talk, it seemed like he was speaking to the women and not to the boy.

“Is it alright for me to talk, Your Majesty?” (Kilia)

The women gently lowered her head toward boy.

“Yeah, it’s okay” (Bishounen)

“I give my thanks” (Kilia)

She easily got the permission, and now faced Teckil.

“It’s been a while, Teckil-san” (Kilia)

“.....Kiri-chan” (Teckil)

He clenched his teeth, and spoke in a forced voice. He made an unpleasant face when he found out that the woman was indeed the person he knew.

“Why are you in a place like this-su? Wasn’t Eveam-sama supposed to be the only one you decided to follow-su” (Teckil)

“.....” (Kilia)

“.....Did you from the start-su? Did you betray Eveam-sama from the start.....” (Teckil)

Looking at him talking in astonished expression, the boy opened his mouth with a gleeful voice

“It’s alright NO.05, tell him the truth.” (not so good bishounen)

“Th- .....the truth? N-No, leaving that aside, what do you mean by NO.05-su?” (Teckil)

Looking down on Teckil with a lifeless and cold stare, the woman addressed as NO.05 spoke.

“I’m the intelligence specialised Varukaria, identification NO.05. The Kilia you knew is an artificial being made for the purpose of getting close to you guys.” (NO.05)

“Wha-What, are you talking about-su?” (Teckil)

“There is only one leader to me, and that is, His Majesty, sitting over here.” (NO.05)

“No-No way.....” (Teckil)

Teckil fell down on to his knees as he stared hard at the ground.

“Then, that means the information I obtained till now.....?” (Teckil)

“Yes. Do you remember that, you always used me as an intermediary and gave me all the information. And naturally, so my situation was always convenient, altered it and gave it to the country. ” (NO.05)

Teckil’s face became more and more pale.

“Wha-What about, the information about the ‘**Gabranth**’ and ‘**Huma**’ having secret agreements, and that the conference had a dark plot behind.....? ” (Teckil)

“Yes, I told them the information that was convenient for us” (NO.05)

He clenched his hands which were now on the ground.

“WH-What, about the conference!? What about demon lord-sama!? What about 【Xaos】 !?” (Teckil)

“Rest assured, during the conference an unforeseen event occurred. Well leaving that matter aside, Eveam and 【Demon City】 are somehow safe” (NO.05)

Teckil sighed heavily as he felt exhausted from all the exertion.

“Well, these works are done by people, so there will always be mistakes Teckil-kun” (really asshole bishounen)

The boy still didn’t break his smile. It was as if he was even enjoying the mistake he had made.

“.....That’s right, the biggest problem here was you-su.” (Teckil)

He started glaring at the boy.

“Ahaha, you’re scary. It is wrong to glare at me with eyes like that. Even though, I look like this, I’m still your boss.” (really asshole bishounen)

“Kuu.....” (Teckil)

Taishi, as he saw the two exchange glares, spoke mildly.

“H-Hey Teckil, who is that kid?” (Taishi)

“.....” (Teckil)

“Hmhmhm, come on now tell me, Teckil” (Taishi)

Taishi glanced at the boy and once again looked towards Teckil. Teckil exhaled a large breath and slowly opened his mouth.

“He is..... the Demon Lord.” (Teckil)

# KONJIKI NO WORD MASTER

---

## Chapter 146 Ex-Demon Lord Avoros

---

As they heard the words from Teckil, Taishi and Chika both froze.

“Eh.....Hey, Taishi. The Demon Lord is a girl, right?”(Chika)

“Ah-Aah.....that’s what I’ve heard from the King.....”(Taishi)

Towards the two people who were bewildered, Teckil showed a wry smile.

“Ah, that way of speaking was a mistake. He is a Demon Lord, but from before. In other words, he is the ex-Demon Lord.” (Teckil)

“E, ex-Demon Lord?”(Taishi)

Taishi, opened his eyes wide and stared at the boy. The boy was still smiling as if he was having fun.

“At that time, when ‘that’ appeared before my eyes.....it was also your doing, right-su?” (Teckil)

“Ahaha, don’t you miss it? But, it did mature, and you killed it one time already. Though, in the old days ‘that’ was only dealing with you with just one hand.” (Avoros)

“Thanks to you, right now I’m a 《Cruel》 -su” (Teckil)

“It means, that time is certainly flowing.” (Avoros)

“.....Leaving that aside, the fact that you’re alive means, your death was a lie-su?”(Teckil)

“Yeah, that’s right.” (Avoros)

“But how did you do it-su? At that time, it was Aquinas who had confirmed it-su ?” (Teckil)

He was the person holding the title of the strongest 『Evila』 . It was indeed a mystery, why didn’t Aquinas discover that Avoros had faked his own death.

“Yeah, his eyes were the the most troublesome thing. That’s why, as you just said I was living, but maybe it is better to say that I was revived.” (Avoros)

“Revived.....?” (Teckil)

“Well, to to be more precise, I’m still incomplete” (Avoros)



“Incomplete.....?” (Teckil)

“Anymore than that is a secret? Yes, for now.” (Avoros)

He said that while bringing his index finger near his lips and closing one eye.

“.....What is your aim-su?” (Teckil)

“Nh~? I said just now that i’m incomplete. So maybe.....,becoming complete” (Avoros)

“.....?” (Teckil)

“You’re making a face expressing that you don’t understand what i’m saying. Well, it is to be expected. If so, how about you let that hero-kun over there, explain what is happening in the world right now?” (Avoros)

While an “eh?” escaped his lips, Teckil looked towards Taishi.

“Eh.....Me?” (Taishi)

“Yeah, that’s right. Didn’t you guys invade the 【Demon City • Chaos】 ” (Avoros)

Teckil was startled after hearing those words, and understood the reason why Iraora had given them the permission to pass the bridge.

Then he discovered a single truth regarding the existence of this Kilia, and the reason to why he who had the job of gathering information was the first one to be captured.

“.....Are we.....at war-su?” (Teckil)

“Whoa~, as expected of Teckil-kun. That’s right, right now we are at war. By the way the Humas and Gabranth are in an alliance.” (Avoros)

“Wha!?” (Teckil)

What could be considered as the worst case scenario had just unfolded. Before the conference he had told Kilia about the strange actions the two races were taking, but if it was as she said just now, then the information was not delivered to Eveam.

He remembered one more thing. Kilia said that Eveam and the 【Demon City】 were both safe. At least, it meant that they have not been assaulted yet.

But the fact that there was a war going on, meant the situation was dire. After all, two races are in an alliance and are trying to destroy the 『Evila』 .

The boy seeing Teckil, gritting his teeth, and spoke,

“I said just now that an unexpected event occurred. That is in one way your fault too.” (Avoros)

Teckil's body stiffened. That was indeed true, the fact that he passed the information to Judom could not be revoked.

"Well, whatever happened in the conference, wouldn't have become a hinderance for the plan. Even so ,it is also the truth that I was underestimating your power. The handcuffs, this time will not restrain your physical abilities, but it will seal your magical power."(Avoros)

When Teckil was brought here, certainly they took away his favorite pen and placed handcuffs, which restricted physical movement. The boy thought if he took away Teckil's favorite pen, then he wouldn't be able to use magic.

That was because Teckil had always done actions that made it look like he needed his pen for using magic. For times when he was in a dire situation he had this trump card saved up, but now, everything was revealed and he was handcuffed with magic sealing handcuffs.

"This way, you can no longer do anything. As for why I called you here, simply put, it is to talk about what is gonna happen from now on." (Avoros)

The three stared at the boy quietly.

"In truth, the other two heroes should have also been here, but it seems like there was another unexpected event.From what I gathered, both of them are with Eveam." (Avoros)

That moment, a shock ran through the spine of Taishi and Chika. They couldn't remain calm after learning that Shinobu and Shuri had been captured by the enemy leader.

"Th-That story!!"(Chika)

"Nh?"(Avoros)

"That story, tell me in detail."(Chika)

Chika as if she had lost control over herself pressed forward for an answer.

"I-It's useless Chika!"(Taishi)

Taishi tried to stop her advance, but the man with the cross wound appeared before her.

"Ahh.....!"(Taishi)

Taishi was surprised at the speed he had appeared in front of Chika.

"Women, you move any forward and i'll cut off one of your legs."(Bruise man) (the X-man seems much better tho)

An intense bloodlust pierced Chika, as if it was a sharp blade.

“Chika!” (Taishi)

Taishi rushed towards Chika, who was hit by the bloodlust and had fallen on her knees.

“Ahaha, don’t scare them too much.”(Avoros)

The cross wounded man bows his head to the words of the boy.

“Ah, yes, yes. You don’t have to worry about the other two heroes. Eveam is really kind, and i don’t think she will get them killed. Well, they might be in confinement though.”  
(Avoros)

But Taishi and Chika didn’t believe his words. As they had been told nothing about Eveam, the two thought that their friends might have been killed by them.

Taishi supported the body of Chika which was trembling.

“Ta-, Taishi.....”(Chika)

“Let’s..... believe that Shinobu and Shuri are still alive.”(Taishi)

They did not believe in the boy’s words, but rather in the strength of Shinobu and Shuri. While feeling uneasy, Chika nodded at Taishi’s words.

“Now, is it alright?” (Avoros)

The boy resumed his talk from before.

“I said, I will talk about things from now on, did you understand it’s meaning? You people know right? That you guys have no right to refuse me.”(Avoros)

Unpleasant sweat started flowing from each on of them.

“First of all, let me tell you why I started this war.” (Avoros)

The three unknowingly gulped after hearing the boy’s words.

“This war, to tell you the truth, I don’t really care about it’s conclusion.”(Avoros)

“.....What do you mean by that-su?”(Teckil)

“Only the fact that a war has started, is all I need.”(Avoros)

“.....?”(Teckil)

“Fufufu.....”(Avoros)

The boy stood up from the chair and slowly descended the stairs.

“These things called ‘people’ are really interesting. Instead of good emotions, the bad emotions start welling up more easily. And that so even from a single opportunity.”  
(Avoros)

“.....What are you trying to say?”(Teckil)

Avoros stopped walking when he reached the middle of the stairs.

“The negative feelings are more powerful than any other feelings. On top of that, it is easy to dye something that is pure with it”(Avoros)

Not understanding what he was saying, Teckil frowned.

“Fufufu, looks like I talked too much. Anyhow, now that a war has started, the negative feelings will continue to rise up within the hearts of people. My aim is to strengthen that feeling. And in that case.....Ufufufu”(Avoros)

“.....It doesn’t change at all, that face of yours-su.” (Teckil)

“Oya? Is that so?”(Avoros)

“It doesn’t change.....Those eyes that see humans as chess pieces haven’t changed from the time you were Demon Lord-su.”(Teckil)

“Ufufufu, are you perhaps gonna say something? Like, because I have these eyes, I was removed?”(Avoros)

“.....”(Teckil)

“Ufufufu, like I said before. I was not removed. I let you remove me. It was for my goal.”(Avoros)

“.....”(Teckil)

“Well, let me tell you guys your role here.”(Avoros)

The boy faced towards Taishi and Chika.

“Ah, now that I think about it, I haven’t introduced myself yet, have I?”(Avoros)

From the point of view of the people who hadn’t heard the talk just before, the smile of the boy would seem to come from a lovely child, but Taishi and others only felt chills down their spines.

“Well then, like Teckil-kun said I am the ex-demon lord. In other words, I am the brother of the current demon lord, that is Eveam.....”(Avoros)

“You’re her brother!” or so Taishi made an expression to retort.

“It’ll be good if you remember it. As from today it’s the name of your master.”(Avoros)

The boy grinned and spoke again.

“My name is Avoros. Avoros.Gran.Early.Evening.”(Avoros)

## Chapter 147 Hiiro's Mission

---

Hearing the name of the ex-demon lord, Taishi once again realised that they got involved in something ridiculous.

They had heard rumours about the ex-demon lord from Rudolph, the King of 【Victorias】 .

He had an inhuman and unparalleled cruel personality, just hearing those words had sent a shiver down his spine. Though, they had never thought that he would be a child, but all their doubts were discarded the moment they saw Teckil's expression.

For this reason, the shivers they had from before didn't stop. Right now, the lives of Taishi and others were in the palms of his hand. Avoros could easily crush them anytime.

Chika trembled as her face became pale. Thinking how did it come to this, Taishi closed his eyes and grit his teeth. The teeth make chattering sound while grinding. Taishi realised that he was trembling.

"Well then, the talk derailed, but it looks like I can finally get down to the main business." (Avoros)

The boy, who was the source of fear, spoke..

"Even though you guys have a role to play, Teckil-kun will be in confinement for a while." (Avoros)

Teckil couldn't change the expression that said he had been expecting such an outcome. No, he had already made his resolve to fall dead in that cave. And so he doubted whether things would end just with confinement .

And next was the turn of Taishi and Chika.

"You guys whatever.....You." (Avoros)

And the one he pointed his finger towards was.....Chika.

".....Eh?" (Chika)

"That's right, you. You seem like you could become a good vessel." (Avoros)

"Eh.....vessel?" (Chika)

Chika became astonished without knowing what was happening. Taishi was the same, without understanding the words Avoros said, he stiffened.

Then, Avoros pointed his finger to one of the four Shining stones from before.

“I want you to enter that”(Avoros)

“Wha, What did!”(Taishi)

At that moment, an impact ran across the nape of Taishi’s neck.

“Yeah, you’ll have to be silent for a while.”(Avoros)

When he turned his head to see, there stood, Avoros, who was supposed be in front of him. Then, Avoros grabbed the hands of Chika and pulled her along.

“Ta,Taishi! Le-let go of me!”(Chika???)

At that moment, Taishi saw it. From Avoros, a dark muddy magical power started oozing out, and it started to flow towards Chika.

“Get a.....w.....a.....y!?”(Chika)

Chika’s eyes become hollow, and she started losing power like a marionette which had its strings cut.

“”Chi.....Kaa.....”(Taishi)

Desperately trying to open up his closing eyes, Taishi extended his hands towards Chika. However, Chika was pulled away heartlessly by Avoros who then started approaching the blue stone.

The dark magical power which Taishi saw, covered Chika’s body and like a hand it grabbed hold of Chika, causing her to float in mid-air. And just like that, she was placed in front of the blue stone.

Gradually her body was sucked in by the blue colored stone..

“.....Ta.....ishi.....”(Chika)

Taishi understood that she was calling his name, but at the same time his consciousness faded.

---

“Hey, it doesn’t look like Lenion-sama is going to wake up any time soon.”(solder 1)

“Nh? Yeah, after all he was beaten up by Ornoth of 《Cruel》 .”(soldier 2)

The ones who were talking were the soldiers of **Gabranth**. They were monitoring the bridge, to check for anything abnormal happened .

Yesterday night, the prince was carried in by Barid of 《Three beast warriors》 . He had lost consciousness and his body was worn-out.

The soldiers who saw that scene had a shock run through them. Lenion was not inferior to any of the Three warriors in terms of power. That Lenion was worn-out and wouldn't have been saved if the three warriors didn't help him in time.

After all, the demon lord and Cruel, who weren't been supposed to be present there, suddenly appeared, which caused unrest in all the soldiers. Their strength matched that of that of their rumors, the soldiers of Gabranth and Humas were suppressed in the blink of an eye.

When changes occurred in the situation, taking refuge for rearranging the formation became unavoidable . It was told to soldiers that Lenion was brought on to 【Mutich Bridge】 to rest.

Here, there were sufficient forces and excellent medical teams too.

But a lot of time had passed since then and the soldiers were worried about Lenion, who had yet to wake up. Although he had a bad mouth and attitude, in the current situation without the king and first prince Leglas, his existence became the core.

If he remained out of the front lines any more, it would also affect the morale of the troops. That's why the fact that Lenion has been beaten up was only told to certain soldiers.

“Come back quickly”(soldier 1)

“That's right. Even though he is like that, but during a war he is one we can rely on.”(soldier 2)

The soldiers started to laugh.

“And on this bridge there is a lot of security.”(soldier 1)

“Well, yeah, I don't think the ‘Evila’ will come attack us in this kind of situation.”(soldier 2)

“That's right. Even if they do come, they would encounter the war potential here.”(soldier 1)

The soldiers started laughing once again and soon a beast man soldier came running over. Seemed like he was in a hurry as he was panting heavily.



“O,Oi. What happened?”(soldiers 1&2)

The soldier asked the male soldier who was breathing heavily while supporting his body, with hands on his [knees](#).It was easily understandable that he was in a serious hurry.

“Fuu~, Can I have a moment?”(male soldier)

When the male soldier raised his face up, the other two soldiers were,

“A,Aa”(soldier 1)

“What happened? Ah, did Lenion-sama wake up.”(soldier 2)

The soldier shook his head.

“No, that’s not it.”(male)

“Nh? So why are you in such a hurry?”(soldier 1)

“That’s right. Nh? By the way I’ve not seen you here? Are you the person in the defence group?”(soldier 2)

The man’s lips stretched into a grin.

“No, instead of defence.....it should be destruction.....?”(male)

“.....Ha? What are you say.....!”(soldier 1)

Slash!

In that moment the soldier slashed by the man, fell on his knees as he lost consciousness

“Wh, What are you!?”(soldier 2)

The other soldier spoke in startlement, but the man drew his sword towards him.

“Slow”(male)

In the blink of an eye he covered the distance between them and,

Slash!

His body was slashed. But instead of feeling pain of being cut, as if his brain had jolted, his body stopped responding to him. During his fading consciousness, he took a good look at the man’s face.

(It is really not a face I've seen. He is wearing the same armor and also wearing spectacles. But his swordsmanship can't be said anything less than a superhuman feat.)(soldier 2)

"U.....a....."(soldier 2)

While looking at the direction of the soldier, the man spoke.

"Sleep. By the time you wake up, everything will be finished, probably."(an innocent bystander)

Hiiro used the special effect of the "**Severing Sword – Slasher**", which used magic which could make the person cut by it lose consciousness on the two soldiers.

The place was still far away from the **【Mutich Bridge】**. There were small hills in that area, which could be considered the best place for patrolling.

(So they are waiting on the bridge as expected)(Hiiro)

On the bridge, a large number of soldiers were been stationed. Practically, it was not that difficult to destroy the bridge as a whole. But he was asked by Eveam to,

"Keep the damages to as a minimum as you can"(Eveam)

Hiiro realised that he had been given the burden of not injuring even the enemies even by a scratch. Normally, it was something so stupid that one would just laugh at.

"It seems to me, Hiiro can do it so I ask you of it.....can you do it?"(Eveam)

If asked like that, it was really difficult to deny.

(Geez, I took up a really troublesome request. But oh well.....)(Hiiro)

"If you come back just as fine, then even though it is difficult, I will ask Musun to make food for you everyday."

He had no choice but to accept it after she said such a thing. The food made by [Demon City. Xaos]'s head chef Musun was quite exquisite. He thought if he could get to eat such a dish again, he was willing to do a small amount of troublesome work.

"Well then, now what shall I do....."(Hiiro)

Hiiro once again observed the bridge. The bridge was smaller than other bridges. And also extremely small. But well, other bridges were abnormally long. From the view, the bridge seemed to be about 2 kilometers long.

The width was a little more than 10 metres, but it didn't seem too sturdy.

(To me, it doesn't matter how much sturdy it is)(Hiiro)

While thinking so, he closed his eyes and started forming a plan. After thinking for a while,

“Then, this will do for now, though this will be pretty conspicuous, but it’ll also act as a restraint for them.....”(Hihiro)

He started collecting magic in the index fingers of both his hands. The moment he finished writing, he activated the ‘transfer’ character he had prepared beforehand.

# KONJIKI NO WORD MASTER

---

## Chapter 148

### Mütich Bridge, Great Collapse

---

\*pishun

Everybody was dumbfounded on the sudden appearance of a beast-man just before the bridge. Although they did not understand from where that person appeared from, the face of the sudden visitor had an identical appearance to that of the beast-men soldiers. They could only stare in utter amazement.

(These guys are all incompetent. If it were me, I would have swiftly attacked any suspicious person who appeared before me) (Hiiro)

Although Hiiro thought so, it was also convenient for him if they did not retaliate.

As a start, he thrust the forefinger of his right hand to the bridge and a pale light glittered from his written character. He then immediately activated his magic. Suddenly,

“Owawawawa!” (Soldier A)

“Hee? nowa!” (Soldier B)

“W-we are slippinggg!” (Soldier C)

Suddenly, the people on bridge began falling over to the shore. Some kept sliding non stop on the bridge. Furthermore, since most of the people on top of the bridge had fallen over, the people who were still standing on the ground were also dumbfounded as they had experienced a very strange spectacle.

(Kuku, Stay together just like that) (Hiiro)

This time, Hiiron raised his left hand towards the bridge

“Now, fall over with this bowling ball-!” (Hiiron)

When he invoked the character, an intense wind gathered at the tip of Hiiron’s finger.

buwon!

The wind accumulated together to form a ball and when released from one side of the bridge, it flew to the opposite bank.

“””””Uwaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaa!””””” (Bowling Pin-Soldiers)

Similarly, all the members present on the bridge were also pushed to the farther shore. No one was able to resist as they amusingly slipped away. one by one.

Some managed to escape from falling over to the sea by clinging to the bridge. However, even they fell off as they were washed away by the sea.

Moreover, due to the power they had witnessed, the remaining people abandoned the bridge as they fell over one after another.

After Hiiron dealt with the garbage on the bridge, he made a smiling face as he quickly wrote another character. Then, the character turned towards the bridge and invoked itself.

dogogogogogogogogogogon!

Cracks suddenly appeared on the bridge as it began to break down. The collapsed splinter sank into the sea. And, the approximately two kilometers long continental bridge quickly changed to an empty space in the blink of an eye.

The soldiers were taken back in astonishment. The soldiers in the farther shore, including the numerous fallen soldiers, were frozen still on witnessing such a spectacle before their very eyes.

(What a disappointment. Although I thought I would be obstructed a little .... I was a fool to have expected something from them) (Hiiro)

Although the main reason why they were not able to retaliate was because of Hiiro's abnormal phenomenon.

(Well, I guess that woman won't have any complaints with her request) (Hiiro)

As Hiiro destroyed the 【Mütich Bridge】, he made sure there was no casualties and missing people. He was able to accomplish it without injuring anyone. It was an unexpectedly simple task.

At first, he had shot the character 『摩擦無』 | 『Frictionless』 towards the bridge. Actually he was troubled as he could not choose between 『摩擦零』 | 『Zero Friction』 and the previous one, either one of the characters gave the same effect and were both easy to write.

The effect was literally defined by the character that got rid of the frictional resistance of the bridge. In other words, it was impossible to stand on the bridge and so the beastmen kept slipping over and over. It was similar to a phenomenon caused by a ground spilled with oil. Naturally, air friction still existed, sooner or later they would have stop slipping over.

Following this, as if Hiiro had entrusted his body to the surrounding, power surged into his body as he stared at a certain direction.

However, those movements alone were incomplete. So, he used the character 『風の弾』 | 『Ball of Wind』, intending to use it to push the soldiers out of the bridge. The purpose of the usage of three characters was to gain power to neatly clear the bridge off the people, which was about two kilometers of wind force.

At the end was 『大崩壊』 | 『Large Collapse』. A literal effect. The bridge collapsed instantly when the character was invoked.

If the plan went well, nobody should have died. Even if there is truly anyone on the bridge, 『大崩壊』 | 『Large Collapse』 answered that plan. Also, Hiiro decided to take this method because Eveam sternly requested.

(Now then, while those guys are befuddled, I guess it's time for me to leave) (Hiiro)

While Hiiro thought about it, he wrote the characters 『転移』 | 『Transfer』

“Wait” (???)

Those words were simply directed to Hiiro himself as he heard it mysteriously from the sky. When he glanced there, there was a beast-man who had a face of a human with wings.

“.....A bird-man?” (Hiiro)

Although Hiiro muttered unintentionally, the being was evidently a human bird.

“Who are you?” (Bird-man)

“..... Can’t you understand by looking? I’m your comrade” (Hiiro)

Hiiro said those words while he shrugged his shoulders feeling oblivious to what had transpired before. The bird-man who heard his remark, narrowed his eyes, then answered him back.

“I remember all the faces and names of all the soldiers. Among them, there was never a person who possessed a silver hair like you” (Bird-man)

As the bird-man had said, currently Hiiro was wearing the appearance of a nostalgic beast-man in the past.

“Heh, you have quite a special talent” (Hiiro)

Hiiro couldn't help but be amazed at the remark as the bird-man said that he remembered the name and faces of all the soldiers.

“I will ask again. Who are you?” (Bird-man)

“I have no obligation to answer” (Hiiro)

Then, the other party’s eyes sharpened.

“If that is the case, I will have to make you confess by force” (Bird-man)

Suddenly, he fluttered his wings and several feathers flew from them.



zakuzaku zakuzaku!

Although Hiiro avoided by jumping sideways, he saw the feathers had pierced the ground, similar to a knife, and confirmed that his judgement of dodging that kind of attack was correct.

Although feathers were thrown out again, Hiiro avoided them with light steps.

“Heh, you have a considerably good movement. I want my subordinates to learn a thing or two from you” (Bird-man)

“Why thank you” (Hiiro)

Hiiro spoke those words with the usual sullen look.

“Then, how about this one?” (Bird-man)

The attack was straightforward this time, similar innumerable feathers charged towards him in a parabola. Since Hiiro’s rear faced a cliff, he was simply unable avoid it by jumping towards the side.

“Chi” (Hiiro)

Hiiro clicked his tongue and jumped up from the place to the sky to avoid the attack. But, the bird-man expressed a sneer when Hiiro did so.

“I won’t let you avoid my attack!” (Bird-man)

His aim was apparently to narrow down Hiiro's method of escape, which was only through the sky.

Innumerable feathers attacked Hiiro again in the air. The way things were going, Hiiro might completely become a cactus with those needles. But,

Hyun!

The bird-man widened its eyes in astonishment when he saw Hiiro fly from the place to the sky. Following this, the feathers lost their target as it just went straight to the ground.

“He.....can fly?” (Bird-man)

Although his appearance was that of a beast-man, Hiiro who didn't have wings seemed to be unbelievably capable of flying.

The character 『飛翔』 | 『Flight』 glittered on Hiiro's arm. This was one of the characters he had installed before hand. It was no wonder the partner who did not know of it, couldn't understand what had happened.

As the bird-man made a suspicious expression, they similarly moved their wings and rose to the sky in the same way.

“Are you really a beast-man? Rather, this feeling.....Is this magic?” (Bird-man)

“Correct Answer” (Hiiro)

“Impossible! Why is a beast-man capable of conjuring magic?!” (bird-man)

“About that mystery.....” (Hiiro)

“.....” (Bird-man)

“Feel free to guess on it” (Hiiro)

Quickly, Hiiro wrote the character 『煙』 | 『Smoke』 and invoked it, and then, smoke appeared from the character. With that density of smoke, the birdman would have a hard time confirming its surroundings.

“If that is the case!” (Bird-man)

The bird-man waved its wings grandly, causing the smoke to clear up. And, in a few minutes, he was shocked to see the figure of Hiiro, that was supposed to be there, had gone missing.

“I-Impossible..... where in the world is he.....?” (Bird-man)

In reality, Hiiro had used the characters 『転移』 | 『Transfer』 and returned to the 【Demon Capital】 , the bird-man who didn't know of it, searched the vicinity for a while. And, of course, was not able to find him at all.

# KONJIKI NO WORD MASTER

---

## Chapter 149

### Role End?

---

Hiiro returned to the castle located at 【Demon Capital: Chaos】 , as he came back, the word awaiting for him was....

“You are really unbelievable Hiiro” (Eveam)

Those were the words of Eveam which were mixed with amazement.

Needless to say, Hiiro’s companions and the members of 《Cruel》 were also there. And, there was a big crystal ball near Eveam.

The crystal ball besides Eveam is a kind of demon tool called the 《All-Seeing Crystal》 , this object can seek a far-off scene occurring outside. Eveam used this to look at Hiiro’s activities.

Nevertheless, his activities were beyond their expectations, the people who did not know of Hiiro were completely astonished.

“T-to think that it took you only one hour to finish that....” (Marione)

Even Marione’s cheeks were cramping.

“I’m surprised.” (Ornoth)

“Yes, for Hiiro’s magic to be capable of this much, perhaps I should say, his movements was by no means inferior to Barid of the 《Three Warriors》 , what’s more, he was completely toying with him” (Aquinas)

Aquinas replied to Ornoth's words while feeling admiration towards Hiiro. Although Aquinas watched the fight with Crouch who is also one of the 《Three Warriors》, he seemed to have been surprised for him to flawlessly come back after taking on Barid who is the leader of the 《Three Warriors》.

“Ufufu, Hiiro~kun is so~ amaz~ing” (Shublarz)

Shublarz expressed a bewitching smile when she gazed at Hiiro,

“Hey you, don't approach Hiiro too much.” (Liliyn)

For some reason, Liliyn seems to be ill-humored as she spoke those words mixed with anger.

“Ara~, I wonder why~?” (Shublarz)

When she turned her body towards Liliyn, her chest jiggled. Upon seeing that, a vein popped out on Liliyn's forehead.

“Ey! What is with that body X-! Such things should be punished this way!” (Liliyn)

\*mugyu!

“Ah~!” (Shublarz)

Amorous voices echoes throughout the throne room. The cause is because Liliyn suddenly gripped Shublarz's chest with both of her hands. Moreover, she angrily massaged it as hard as possible.

“H-Hey Liliyn-chan, what are you trying to do~?!” (Shublarz)

“Ey! You’re a damn fool for facing that body of yours to me!” (Liliyn)

“Ah, mou, please stop it. Despite what you see, I’m quite sensitive you know~”  
(Shublarz)

“Shut up! These lumps of fat should be punished this way!” (Liliyn)

“AH~ MOU~!” (Shublarz)

Shublarz’s pair of mountains was being shaped into various forms in Liliyn’s hands. The appearance of such people was observed (mostly at the chest), and there was a person who had gotten excited as his nostrils have swelled up.

“Muhooo~! This is a splendid scene! The scene where a little girl passionately rubs the breasts ignites my passion! Nofofofofofo!” (Silva)

That person was the well-known Hentai butler.

“Did you just say little girl? ” (Liliyn)

Numerous veins popped on Liliyn’s forehead.

“Nofofo! This is good! This is so good ojousamaaaa-! Hooray for Boobies-!” (Silva)

“You bastard, what are you talking abouuuuuuut!” (Liliyn)

Liliyn throttled to Silva in an instant and gave him a heel drop to his face.

“Buhiin-!” (Silva)

The hentai’s head sank into the floor.

“Feeeeeeee! Silva-samaaaaaa!” (Shamoe)

The flustered Shamoe went to see Silva’s condition on the ground but she was speechless as Silva raised his thumb like he had no regrets.

“Who is a Little Girl you Hentai Butler! Shamoe, leave that fool alone!” (Liliyn)

“Y-y-y-y-y-y-y-y-y-es-!” (Shamoe)

Hiiro who was looking at the three with half-interested eyes, [As usual, those guys are so noisy], he shrugged his shoulder while saying so.

“Does Silva-dono love chests that much?” (Nikki)

Nikki lovely inclined her neck.

“It seems to be so? Because ojii-chan speaks oppai oppai all the time~mon!” (Mikazuki)

When Mikazuki’s said those words, every single woman nearby hastily retreated from Silva. Even Nikki hid behind Hiiro from fear.

“I believe you are mistaken Mikazuki-dono!” (Silva)

A woman leaked the voice [Hiii-!] from Silva’s sudden revival.

Silva did not mind that sort of attitude from the women as he grasped his fist.

“In my opinion, boobs are wonderful! But, the charm of a woman is not only there!”  
(Silva)

“Heh~, then what else is it?” (Mikazuki)

Mikazuki innocently inquired him, seeing this, Silva raises the corners of his mouth and nodded subtly.

“The buttocks exist as well!” (Silva)

「おしり？」

“Oshiri(おしり)？” (Mikazuki)

“Yes! Buttocks are great.... although the firm ones also makes me tremble, the big ones also has its own merits.....” (Silva)

The people around felt sympathy for the figure who had his hands on his chin and closed eyes lost in a delusion. Of course, there were people who did not want him left unattended.

“You bastard! Just sleep for eterniiiiiiiiity!” (Liliyn)



“Bamyuda!?” (Silva)

His face was hit with a fist which contained quite a magical power, this time his whole body sank into the wall.

“...Do these people always have this kind of atmosphere?” (Eveam)

Eveam had a cramp on her cheeks as she asked Hiiro.

“Yeah, this is their usual atmosphere” (Hiiro)

Hiiro who did not mind them returned to his human form using the word 『Origin』 | 『元』 .

He returned to his former form because Hiiro was already well-known in the castle as a human.

“....B-By the way.” (Eveam)

“N?” (Hiiro)

Eveam face was looking down as she shakes her body restlessly. When he looked at her, he knitted his eyebrows at that figure.

“Does.....Hiiro also.....like bre-bre, bre-bre-bre-bre-bre” (Eveam)

“What in the world are you trying to say?” (Hiiro)

Her face was suddenly dyed red, as Hihiro was dubious on the woman's incomprehensible behavior.

"Th-th-therefore.....bre-breast..... that is big... is attractive?" (Eveam)

".....ha?" (Hihiro)

If it's shameful to the point of blushing, she should not inquire if she cannot clearly speak it out, he thought as he opened his mouth.

"Am I alright with breasts? Frankly, I'm not interested. Books are more charming for me than breasts." (Hihiro)

"I.....is that so.... so Hihiro was that kind of person..." (Eveam)

It can be seen that the woman nearby dropped her shoulders while letting out a sigh, he was sure he did not say anything wrong so he shrugged his shoulders.

"Anyway, with this, finish this war quickly. I want to enter the library as soon as possible." (Hihiro)

"Ah, yo-you're right. Since the bridge was broken, sending reinforcement from the other side will be difficult. In case of the people at 『Evila』, we can suppress them if we gradually corner them." (Eveam)

"Then, move quickly. When you spend too much time, the other side might deal with this somehow. Their confusion right now is a good opportunity to take initiative." (Hihiro)

“Understood. Aquinas, Marione.” (Eveam)

When she called out the two people, two people got down on their knees at the same time and bowed.

“You two must deal with the enemy that remains in this country.” (Eveam)

“ “ Ha-!” “ (Aquinas & Marione)

“Ornoth, Shublarz.” (Eveam)

The two people similarly bowed.

“You two must organize an army and face the bridge. We will decide this in a instantly by using this chance.” (Eveam)

“ “ Ha-!” “ (Ornoth & Shublarz)

The four people left at once to accomplish their duties.

“I wish to express my gratitude to you Hiiro. I will deal with the surrounding people with Aquinas. You must take a rest in your room.” (Eveam)

“....Are you sure?” (Hiiro)

“Yes, you have done enough. Rather, you have done enough. You can entrust this to us now.” (Eveam)

Apparently, his role seems to have ended with this. Besides, considering the situation, evaluating the strength ratio of the forces that has been left behind and the forces of 『Evila』, the 『Evila』 clearly has the overwhelming advantage.

As for the other side, the main war potential has been cut down, since all war potentials were concentrated there. Even if the other side has the advantage in number, they greatly differ in quality. Moreover, the effect of breaking the bridge is quite big, as they cannot send their reinforcements.

They will possibly be cornered really soon, they have won this war the moment they were able to corner the enemy.

Even for Hihiro, he thought that this will all be concluded in a few days, until then he decided to take a rest as Eveam had recommended and went to his room.

# KONJIKI NO WORD MASTER

---

## Chapter 150 Resolution of the Gabranth

---

“...Uuh” (???)

“You have finally woken up Lenon?” (???)

“...A.....Aniki?” (Lenon)

Lenon was laid on a makeshift bed. Leglos smiled wryly as he saw the bandaged person speak.

“You seemed to have been beaten up pretty badly.” (Leglos)

Lenon slightly clicked his tongue as he remembered the reason for being bedridden.

“Big Brother, how long did I pass out?” (Lenon)

“When I asked Barid, you seemed to have slept 2 whole nights.” (Leglos)

“Shit.....what a mess.” (Lenon)

“Your opponents were three people from 《Cruel》 right? But even so, wasn't it a miracle when you managed to survive that?” (Leglos)

“Haa, I would rather die than live in disgrace, about that place...” (Lenon)

“You’re a fool!” (???)

Beast King Leowald who made that angry remark suddenly showed up in that place.

“F-Father...” (Lenon)

“Lenon, what were you going to say that time? You would rather die than live in shame? Oh? You would rather die and grumble in disgrace in here?” (Leowald)

“....tsk.” (Lenon)

Lenon looked away seemingly embarrassed. Leowald who saw such attitude from Lenon, loudly sighed.

“Listen well Lenon, you are not strong enough yet to be able to choose the place where you will die.” (Leowald)

His gaze had a certain sharpness, including the light of relief in the depths of his eyes. He had a sense of duty to lead his son out of his wrong attitude, as he was quite relieved that his son was safe.

“The soldiers who died to defend you, you must repay those lives as well, you should become strong from this to be able to choose the place where you will die. Right now, you still have a long way to go.” (Leowald)

“.....I understand.” (Lenon)

Lelgos, the elder brother who saw the blunt response shrugged his shoulders in amazement.

“Hm, by the way father, you got here quite early. Were you able to defeat the Demon Lord?” (Lenon)

“No, an unexpected hindrance turned up.” (Leowald)

“A hindrance?” (Lenon)

Leglos told Lenon what happened at the conference.

“Such a thing happened huh? Who was that red-robe?” (Lenon)

The red-robe was Hiiro.

“I have not understood the details. What I do know is that person is a user of light magic while being an 『Evila』 ...that person does not seem to be an ordinary person.” (Leglos)

Lenon who saw the serious expression of Leglos, found this quite interesting as he was intrigued by this person.

“Furthermore, that person seems to be the central figure who obstructed our plan.” (Leglos)

When he told Lenon that this information came from the soldiers, even he cannot help but be dumbfounded.

“Hey, wait a minute, then that outrageous explosion, and the one who quickly defeated Crouch, he was that person as well?” (Lenon)

“It appears to be so.” (Leglos)

“Did we not receive any information about that existence at all? I mean, isn’t it strange for that person to not be well-known if such a non-standard existence like that is real?”

“Perhaps, that person is not the type to leisurely displays his own power.” (Leowald)

Leowald promptly answered his question.

“Rather, at least up to now, that person was avoiding actions that may stand out. He seems to have said such things to the Victoria’s King.” (Leowald)

“...Then, for what reason did that person suddenly move this time?” (Lenon)

“Who knows, though I do not understand the reason, the ability of that person is nothing but a threat.” (Leowald)

“Indeed, that person was even unharmed from Father’s attack.” (Leglos)

“D-Don’t say such foolish things Aniki! That person received Father’s attack unscratched?” (Lenon)

“It’s the truth.” (Leowald)

Lenon hardened without being able to object due to Leowald admission. He knew Leowald’s ability. Even now, he is still being treated by that power single handedly.

Neither receiving Leowald’s attack nor the talk of its flawlessness was too believable.



“Besides, another problem occurred. Rather, I believe this is the biggest problem...”  
(Leglos)

Leglos frowns as he had a hard time saying it.

“What happened?” (Lenon)

“.....The bridge was destroyed.” (Leglos)

“.....Ha?” (Lenon)

Leglos has been at his wits end when he heard what took place two days ago while Lenon was bedridden.

“This action is too much for our situation.” (Leglos)

They were perplexed about the cause of that disturbing situation. Besides, it would not be even an exaggeration to state that this was their defeat.

“Betrayal from a beastman? What the heck is that?” (Lenon)

The bonds of the beastmen are strong. Therefore, it was unbelievable that a fellow comrade who they once trusted had betrayed them. However, what was confusing was the fact that the bridge was destroyed by some unusual power for a beastmen.

“Rather, to tell you the truth, I have an idea of that person.” (Leowald)

“.....Eh?” (Lenon)

“When I heard the characteristics of that person from Barid, though the face was certainly a beastmen, he said some things about that person which for some reason is similar to the red-robe I confronted.” (Leowald)

Physique, attitude, usage of magic, everything closely resembled the boy in red-robe.

“If that person is able to impersonate someone, that person would likely have taken the shape of a beastmen and came here. Apparently, that person seems to be able to teleport as well, due to the fact Barid lost sight of the that person instantly.” (Leowald)

“.....Who in the world is that person?” (Lenon)

kukukuku, then, they heard Leowald strange laugh, the two people who saw this stared dumbfoundedly at him.

“Isn’t he quite an interesting boy? To think he even destroyed the bridge. Moreover, he came alone right in the middle of the enemy’s territory. I want see him again by all means.” (Leowald)

The two people shrugged their shoulders in amazement as they saw the man expressing such a happy-looking smile.

“S-say, Aniki?” (Lenon)

“W-what is it?” (Leglos)

“Regarding about that person, Father seems to have been pleased with him” (Lenon)

“It looks like it. Even if I was in Father’s position, it would be my first experience. To have my attack easily reflected back at me. Moreover, flawlessly too.” (Leglos)

“Ha? He did not only prevented it but also intercepted it.... who the hell is that...”  
(Lenon)

Although jealousy clearly dwelled in his expression, he had similar feelings with Leglos as he also expressed a wry smile.

“However, I kind of understand Father’s feelings too. Up to now, there was not a single person who fought him directly. Therefore, though Father looked forward to being able to fight with the general Aquinas, he seemed to have found a rather more interesting toy.” (Leglos)

“.....I kind of want to give my sympathy to that person a little, becoming Father’s practice target.” (Lenon)

“I’m of the same opinion.” (Leglos)

Leglos who sees Leowald still in his own world laughing while reminiscing, let out a sigh.

A sudden thought came to him.

(If I’m not mistaken, half a year ago, Mimir’s voice has been restored by a 『Spirit』 , however, I seemed to have heard that it was also wearing a red-robe..... Don’t tell me...) (Leglos)

Although, they are evidently the same person, Leglos craned his neck as he wipes out that kind of notion.

“By the way, what shall we do from here on out? This is the territory of the 『Humas』 right? Do we have any method of collecting our colleagues in the demon world?”  
(Lenon)

Leowald who laughing broke his smile as he made a serious expression on Lenon’s question.

“About that, a lot of our brethren were arrested in the period of two days.” (Leowald)

“Na-!? .....nay... that is right” (Lenon)

Lenon tightens his teeth as his fist quivered. This was the result of him comfortably sleeping for two days, he was somehow convinced this would have happened.

“Those guys did not let this chance slip by. Of course, that’s natural.....but why did they arrest them? If it was me, I would exterminate them.” (Lenon)

Leowald who was a father smiled wryly on Lenon’s scary remark.

“The Demon Lord of this generation seems to possess a different disposition.”  
(Leowald)

“Ha?” (Lenon)

“In case of the predecessor Demon Lord, he would definitely murder all our brethren as you have said. However, the current Demon Lord is still a young lady” (Leowald)

“I know that....but...” (Lenon)

“Although I was able to observe her a little, with regards to her speech and behavior, the Demon Lord is too naive.” (Leowald)

“Therefore, she arrested them without murdering?” (Lenon)

“I fear that it’s likely they want to end this war.” (Leglos)

Leglos answered his question. As he had said, in exchange for liberating the captives, they intend to conclude the war using a non-aggression treaty.

“This war, no matter how we think of it, this is 『Gabranth』 and 『Humas』 defeat. Since the bridge was destroyed, we lost the method to invade the demon world with our war potential.” (Leglos)

“What you are saying is that we are in a deadlock?” (Lenon)

“Yes, the place in which our remaining potential is gathered has been trying to look for a method on the other side now. Although future talks are originally necessary with the Victoria’s king, strangely, the humans returned to their own country.” (Leglos)

“Whoa, are they running away?” (Lenon)

“I don’t know if they ran away, I do not even understand if there is any significance of returning home, anyway, only a few 『Humas』 is assigned to this place now.” (Leglos)

As Leglos says, only the human soldiers originally tasked to guard the border were left, the other soldiers had returned to their country as ordered by their commander.

“Did something happened at 【Victorias】 ?” (Lenon)

“I have no idea. Even if something did, I do not have the time to pay attention to it.”  
(Leglos)

“That’s right. The enemy will likely move soon from our side if we wait in here. They may try to force us to negotiate using our captured comrades.” (Leowald)

Leowald spoke with a grim expression. After all, he did not like to be the one playing the second move. However, since a large quantity of his comrades were arrested by the opponent, he can’t move thoughtlessly as he does not know what the fate of his comrades would be.

He was prepared to defeat the enemy even if his companions died in vain, but such method does not exist right now. After all, not being possible to cross the bridge is quite an awful obstacle.

“However Father, supposing they intend to use the non-aggression treaty for our comrades liberation, how will we respond?” (Lenon)

Lenon and Leglos both glanced at their King requesting an answer from Lenon’s question.

“.... I wonder.” (Leowald)

“Hey, what is with that I wonder.....” (Lenon)

“At any rate, we will talk about it when that time comes.” (Leowald)

“Is that so.” (Lenon)

“However, if you want to hear my true intentions, I want to regain our comrades safely. I consider the beastmen the same as my family. But, I need to meekly accept our situation, though I’m sure that our pride will not permit this. Do not forget that we have tasted a lot of hardships in the past.” (Leowald)

He spoke those words mixed with anger.

“We are this time allied to the humans due to our similar hatred, only because the 『Evila』 are too strong. I judged that we could surely suppress them with this. Well, the result ended up this way.” (Leowald)

He sighed as he was self-ridiculing himself.

“Speaking of grudges, the 『Humas』 has a bigger grudge towards them. But, so that we may live in this world in our own way, we should first defeat the 『Evila』 .” (Leowald)

“However, we failed right?” (Leglos)

“You have a point. However, to give up because of this one defeat, I believe our will is not that weak.” (Leowald)

He clenched his fist and turned to the two people where a strong will appeared in his eyes.

“This time, it is surely a big loss to have lost a comrade. However, if the opponent thrust that condition into our shields, isn’t the act to nod in agreement the right thing to do?” (Leowald)

“.....” (Leglos)

“As for the captured comrades, all of them have resolved on this. Rather, they participated in this war simply because they have prepared for this. If we regret our lives here and accept defeat, aren’t we trampling down their resolutions?” (Leowald)

“Father..” (Lenon)

“Father...” (Leglos)

“Let’s have a conference for the time being. However, everyone’s opinion is identical. We should not yield to those guys. Everything has not yet been deprived of us!” (Leowald)

Then, suddenly.

“ “ “ “Uooooooooooooo! “ “ “ “

He heard a loud voice shaking the atmosphere from the surroundings. When he saw it, beastmen soldiers had gathered before him unnoticed, everyone raised their fist loudly and raised their morale.

“Y-You guys...” (Leowald)

Even Leowald cannot help but be taken away in astonishment.

“Cheers to our King-sama!”

“Right, right! We haven’t been defeated yet!”



“We will fight to the last!”

Those words came from several soldiers intending to show their willingness to fight. Due to those voices, Leowald gladly raised the corners of his mouth.

“Well said my comrades! That is right! We can still fight! This is the blazing pride of the 『Gabranth』, while it is still hot, it will continue to burn!” (Leowald)

Leowald shouted while grasping his fist around his heart.

“If they want to win from us, they have to extinguish this flame!” (Leowald)

“”””Extinguish! “”””

“This flame will be together with us to the last!” (Leowald)

“”””Be together with our flames!””””

“We are!” (Leowald)

“”””We are!””””

“On the day, this flame will burn out!” (Leowald)

“”””“On the day, this flame will burn out!””””

“We will continue to fight!” (Leowald)

“”””We will continue to fight!””””

And again at the end, an earsplitting loud voice was heard. Apparently, they seem to have already decided on their path. Leglos and Lenon, mutually nodded with each other as a sign that they have steeled themselves.

Although they didn't know when 『Evila』 will move out, Legios believed that they needed to find a way to cross over to the demon world. With that in mind, he left the place to find a certain person in the army.

# KONJIKI NO WORD MASTER

---

## Chapter 151

### After a Long Time, Evila Conference

---

Presently, in the 【Demon Capital - Xaos】 , an 『Evila』 conference was finally being held after a long time. Nevertheless, they had vacancier from their usual lineup.

Kiria, who was the Demon Lord Eveam's aide, had betrayed Eveam, and, to make things worse, Greyald of 《Rank 6》 was killed.

Only the Demon Lord and four people of the 《Cruel》 were now in this location.

“Everyone, the purpose of this gathering is to decide our future, as well as to understand the condition of our country and our people.” (Eveam)

The four silently returned a nod to Eveam's words respectively.

“But Your Majesty, are the contents written in the paper true?” (Marione)

Marione said those words while gazing at the sheet of paper in front of Eveam. The paper was what Teckil had entrusted Judom with. Hihiro, who had received the sheet of paper, handed it to Eveam directly.

“Ah yes, I definitely sensed Teckil's magic. Furthermore, at the present time, I cannot contact Teckil. Perhaps, most likely, Teckil has already been caught as written here. And the one who seized him was.....” (Eveam)

She had a relentless look as she heavily moved her lips.

“The former Demon Lord, Avoros Gran Early Evening.” (Eveam)

Marione, who had hit the table with a don!, then said-

“Isn't that just a mistake or something? Aquinas and I were the one who confirmed the corpse of the previous Demon Lord, you know? There wasn't anything strange about it. Isn't that right, Aquinas?” (Marione)

“.....Yeah.” (Aquinas)

“His 《Demon Core》 which is also known as the second heart of an 『Evila』 had been destroyed. With that gone, it’s impossible for him to revive any longer.” (Marione)

“That’s true but..... What do you think, Aquinas?” (Eveam)

Eveam turned her gaze towards Aquinas.

“.....His death was, indeed, confirmed by these two eyes of mine. That was definitely a corpse. And, it was not a doll Kiria made either” (Aquinas)

“That’s right. No one can escape from this guy’s pair of eyes; he wouldn’t be able to fake his death.” (Marione)

From Marione’s words, one could understand that he held great trust in Aquinas’ eyes.

“So, was what Teckil saw a mistake then?” (Ornoth)

“That seems to be the only possibility.” (Shublarz)

“He is the country’s greatest intelligence operative, you know? Teckil may not look like it, but he is next to the two of you who is 《Rank 3》. A half-baked person shouldn’t be able to capture Teckil alive. Unless they were someone of your class.” (Eveam)

“mumu.....” (Marione)

Marione groaned without being able to answer back from the sound argument.

“Besides, there is also the existence that Iraora mentioned, as well as the one that created Kiria for the sake of the conference. I have a feeling these two existences seem to be connected to one another.” (Eveam)

As that was something everyone present had sensed, none of them were capable of refuting her words.

“But, that person may not necessarily be the former Demon Lord. Even that paper only wrote that the possibility was high.” (Ornoth)

“It’s true that the details that Teckil wrote on this paper were, indeed, all of his ideas

that lead to this conclusion. But, he said that he saw that guy, right? Even though he should have died.....he saw Teritorial's face!" (Eveam)

The room fell silent. It was a testament to the weight that her words had carried.

"Teritorial..... the right arm of the former Demon Lord, huh?" (Aquinas)

Aquinas spoke, breaking the silence that permeated the room

"Now that you mention it, Their relationship was similar to that of Her Majesty and Kiria's." (Shublarz)

"It's true..... However, he died earlier than my elder brother. Rather, he was killed. By none other than my brother's hand!" (Eveam)

The place became quiet once again.

"If the dead was brought back to life, and was manipulated, then only one person is capable of doing it, and that is the former Demon Lord." (Aquinas)

Everyone turned their gaze at Aquinas' mutter.

"I agree, it is only Avoros, the 《Necromancer》, who can do it." (Eveam)

gokuri, the sound of everyone's throats gulping rang out.

"Supposing that what Teckil saw was Teritorial's corpse that was being manipulated, then, without a doubt, it would be Avoros' deed. Moreover, if it was a strong man like Teritorial who defeated Teckil, then I can also agree with this matter. After all, Teritorial was Teckil's master." (Aquinas)

As Aquinas said, The person known as Teritorial was Teckil's master. Rather, he may possibly be considered an existence similar to a foster parent. Teckil lost his parents at an early age. One day, he was picked up by Teritorial and became his adopted son.

Everything that Teckil knew was taught to him by Teritorial. And, everyone who was in this place knew that fact. It should be impossible for him to misidentify Teritorial's face.

However, Teritorial who should have died, lived and captured his very own son. For him to be able to do that, one could only think that he was being manipulated by someone.

And, up to now, there was only one who could manipulate the dead, that person is the former Demon Lord Avoros.

“It is as Aquinas says. Perhaps elder brother.....Avoros camouflaged his death by some method, and has lived until now. I do not understand what are his objectives but I’m sure elder brother is the one who planned this war. It’s not surprising if such a guy like him would move within this war” (Eveam)

Even though he was Eveam’s relative, she continued her sharp words about him. Disgust rather than sorrow appeared on her facial expression.

“And from now on, Avoros will undoubtedly move openly in the future. For the sake of his own incomprehensible desires.” (Eveam)

“....I wonder if Kiria was also allied with the former Demon Lord from the beginning.” (Shublarz)

Shublarz spoke her doubt, but when Kiria’s name came out, Eveam showed a dark expression.

“.....I don’t know.” (Eveam)

“Your Majesty....” (Shublarz)

Shublarz muttered anxiously.

“You see.....Kiria was by my side all the time ever since I was a child. For her to be an artificial existence..... Who could’ve thought that.....” (Eveam)

She grasped her fist and trembled.

“She said she was.....Val Kiria.” (Aquinas)

With Aquinas’ words, Eveam nodded feebly.

“In the ancient times, when the 『Demon Capital: Xaos』 did not exist yet. A woman

who was named the first Demon Lord gathered a large number of our brethren to create a country. However, the 『Evila』 of those days had neither knowledge nor wisdom about building a country. Simply put, their intelligence was low. The founding Demon Lord, who was the only wise one, thought that teaching them carefully one by one would take too much time.” (Aquinas)

Everyone listened to Aquinas’ story. Even Marione was listening attentively to his words for the first time.

“Thereupon, the founding Demon Lord thought that if she made many existences identical to herself, the establishment of the country would advance smoothly.” (Aquinas)

“D-Don’t tell me” (Eveam)

Eveam was wide-eyed on that revelation.

“She called it, 《Val Kiria Series》. They were the excellent doubles of the Demon Lord. Although it seems that she was unable to create too many of them, they led the people and advanced the establishment of the country. And, the result of that is the 【Demon Capital: Xaos】.” (Aquinas)

“This is the first I have heard of such a story? The founding Demon Lord was the one who founded this country by commanding the people at her side as per written on the history books.” (Marione)

Aquinas answered Marione’s doubt.

“That is indeed so. If problems did not occur, their existence should have been left in the history records.” (Aquinas)

“P-Problems you say?” (Marione)

“Yeah, when this country was founded, some incidents happened soon after.” (Aquinas)

“Incidents.....?” (Eveam)

Eveam asked this time.

“ One of the Val Kiria started to run wild without any prior warning.” (Aquinas)

## Chapter 152 Eveam's Decision

---

“They went on a rampage?” (Eveam)

“Yes, they rampaged with such dreadful force to the point of destroying everything in its path until it was stopped. Furthermore, the rampage didn’t stop there, it even occurred to all 《Val Kiria Series》. Considering that those dolls were the double’s of the Demon Lord who possessed profound wisdom and power similar to their origin, imagine every existence of it is driven towards their destructive impulses. I’m sure you understand what that will cause, right?” (Aquinas)

It would become exactly like a scene from Hell.

“W-why did such a thing happen?” (Shublarz)

Shublarz asked while having a cramp on her cheek.

“To put it simply, their magic went out of control” (Aquinas)

“They were not able to control their magic?” (Eveam)

“Yes, the double’s of the Demon Lord were certainly excellent. However, the power of the Demon Lord was too much for them to control. At first, the containment was stable but the container that held the Demon Lord’s power was gradually screaming in pain as they were unable to endure the huge quantity of magical power. In the end, the container crumbled” (Aquinas)

It was similar to when a dam collapses due to the intense destructive force of the water it was trying to contain.



“Of course, the Demon Lord did not stay silent and destroyed them by her own hands. Even the doubles, did not have all the abilities of the Demon Lord. So, the Val Kiria’s were overthrown by the Demon Lord. However, the consequence was high” (Aquinas)

Due the fight between the Val Kiria and the Demon Lord, the country was ruined. The residents were almost annihilated as well

“T-that happened....?” (Eveam)

Eveam put on a sorrowful expression.

‘After that, the Demon Lord concealed the existence of the 《Val Kiria Series》 . They became non-existent in this world. And then, she took time once again to gather countrymen and established the country genuinely by her own hands” (Aquinas)

“So the Demon Lord concealed their existence so that the future generations would not be burdened about it?” (Eveam)

“Yeah” (Aquinas)

“Isn’t that too selfish? She invented them for herself, the people were injured because of them, in addition.....she concealed her own doing...” (Eveam)

Eveam trembled from anger. She cannot permit such a selfish Founding Demon Lord.

“I know that Her Majesty’s words is plausible. However, there is another reason of the concealment” (Aquinas)

“A...Another?” (Eveam)

“She did not want to leave behind a dangerous existence such as the 《Val Kiria Series》 . This is because they were not completed even with the knowledge of the Demon Lord. If the Val Kiria’s are imperfect, a tragedy like from before will be born again. The Demon Lord judged that it shouldn’t be researched due to curiosity alone, so she buried how to make the Val Kiria’s in the darkness” (Aquinas)

It would surely be a problem to leave behind the method of making such a dangerous existence which nobody in the world could control. Since the Demon Lord was not able to complete it, she thought that it would be impossible for another person to finish it.

For this reason, the Founding Demon Lord did not leave behind the method of its production to the future generations, in fear of somebody producing another incomplete Val Kiria and was unable to stop it.

“Muu...” (Eveam)

Unbeknownst whether Eveam was ashamed from her previous remark awhile ago, she looked down. Nonetheless, she felt the fact that the Demon Lord who got the civilians involved was perhaps something that should be remembered in the world in some shape or form.

The Demon Lord seems to have thought that if it was remembered, the following person can make a better policy in response to it.

“I see, it would definitely cause some uneasiness if it was found out by the future generation. But Kiria...exists” (Eveam)

“It is as Her Majesty says. Even I was surprised when I heard from Kiria that she’s a Val Kiria. Which means.....” (Aquinas)

“Avoros?” (Eveam)

Aquinas nods to Eveam’s word.

“Although I’m still unsure, I fear that it’s likely that he knows the manufacturing method ....” (Aquinas)

“Nevertheless, why do you know such a thing?” (Marione)

It was Marione’s foremost doubt. Everyone’s glance turned towards Aquinas. Following their gaze, Aquinas who had his eyes closed, exhaled and slowly opened his eyes. Then, he answered.

“.....As for the people, not all of them did not perish. There were a number of people who, indeed, survived. I’m one of the people who has a connection to them” (Aquinas)

In other words, Aquinas heard the story from one of the survivor’s descendants

“I see....but, to think Kiria came from such circumstances...” (Eveam)

“It’s no wonder you wouldn’t know of it. Even I only heard the story, recently. I might be the only one in the country who knows about it” (Aquinas)

“Muu, Her Majesty, the situation will not change even if Aquinas’ story is true. Leaving that aside, the war before us is the main problem right now. How should we treat the captives?” (Marione)

Marione who arrested the captives, asked how to act from the current stalemate.

“Ah, thanks for reminding me. First of all, I have made my decision regarding that matter” (Eveam)

Eveam exchanged looks to the people around her and exhaled a big breath.

“This time, I made you all arrest the 『Humas』 and 『Gabranth』 who entered the demon continent. However, i do not have any intention of depriving the lives of the captives” (Eveam)

The four people who knew her way of thinking did not say anything. Everyone kept silent though Marione had a ill-humored face.

“I intend to liberate the captives, and create with them a non-aggression pact” (Eveam)

“Hou, not an alliance ....?” (Aquinas)

She glared at Aquinas who spoke with some sarcasm.

‘Even I understand that it’s impossible to form an alliance in the current situation. Therefore, I decided to give priority to the the peace of 『Evila』 right now” (Eveam)

“Stil Her Majesty~, do you really think the other side will accept such a proposal?” (Shublarz)

“Let’s see. The partner that betrayed us was the 『Humas』 , and the pride of the 『Gabranth』 was damaged in the last miraculous battle. Therefore...” (Ornoth)

Shublarz and Ornoth respectively spoke. More than half a year ago, the 『Evila』 fought against the 『Gabranth』 once. Although the war was immediately concluded

with Eveam destroying the bridge, Eveam and the others admitted that they had damaged their pride at that time.

“Perhaps..... It will be impossible with the 『Humas』 . There is a high probability that their king will betray us even if we use their captives as a reason for an alliance. After all is said and done, he readily sacrificed the heroes who should have been their trump card” (Ornoth)

“Hmm~, then it’s possible to negotiate with the 『Gabranth’s』 -?” (Shublarz)

“Yes, they are the races who values bonds above all. Although the probability is low, it would still be possible “ (Eveam)

“I feel like it would be a waste of effort if the partner is that Beast King, though...”  
(Marione)

Marione spoke those words while he faintly shook his head sideways in rejection.

“Certainly, those fellows do value bonds. However, they have never admitted defeat during a fight. They will advance forward in order to win the fight even if they have to put their life on the line” (Ornoth)

“However, there is a companion this time. right?” (Marione)

“Still, they wouldn’t stop. Because those guys are simple minded people starving for blood” (Ornoth)

Blood thirst leaked from Marione. He still harbours hatred toward the 『Gabranth』 , because his wife and child were murdered by them.

“.....Nevertheless, I recommend it” (Eveam)

“Still, how will you handle them if they don’t have any intention of stopping?” (Ornoth)

Eveam shut her eyes and set her lips. Everyone was waiting for her response. And then, she opened her mouth.

“At that time..... We will fight them” (Eveam)

Marione hardened from her response as he was caught off guard by it. Rather, it was not only Marione. All the people except Aquinas were flabbergasted.

They never expected the words “Fight” to come out surely from Eveam’s mouth.

“Y-Your Majesty? You do understand what fighting entails ?” (Shublarz)

The dumbfounded Shublarz asked Eveam.

“Yes, if my demand is not accepted, then the only remaining option is to fight against them. We only delayed the fight but the uneasiness did not fade away even when we destroyed the bridge.” (Eveam)

“Y-you have a poin~t” (Shublarz)

“I was made to understand that nothing changed it was as if we overlook them and waited for the other party to make a move.” (Eveam)

She seemed to have clearly learned from her mistake. The mistake was to never trust a partner blindly.

“Therefore, supposing the demand doesn’t pass, we will fight. In addition, we will get to dominate them and let them feel the strength of our ideals! Our desire for true peace!”  
(Eveam)

“By force.... right?” (Marione)

She affirmed Marione’s question with a nod while clenching her teeth.

“Yes, however, I want to refrain from killing as much as possible.....that’s why I decided to enforce the proposal by liberating the captives!” (Eveam)

After they heard her proposal, the people who were gathered in the area were at a loss for words.

# KONJIKI NO WORD MASTER

---

## Chapter 153

### Unprecedented Demand

---

Leglos came back to the tent, and Lenion, who saw his brother's troubled expression, inclined his neck.

“What's the matter, Aniki?” (Lenion)

“Hm? Well, Yuhito appears to be absent.” (Leglos)

Yuhito was one of the brilliant minds of 【Gabranth Capital - Passion】. He was the creator of the 《Nameless Bracelet》 and the one who worked out the method for the 《Binding Technique》.

“Haa? You mean that Mad Rascal?” (Lenion)

“Yes, after all, he was supposed to be deployed too.” (Leglos)

“Why are you looking for that rascal?” (Lenion)

“You see, I thought he might devise a method to cross over to the 『Evila』 continent.” (Leglos)

“Ah, I see. I'm sure he will unexpectedly appear sooner or later since it's that guy we're talking about.” (Lenion)

“I agree. He is, after all, elusive.” (Leglos)



Both of them did not seem to mind Yuhito's disappearance at all, as that guy had always showed up suddenly. Leglos who was concerned, was fed up with Yuhito doing things at his own pace in such a situation.

“By the way, how’s father?” (Lenion)

“It seems he is going around, visiting the tents of the others. He is calling out to the people who have suffered injuries during the war.” (Leglos)

“Fu~un, he is as companion-loving as ever” (Lenion)

“That is our strong point after all.” (Leglos)

While they stood for a while in their place, a soldier hurriedly entered the tent. The soldier had a rather flustered appearance as his breathing was heavy and rugged.

When they enquired the reason for the soldier’s frantic appearance, he said that, the 『Evila』 had sent them a letter.

After the two mutually gazed at each other for an instant, they ran out to the Beast King, Leowald in a hurry.

“Oh, you guys came.” (Leowald)

For some reason, the two felt a sense of incongruity in his tone. Leowald’s expression seemed a little loose, and had a happy atmosphere around him as he spoke those words.

“Father, is that the letter sent by them?” (Leglos)

“Ah, Read it. Something interesting is written in it” (Leowald)

Leglos read the letter that was handed over to him, “What in the world is this?!” , he instinctively raised his voice.

Naturally, Lenion who was seemingly interested in the contents of that letter, requested an explanation from Leglos. And after the explanation was done, he too had an expression of astonishment.

First, the contents demanded a non-aggression treaty in exchange for liberating the captives. Naturally, this part was not that surprising as Leowald had expected this to happen.

The problem was, when the demand requested was not accepted.

The letter stated that supposing the demand was not accepted, they will conclude the war with a fight. Although this was a little surprising as it came from the naive Demon Lord, it was the fight itself that took their breaths away.

The letter was written as,

『Currently, your military forces are most likely scarce. If this fight towards one’s annihilation were to continue, both sides would receive huge damage, and this is something that both countries will not benefit from. If circumstances were to allow, we do not wish to recklessly kill soldiers or the people, and so we should necessarily choose a more appropriate way, which the two concerned parties deem convincing, to fight this war. Previously, you said something like, “Defeat us by showing us your power”. if that is what you want, then we will show it to you. We will truly show you our power. We will have a confrontation between our strongest war potentials to decide the winner and loser among us. We will hand over to your side, the right to decide the specifications of the fight. Naturally, the number of figures should match. We will also liberate your comrades, if you acknowledge this. However, this is our greatest

compromise. If you refuse this demand, we will not hesitate to annihilate you with the whole power of 『Evila』 . Of course, if the war ends without fighting, I believe that is for the best of both countries. I will be expecting a favourable response』

Everyone in the place, who heard Leglos' explanation about the letter, were flabbergasted. The content of the letter appeared to be reasonable. This is because, they too share some consentient on the matter at hand.

From what they understood from the letter, if they were to wage a war, then it would surely become a fight towards one's annihilation. All those who were there now, could, without a doubt, imagine the death toll in such a situation

However, if they were to fight out between them, through the method suggested by the letter, the soldiers would not be needlessly sacrificed. Moreover, they were given the rights to choose the specifications for the fight. This was obviously to their side's advantage.

No matter how they thought of it, the 『Evila』 seemed to be at a really disadvantageous position . They could have easily crushed the remaining Gabbranth army, let alone slaughter the captives.

Nevertheless, why?, everyone inclined their necks in confusion.

“Gahahahaha! They really got me there! They have totally pulled off something strange here! Gahahaha!” (Leowald)

Leowald who found it interesting, laughed from the bottom of his heart.

“F-Father! This is not the time to be laughing! How are we going to respond to this?!”  
(Leglos)

He answered Leglos' question while his face carried a smile.

"No matter how we think of it, this is quite a convenient negotiation!" (Leowald)

"But, this may be a trap!" (Leglos)

"No, that is not possible." (Leowald)

"W-Why is it?" (Leglos)

"Even if they didn't request such a thing, they could win this war easily by fighting us with their current forces. No matter how we think about it, we are the ones on the unfavorable side." (Leowald)

What's more, the 『Humas』 had already withdrawn, they were evidently overwhelmed by the enemy.

"Besides, I told you that the Demon Lord was naive, right? This letter probably don't have any trace of deceit. I may be saying this, but this is all just based from intuition!"

"I-Intuition huh....." (Leglos)

Leglos who was astonished, exhaled.

"Moreover, a confrontation between the highest war potentials of both sides.....fufu, It's been a long time since my heart has pounded like this, merely from such a suggestion!" (Leowald)

"F-Father..." (Leglos)

At that time, a hand grabbed onto Leglos' shoulder with a pop!

"Aniki, no matter what you say, it's useless" (Lenion)

It was Lenion, who had stopped Leglos, however, he too was grinning, happily.

"Isn't this a bit more interesting? Although I think that a warrior should confront the enemy directly, to settle this war, this way, is very intriguing." (Lenion)

When Leglos saw that kind of facial expression, he hung his head in submission. He lightly shook his in resignation at the two war loving people beside him.

"Gahaha! Don't make such a face Leglos! Look at them." (Leowald)

Leowald jerked his chin, prompting Leglos to change his line of sight. What they saw there was Barid and Putis of the 《Three Warriors》 bowing down deeply.

"Y-You guys....." (Leglos)

"We will do our best to bring us victory." (Barid)

Putis nodded in agreement with Barid's word. The two seemed exceptionally motivated..

"..... haa, I understand. You really are going to accept their demands?" (Leglos)

"Yes, besides, if it's such a fight like this, then that guy will probably participate as well."

(Leowald)

Leowald had his hands on his chin as he gladly smiled in anticipation.

“That guy?” (Leglos)

“Well, there might be some who will object this fight, but we have a chance for victory within our grasp.” (Leowald)

“ “ “Oooooooooooooo! “ “ “ (Gabranth Soldiers)

The soldiers raised their arms as they shouted in eagerness.

“All the soldiers in here! Believe in us and leave the rest to us!” (Leowald)

“ “ “Oooooooooooooo! “ “ “ (Gabranth Soldiers)

Thus the curtain to an unprecedented decisive way of war between the 『Gabranth』 and 『Evila』 was unveiled, clashing against each other, using their best forces.

# KONJIKI NO WORD MASTER

---

## Chapter 154

### A Conversation At The Prison

---

“I see, so the other party accepted it.....that’s good. For now, we can say that things went well.” (Eveam)

Eveam was relieved to hear the reply they had received from the beastmen. This way, there would be no more deaths than needed for both parties. Of course, there’s no telling what would happen to the 『Evila』 if they were to lose.

Just in case, they had used a 《Contract Roll》 for the agreement and within it was the promise to not indiscriminately kill the loser’s people or perform other such actions. Even so, the likelihood that they would be able to continue living as they had up until now was low.

“The loser will have to obey the winner”. In other words, the loser would essentially have to become the winner’s subordinate. However, this agreement was not perfect. There was a possibility of the other party committing suicide and betraying the winner. However, that insecurity was dispelled by Aquinas.

“They won’t go back on their word once they have decided upon it. I believe that is the pride of the 『Gabranth』. That’s why, up until now, there has never been a situation in which they have betrayed someone. At the very least, if the current Beast King accepts our demand, they’ll likely follow him due to sentimental reasons. And in the event that we win, Your Majesty has no intention of oppressing them, right?” (Aquinas)

“Of course.” (Eveam)

“Then, there’s no need to be dissatisfied. All that’s left is to take the time to communicate with them in a way that will allow them to understand our true intentions, correct?” (Aquinas)

“I see...yeah, that’s right.” (Eveam)

“But, in order to do that, we need to win at all costs.”(Aquinas)

“Yeah, you are exactly right. Let’s beat them head on, fair and square!” (Eveam)

Seeing Eveam clenching her fist strongly, Aquinas exhaled as his face relaxed.

“But, to think we chose this kind of method. Marione’s jaw dropped as though it would never close again, you know?” (Aquinas)

“Hahaha. Actually, this method was thought of.....by Hihiro.” (Eveam)

“Hihiro?” (Aquinas)

“Y-Yeah.” (Eveam)



The contents of what Eveam had demanded of the Gabranth this time, were part of a plan devised by Hiiro. When she had a talk with Hiiro, she blurted out how she wanted to resolve this war peacefully.

At that time, Hiiro laughed and teased her, while telling her that she spoke too naively. Naturally, Eveam understood what Hiiro was trying to say. However, she couldn't agree with his remark and got mad.

After Eveam became sullen for a short period of time, Hiiro spoke these words to her.

"There's no such thing as a war that doesn't hurt anybody. If you don't want anyone to get hurt, then you should make it so that there is no reason for any wars to begin."  
(Hiiro)

That was only natural. In response, she told Hiiro that she had also put in much effort in order to do that.

"Once a war starts, there is no guarantee that you can stop it without casualties. However, damage can be reduced depending on the **opponent**. I have an idea. Well, maybe I should call it a kind of naive fantasy, and it's a foolish plan that could probably be found in some hot-blooded action manga or something, but....." (Hiiro)

After saying that, he reluctantly began to teach her about the method used this time.

"Hou, so this ridiculous proposal was Hiiro's, huh?" (Aquinas)

As he said that, Aquinas gave a seemingly satisfied expression.

"Still, I'm surprised you decided to go with that plan." (Aquinas)

"It can't be helped right? At this rate, we would keep fighting until one of us is destroyed. That alone is absolutely no good. That being the case, I thought that if we went to our opponent's home-ground, they'd be willing to listen to what we have to say." (Eveam)

"I see, so this method is only possible because the opponent is the 『Gabranth』, huh?"  
(Aquinas)

"Yeah, although this method certainly won't end with absolutely no injuries, at the very least, we should be able to get off with minimal damage. Also, unlike for our opponents, the proposal is clearly disadvantageous for us. If we are able to defeat them despite that, our opponents wouldn't be able to say anything about it." (Eveam)

"Fu..you seem to be pretty determined.. Is that also because of Hiiro?" (Aquinas)

"U-Umu. Well, yeah." (Eveam)

She looked the other way in embarrassment.

“Well, they certainly have the advantage, but if they lose despite having been in such an advantageous position, even the 『Gabranth』 would have to recognize it. Their own defeat, that is.” (Aquinas)

“Ah, Hihiro also said that!” (Eveam)

Aquinas stared at Eveam, who joyfully expressed a smile. Noticing his gaze, she hastily turned away from him as her face became bright red.

“.....Fuu.” (Aquinas)

Eveam saw Aquinas, who wore a smile that seemed to have some hidden meaning contained within it.

“Hey, do you have something to say?!” (Eveam)

“Nope, you should be just like that and continue to change yourself little by little.” (Aquinas)

His expression vaguely resembled that of a parent watching over his child affectionately.

\(^\_^)/

“Eh..What are y....?” (Eveam)

As Eveam spoke, Aquinas turned around and started walking off elsewhere.

“Where are you going, Aquinas?” (Eveam)

“..... I’m just going for a stroll.” (Aquinas)

She stared at Aquinas’ back as he departed.

“...What was that all about..?” (Eveam)

She tilted her still feverish face in confusion.

“Funya ~, My body still hurts nya~” (Crouch)

The individual that said that as he lay on a straw while rolling about was one of the 《Three Warriors》, Crouch.

Having lost to Hihiro, he was taken as a prisoner of war and thrown in jail.

“Uhh~as expected, my body is still white nya~” (Crouch)

Staring at his hand, he sighed, as his fur, which should have been black, was currently white like snow.

“It’s the 《Rebound》 from having summoned those big-shots all at once after all, nya... I might be stuck like this until the next full moon.” (Crouch)

Furthermore, not only had his fur turned white, his height had also clearly changed. When he was black, his body was sturdy and tall, but now, he was no taller than a child. His chest also swelled a bit. It was obviously the body of a girl.

“Uhh~I’m bored-nya~” (Crouch)

Crouch rolled around and then suddenly stopped. She then started to remember that person.

“..... Hiiro..huh?” (Crouch)

Having battled with him, Crouch recalled the person who had defeated her with his overwhelming power.

“Red robe...Glasses...And also, that scent.” (Crouch)

When they fought, Hiiro’s scent entered her nose and she experienced a sense of discomfort.

“Why does he smell like Tarou-nya?” (Crouch)

Unfortunately, there was nobody to retort “It’s because they’re the same person.” When she first met Hiiro, he was disguised as a beastman and refused to give his real name, instead calling himself Tanaka Tarou. However, his red robe, glasses, and scent were all the same.

That was why she was unnecessarily confused. If she knew that Hiiro could change his appearance, she would know the reason immediately, but sadly, Crouch wasn’t aware of that fact.

“..... Aah! Forget it !” (Crouch)

She rolled about again.

“Who cares-nya! More importantly, I want to fight him again-nya! I want to meet with Hiiro-nya!” (Crouch)

Her shrill voice resounded throughout the jail. The other beastmen, who were similarly captured and imprisoned there said, “Ah, she’s irritated again.” and exasperated sighs could be heard from all over the place.

As this had occurred numerous times already, the prison guards also gave off an atmosphere of resignation as they simply shrugged their shoulders. However, it was not like they could leave her with no words of warning at all.

“Hey, quiet down a bit, would you?” (Prison Guard)

The guard’s tone was a bit gentle, probably because Crouch’s appearance was clearly that of a child. While she certainly was an enemy, it still felt awkward to one-sidedly treat a child as a target of their resentment.

“Uu~Call Hiiro here-nya~” (Crouch)

“I already told you that it’s impossible, right? That person is the country’s saviour, and is truly worthy of being called a hero. There’s no way I could bring him to this kind of place.” (Prison Guard)

“Nya? Is Hiiro that popular nya?” (Crouch)

“Well, I guess so. That’s what everyone who saw him fight directly would say. Even more, that person blew up the bridge by himself, you know? To do that much for us 《Evila》, if we didn’t call him a hero, then just what *would* we call him?”

(Prison Guard)

The Prison Guard’s eyes glittered, staring at the distance with envy.

“The bridge!? By himself?! Amazing nya..... “(Crouch)

Crouch knew that there had been quite a few forces deployed to defend the bridge. To penetrate through that defence alone, Crouch’s eyes glittered at the thought of Hiiro, who had single-handedly destroyed the bridge.

Crouch didn’t doubt the man’s words at all. She was capable of judging that he was serious based on his appearance.

“What’s even more surprising is the fact that that person was actually a 『Humas』, you know?” (Prison Guard)

“.....heh? What do you mean by 『Humas』, nya?” (Crouch)

“Well, it seems that he’s capable of using Transformation magic, but his original appearance is that of a 『Humas』. Still, to think there was a person like that amongst the humans. He’s completely different from the ones in 《Victorias》. Ah, but that person also originally came from 《Victorias》.....is it alright to say that?” (Prison Guard)

“..... What do you mean-nya?” (Crouch)

Crouch's face turned serious as she began to probe for information. The man, caught up in his own world, didn't notice. He was drunk with his own words.

"Nothing. Just that he seems to have been summoned along with the heroes." (Prison Guard)

"....." (Crouch)

"Well, he doesn't seem to be a hero himself. They say that he just somehow got dragged into the summoning, so he came here...Oi, are you listening?" (Prison Guard)

Seeing that she wasn't replying, he grew curious and peered at her cell. Unlike earlier, she was quietly lying on top of the straw. Looking at her current appearance, he had a moment of realization and regained his composure.

"Damn. Was it alright to tell her that?" (Prison Guard)

Realizing that he had unintentionally heated up and leaked information to the enemy, the prison guard grew agitated. However, seeing that she wasn't moving, he figured that she may have fallen asleep. He clasped his hands in prayer, hoping within his heart that she would forget everything. Then, just like that, he continued his work.

However, Crouch did not plan on forgetting anything about that conversation. The reason being that now, she knew that Hiiro and Tarou were connected.

(Transformation.....I see, nya..... so they were the same person after all, nya!) (Crouch)

She felt excitement swell up in her heart. As a result, her earlier desire to see him grew even stronger.

Not to mention, she heard an interesting story.

(Not only that, but to think he was someone from another world.....how interesting-nya! Hiiro really is interesting nya!) (Crouch)

Crouch smiled, as her cheeks blushed.

"Nyahaha..... Nyahaha..... Nyahaha....." (Crouch)

For a while, only her laughter could be heard resounding throughout the prison. Incidentally, as the prison guards found her laughing voice creepy, it seems that they remained silent.

# KONJIKI NO WORD MASTER

---

## Chapter 155 Suprising Visitor

---

.....Shudder !?

Liliyn asked Hiiro ‘did something happen’ because he suddenly dropped the book he was reading.

“No, nothing”

“Really?”

Hiiro who felt a shiver suspected that someone was staring at him. Furthermore, it would’ve been better if it was without the crooked feeling he was getting.

(.....Let’s keep it as an imagination.)(Hiiro)

Wiping off the bad feeling, he once again laid his eyes on the book.

Hiiro and others were staying in a single room within the Demon Lord’s Palace. He was living in a big room which he had borrowed for a while. When he was asked to stay here for a while to rest, he cheerfully took that request.

The biggest reason why he agreed was because he could be informed about the latest situation of the war, but also because he could eat all the food he wanted.

While reading the book, he looked towards Nikki who was sitting in a prostrating position on the floor. Her body was covered with blue light. And floating in front of her was a sphere about the size of a tennis ball. The light covering her was connected to the floating sphere.

“You’re distracted, Baka-Deshi”(Hiiro)

“Y,Yeah desuzo”(Nikki)

From her forehead slight sweat seeped out. She was biting her teeth with her eyes closed and somehow looked in pain.

“Ho~, Nikki is now able to control magic, too.”(Liliyn)

To Liliyn words, Nikki broadly smiled and looked towards her. But,

Creak!

Suddenly the sphere snapped, and she instinctively turned her face away.

“.....It’s still a long way to go”(Liliyn)

Liliyn shrugged her shoulders in amazement.

“Au~.....”(Nikki)

“This happened because you lost concentration. Do it from the start.”(Hiiro)

“Y,Yeah desuzo.....”(Nikki)

She dejectedly nodded at Hiiro’s words

“Mumumu”(Nikki)

Hiiro stared at Nikki who once again started concentrating with her eyes closed.

(Come to think of it, it’s been a long time since I’ve picked her up)(Hiiro)

He recalled his first meeting with Nikki who was desperately trying to control her magical power. At first, her expression was like that of a corpse, not showing any emotions. One couldn’t tell whether she was even living or not.

Even though Nikki was a human, she was raised by a monster in the demon continent. One day that monster was killed by another monster.

For Nikki, it was the same as losing her parents. After living on her own for a while, she was met with an unexpected event.

That time, it was Hiiro who saved her. Due to some strange fact he was liked by Nikki, and she wanted to become his student.

Naturally, Hiiro would’ve rejected her, but he could not reject her.

(Sympathy.....was it? It was not my character)(Hiiro)

Yes, at that time what he felt towards Nikki was without a doubt sympathy. He thought it would be interesting to make her into his disciple while seeing Nikki cling on to his waist.

Once Hiiro decided on something, he would never regret it later. He doesn’t like to blame others using excuses for the choices he made himself.

He had decided to take responsibility for the choices he has made by himself. And as long as he had thought to let Nikki grow, he would look after her till she became independent.

And as a human stands out in the demon continent, he changed her form to a Imp race using his“Word Magic”. When Nikki abruptly asked for a proof of her connection with Shishou, Hiiro used his “Word Magic” to write “Literature” on a cloth similar to a martial cloth uniform.

Thereupon, Mikazuki also asked for a proof, so he did the same thing he did for Nikki.

(Still why do little children gather around me? And all girls on top of it?)(Hiiro)

He turned his gaze towards Nikki and the moment he turned his gaze towards Liliyn, he was attacked by a tremendous stare as if he was being made fun of by her.

(.....She has good intuition)(Hiiro)

Keeping his usual poker face, Hiiro exhaled a sigh and once again concentrated on his book.

The door opened and a noisy guy entered.

“Maaaaaaster! Mikazuki has returned!”(Mikazuki)

Hiiro swiftly dodged Mikazuki.

“What!?”(Mikazuki)

And just like that Mikazuki kissed the floor .

“Fuua! I, IT hurts~! Master is a meanie! Hug Me!”(Mikazuki)

“Shut Up. It’s damn hot, so don’t cling onto me.”(Hiiro)

“That’s right Mikazuki! Only I can be hugged by Master!”(Nikki)

“It’s wrong! Only Mikazuki can be hugged by master! Nikki can do her practice!”(Mikazuki)

“Wha, What did you sa~y?”(Nikki)

Hiiro sighed while looking at the unproductive quarrel between the two.

“Nufofofofo! I have returned, My Lady!”(Silva)

“Aa”(Liliyn)

“Oho! I am impressed even by the cold words from my Lady! Nufofofofo!”(Silva)

“Hiiro, he is being irritating, shut him up using your ‘Word Magic’.”(Liliyn)

“That is harsh! That is indeed harsh! Nufofofofo!”(Silva)

Liliyn directed her line of sight towards Shamoe standing beside the Hentai butler. [ET: hentai gives more impact than pervert]

“Thank you for gathering information. So what is the situation right now?”(Liliyn)

“Tha, That is.....”(Shamoe)



Shamoe stared at the door with a face saying 'it's hard to say'

"Nh? Is someone over there?"(Liliyn)

Someone suddenly entered through the door. Hiiro twitched his eyebrows while Liliyn was making a grim expression.

"Ho, we have a rare guest here. No, actually, we are the guests here."(Hiiro)

Saying so he closed the book.

"I wanted to talk with you for a bit"(Aquinas)

While saying so, Hiiro looked at Aquinas with a investigating stare. Liliyn herself was displaying an displeased mood. Silva who had been laughing was also being cautious.

"With me? Just the two of us?"(Hiiro)

"Yeah"(Aquinas)

A loud sound of someone stomping the floor was heard. Hiiro realised it was the work of Liliyn.

"Don't joke around.....I told you.....not to put your head in our business."(Liliyn)

Hiiro widened his eyes seeing Lilyn emitting hostility towards Aquinas.

(I thought they were acquaintances but it feels like it's more than that)(Hiiro)

He suddenly remembered. It was their names. When he peeked at Aquinas's 《Status》 , he felt some uneasy feeling. He finally remembered it

Liliyn Li Reysis Red Rose and Aquinas Li Reysis Phoenix. The 'Li Reysis' was the same in both their names.

(And If I look at them closely.....these two.....look alike)(Hiiro)

Their red hair resembled each other, particularly their eyes looked similar. And they both had a similar atmosphere too. Hiiro tried to guess their relationship, while both stared at each other and spoke.

"Don't worry. It's not like I want to stick my head in your business. I came only to talk with him."(Aquinas)

".....Really ?" (Liliyn)

Aquinas exhaled while staring at her.

"Well, I do have a request too"(Aquinas)

“See! It might be some troublesome request, right? Solve it yourself!”(Liliyn)

“I can do that, but if I do, then maybe I cannot fulfill the promise made to him”(Aquinas)

Hiiro who remained silent, reacted towards those words.

“What does that mean?”(Hiiro)

“The continuation from the story will be just between us? So what is it? Will you take it or not?”(Aquinas)

“kuu! You are a coward Aquinas! If you say it like that then Hiiro will.....!”(Liliyn)

“Aa, I’ll take that offer.”(Hiiro)

Hiiro easily accepted the offer.

“Ah Mou! See,it ended up like that!”(Liliyn)

“My Lady, please calm down”(Silva)

“Eei! How can I keep calm with this happening!?”(Liliyn)

Silva’s words didn’t work on her and she pouted. But surprisingly the one she turned her attention to was Hiiro.

“Aka-Loli, I don’t know what happened between you and him, but I should choose my decision here not you.”(Hiiro)

“B, But Hiiro, this man is.....”

Hiiro raised his hand and made a gesture as to not speak anymore.

“As a matter of fact, I have already guessed what his so called request is”(Hiiro)

“R, Really?”(Liliyn)

Liliyn made a blank expression in an instant. Aquinas made an understanding face saying ‘As expected’.

“Aa, So you guys wait here. Let’s go Aka kami”

“Yeah”(Aquinas)

Just before he was about to leave,

“H, Hey Hiiro”(Liliyn)

Hiiro stopped his feet and asked “What?”.

“It should be fine knowing it’s you.....but do tell us if something happens”(Liliyn)

It implicitly meant that in case Mikazuki or Nikki was unable to move, the word that was set up on them should be activated.

Hihiro took a quick glance at his friends. When he looked at them he saw Nikki and Mikazuki staring at him with worrying faces.

tap.....tap.....Hihiro poked their heads with his index fingers.

“Wait patiently.”

Upon hearing Hihiro’s words both felt reassured. And then, Hihiro was taken out of the room by Aquinas.

# KONJIKI NO WORD MASTER

---

## Chapter 156 Hiiro and Aquinas

---

Aquinas guided Hiiro to what appeared to be his room. On the terrace, there was a circular table along with a couple of chairs.

After being offered to take a seat, Hiiro sat down silently.

“Can you drink?” (Aquinas)

After he asked so, Aquinas took out a bottle, which seemed to contain wine.

“Sorry, but I don’t really understand the appeal of alcohol.” (Hiiro)

“Hmm, you’re missing out on quite a bit in life.” (Aquinas)

“Hey, I can enjoy life even without drinking, you know?.” (Hiiro)

“Is that so? Well, pretend I tricked you and you tried drinking some. If it doesn’t suit your taste, you can just leave it be.” (Aquinas)

Then, Aquinas tipped the bottle to the glass and a liquid similar to red wine flowed out.

“I’m telling you in advance, there’s no poison in it.” (Aquinas)

“I’m not worried about that. There is no merit in poisoning someone you are asking a favor from.” (Hiiro)

Hiiro lifted the glass and brought it to his lips.

“Nh?...nh?” (Hiiro)

It gave him a rather unexpected feeling. It wasn’t bitter at all, and if he had to say, it had a sweetness to it that made it rather easy to drink.

“How is it? There isn’t a lot of alcohol in it. Does it suit your taste?” (Aquinas)

“It isn’t as bad as I thought.” (Hiiro)

“Good to hear that.” (Aquinas)

Aquinas sat down, took a small sip, and let it flow down his throat. Then, he silently placed the glass on the table and opened his mouth.

“Hiiro.” (Aquinas)

“.....What?” (Hiiro)

“You have my thanks.” (Aquinas)

“.....?” (Hiiro)

Hiiro thought he was going to ask his favor immediately but was so surprised at the sudden words of gratitude, that he reflexively responded.

“...What are you thankful for?” (Hiiro)

“Various things.” (Aquinas)

“Various things...huh?” (Hiiro)

“That is right, various things.” (Aquinas)

Hiiro thought that it was for helping out during the war. But, to him, that was work related to the contract he had signed with Eveam. He didn’t remember anything else that Aquinas would be thankful for. As long as he properly received compensation, then he would be satisfied..

“It isn’t just about the war preparations....you know?” (Aquinas)

He said as if he had read Hiiro’s mind.

“Then what is it?” (Hiiro)

“.....Prin..it’s about Her Majesty.” (Aquinas)

“The demon lord, whose head is full of flowers, right?” Hiiro said with a slight laugh.

“Fufu. Only you would say something like that about the ruler of a country.” (Aquinas)

Instead of finding fault in Hiiro’s words, Aquinas smiled heartily.

“Aah, that is right, it’s about Her Majesty.” (Aquinas)

“.....I haven’t done anything, you know?” (Hiiro)

If he had to say he did something, then it’d be about how he healed her wounds. Nonetheless, he had simply thought at the time that if she died, he would lose his long-sought ticket to the library.

“No, thanks to you, Her Majesty is able to move forward, towards her goal.” (Aquinas)

“.....” (Hiiro)

“During the conflict this time around, we should have suffered a significant amount of damage. But, because of your efforts, we were able to resolve the incident with minimum damage to the country. It was also because of you that Her Majesty gained the determination to fight.” (Aquinas)

“I just explained common sense to her. Besides, if you are talking about the proposal, you are thanking the wrong person. That was just a flash of inspiration I had. I normally wouldn’t think that there’d be people willing to put it into practice nor accept the proposal.” (Hiiro)

“Yet it was proposed to us, and it was accepted by the other side.” (Aquinas)

“.....There really is something wrong with the rulers of this world.” (Hiiro)

“Perhaps...” (Aquinas)

Aquinas quickly took another sip from his glass.

“...Hmm, Her Majesty is able to continue down her path in her own way. The one who helped her get to that point was you, Hiiro.” (Aquinas)

They both looked at each other in mutual understanding.

“Her Majesty suffered a blow. Not only was she betrayed by her aide, who was by her side for many years, the peace conference also ended in failure.” (Aquinas)

“.....” (Hiiro)

“But you are still here. For some reason, Her Majesty believes in you completely. At the moment, your very existence is a great support to her Majesty.” (Aquinas)

“Even though I find it troublesome?” (Hiiro)

“Hmph, don’t say that. Even though she looks like that, she is genuinely an innocent girl. Her views are still shallow. But just like you, she has something that attracts people towards her.” (Aquinas)

“Even though I don’t believe I have something like that?” (Hiiro)

That was something he truly believed.

“If you say something like that, your companions will get angry, you know?” (Aquinas)

“Why?” (Hiiro)

“.....” (Aquinas)

As expected, even Aquinas blinked in disbelief when he heard such a response.

“...Hiiro, have you ever been regarded as thick-headed?” (Aquinas)

“Ah? Thick-headed? Hmm, I remember Aka-loli and the Hentai saying something like that.” (Hiiro)

“Aka.....loli? H-hentai?” (Aquinas)

“Aka-loli is the one who glared at you. The Hentai is the old butler.” (Hiiro)

“.....Kuh.” (Aquinas)

Hearing that, Aquinas looked away while his body started shaking little by little.

“.....?” (Hiiro)

Hiiro wondered what was wrong with Aquinas as he watched over him. Shortly after that, Aquinas seemed to have returned to normal since he turned back towards Hiiro with a refreshed expression.

“As expected, you are an interesting person. No wonder Liliyn is interested in you.” (Aquinas)

“What are you trying to get at?” (Hiiro)

“Hmph, lets leave that aside. About her majesty...” (Aquinas)

“Oh, alright.” (Hiiro)

“Either way her majesty has decided to fight.” (Aquinas)

“I see.” (Hiiro)

“Up until now she never wanted to fight, but now she has finally opened her eyes to reality. It’s all thanks to you.” (Aquinas)

“Choosing not to fight can be considered a respectable thing. It is a wonderful notion.” (Hiiro)

“Indeed, a wonderful notion.” (Aquinas)

“However, that is something difficult to do in reality. Especially when you live in an era ruled by kings.” (Hiiro)

“That is indeed the case.” (Aquinas)

“Well, isn’t it fine that she is now able to see reality a little? For the time being, you could say that she grew up a little.” (Hiiro)

“But, the biggest question is whether or not her decisions will bear fruit.” (Aquinas)

In other words, he was saying that there was no point if they didn’t win against the Gabranth.

“I see. It seems that the favor you’re planning on asking is just what I thought.” (Hiiro)

“Hou, would you like to share?” (Aquinas)

“You want me to... participate, right? In the duel with the Gabranth.” (Hiiro)

“.....” (Aquinas)

Hihiro considered Aquinas' silence as acceptance. Rather, when Hihiro told Eveam about the way to resolve this situation, he had predicted that something like this would happen.

And so, while he had found it unexpected that Aquinas would come to ask him for the favor in this manner, Hihiro had already figured that Aquinas had come to ask for his participation in the duel.

It was, of course, in order for them to win. If a person thought about it, everyone would look to Hihiro's power. Even though he was an outsider, it would be odd if they didn't use his power when it was nearby.

Nonetheless, Hihiro knew something like this could happen so he had something prepared. He wanted to end the war as soon as possible so he could gain access to the 《Fortuna Grand Library》 right away.

In addition to that, he was also committed to fulfilling Liliyn's dream. Her dream was to create 【A place that everybody could enjoy】

With the current state of affairs, something like that was impossible. That was exactly why Liliyn wanted to create a new country and establish her dream place; though at the moment that was still a distant goal.

However, if they continued to lay around doing nothing, even if a hundred years passed, the chances of still being unable to realize her dream were high. That being the case, Hihiro's idea was to make use of the existing countries.

This world had three countries, each with their own great history. But they fought each other continuously and created extreme hatred against each other. As they were right now, it would forever be impossible to create a place where people from each country could live in harmony.

With that in mind, any country was fine, as long as they could keep the other countries in check. With that control in place, civil liberties could be established and there would be a high chance of them being able to control the opposition.

Instead of domination and servitude, one would seek out freedom and friendship. However, something like that could not be established without resolving the conflicts between the countries. While Hihiro was still unsure how to resolve these, as long as the method used to bring the conflict to an end was agreed upon by both sides, he thought it would be fine.



With that in mind, Hihiro was unsure how he would approach the 『Humas』. However, he figured that for the 『Gabranth』, his proposed duel would work the best. A primary reason for that was that he somehow felt that if it was that Beast King, he'd be willing to take up the offer.

The Gabranth were a group that held the belief that strength was everything. As such, Hihiro felt that if they had a method to show off their power, they would be able to persuade them. If things went well, then both sides would be willing to participate in the battle.

Thus, if the 『Evila』 won, then they would be able to obtain the Beastmen country. Although he might have said “obtain”, what they really meant to do was to finally pave the way for an alliance.

If they could do that, then all that would be left for them to do would be to deal with the 『Humas』 somehow, thus allowing Liliyn to take a large step towards her dream.

Naturally, there were still a lot of uncertainties, but at the moment the only thing he could do was ensure that 【Demon Capital: Xaos】 won. That was why-

“Sounds good. I will also participate in this duel against the Gabranth.” (Hihiro)

This answer was prepared in advance.

Next time, finally.....'they' will appear !?

# KONJIKI NO WORD MASTER

---

## Chapter 157 Longtime Companions

---

After Hiiro returned to his room, Liliyn interrogated him about his discussion with Aquinas, just as he expected. In order to make her understand, Hiiro spoke without hiding anything.

Not only that, but for some reason she seemed to be making a relieved expression. It was likely because her concerns were proven to be false.

“Well, if that is what you have decided, I won’t do anything to stop you.” (Liliyn)

“Nofofofofo! Ojou-sama was really worried about Hiiro-sama and kept asking “Has he returned yet?” She was not able to settle down at all!” (Silva)

“T-t-t-t-t-that’s not true, you morooooooooooooon!” (Liliyn)

“Buhen—?!” (Silva)

Because of Silva’s unnecessary remarks, Liliyn’s face instantly flushed a deep red. As if to hide her feelings, she kicked Silva in the face.

Although Shamoe was surprised by the sudden act of violence, she took care of the now silent Silva who was sprawled on the ground.

“Haa haa haa haa…… Listen well, Hiiro! That bastard was spouting nonsense! It wasn’t like that, alright?!” (Liliyn)

With somewhat teary eyes, she pointed her finger and frantically denied the validity of Silva’s comments. Hiiro glanced at her and—

“Is that so…” (Hiiro)

He replied in a completely indifferent manner. Naturally, Liliyn was taken aback by his total disinterest. She glared at him and said—

“Y-y-y-y-y-you fool! Someday, I will make you kneel before me!” (Liliyn)

Even as she yelled, Liliyn’s still-red face and tiny body didn’t evoke a single ounce of fear. Rather, seeing her act so desperately would make anyone smile.

(What are you acting so desperate for……) (Hiiro)

Sadly, nothing Liliyn said affected Hiiro in the slightest. He gave out the same dry answer as usual.

“Sh-shishou!” (Nikki)

Without any warning, Nikki clenched her fists and yelled.

“What?” (Hiiro)

“S-Shishou is, um... going to the duel, right?!?” (Nikki)

“Yeah.” (Hiiro)

Nikki then gave a clearly restless expression. Hiiro understood what she wanted to say and indifferently told her—

“You’re no good.” (Hiiro)

“Eeeh!? W-why?!“ (Nikki)

Nikki showed a very disappointed face, as though she had received a great shock.

“It’s only natural; it’s still too early for you.” (Hiiro)

“B-But..... I want to help Shishou!” (Nikki)

“This request is for me. You don’t need to be involved.” (Hiiro)

“Uuuu.....” (Nikki)

She fell silent at Hiiro’s complete rejection.

“This is a duel involving the fate of this country. You’ve still got a long way to go before you can even think about shouldering such a responsibility.” (Hiiro)

“Uuuu~ stronger!” (Nikki)

“Ha?” (Hiiro)

“Stronger, stronger, strongeeeeer! If I become stronger, then can I fight alongside Shishou?!“ (Nikki)

She set her lips straight and gave Hiiro a serious look. After seeing such a display, Hiiro sighed and nodded his head.

“Let’s see, just getting stronger isn’t enough. But, well, if you become stronger, then I guess I can let you fight together with me.” (Hiiro)

“Then, I will become stronger! So when the time comes, I will look forward to fighting with you!” (Nikki)

“...Well, I’ll be waiting for it.” (Hiiro)

Hiiro flicked Nikki on the forehead, making a *ton* sound. Nikki’s expression lightened considerably, but Mikazuki was dissatisfied with this turn of events and puffed her cheeks.

“Buu~! Why is it only Nikki~? Mikazuki wants to be flicked too!” (Mikazuki)

Although Mikazuki started to throw a tantrum, Hiiro completely disregarded her. Nikki stuck out her chest with pride, making a *\*fufun\** sound, while feeling superior over the childish Mikazuki.

“Ku..... Ku..... Kuuuu! Shamoe-chaaaaaan!” (Mikazuki)

The mortified Mikazuki dove towards Shamoe’s chest. Shamoe then kindly stroked Mikazuki’s head to console her.

“Speaking of which, when will the duel take place?” (Silva)

Asked Silva, who had recovered without anyone noticing.

“I still don’t know. Even if we finish all the preparations, shouldn’t we also worry about the other side? Well, we can be sure they’ll bring their best fighters.” (Hiiro)

“Hohou, then the <> will certainly be there. The Beast King and...There were two, right? The two princes, as well.” (Silva)

Silva’s investigation churned out nothing but top-class names.

“Iya.....” (Hiiro)

“Nofo? Are there others?” (Silva)

“.....It’s nothing” (Hiiro)

Hiiro recalled his conversation with Aquinas. As they talked about the opponent’s strength, he heard a nostalgic name.

(Don’t tell me that person’s thinking of participating. But then again, there’s a small chance they will.) (Hiiro)

As Hiiro gazed into the distance, everyone tilted their heads while looking at him.

In a place filled with alcohol bottles, something moved with a \*goso goso\* sound. From its movements, it seemed to be a person. While half asleep, that person rolled around and hit some bottles, toppling them over and making a \*karan!\* sound.

Soon after, someone’s footsteps could be heard approaching. Upon looking at the sleeping person, that individual let out a sigh while making an amazed expression.

“Oi-oi, there isn’t even room to stand here.” (???)

The individual skillfully stepped over the bottles littered around and approached the sleeping person. They then placed their hands on the other’s shoulder and tried to shake them awake.

“Shishou? Hey Shishou?” (???)

“Munya.....ushishi.....” (???)

You could tell from their smile that the sleeping person was having a good dream. Their unchanging child-like face had some drool at the edge of their mouth. Not only that,

they were also hugging a bottle of alcohol. There was such a gap between their appearance and their actions that it was scary.

“Haa, good grief. This person is really bothersome.....” (???)

As they thought to themselves, just how much does this person like alcohol?!, they began to shake the sleeping person gently. They had been told to wake them up at this time, so they couldn't possibly stop shaking them until the sleeping person woke up.

“This is bad, could you clean up a bit?” (???)

“Ah. Sure, I'll do it” (???)

It seemed that there had been two people who entered the room, and one of them asked the other to clean up the room.

“Shishou, please wake up soon. If you don't ..... I won't make any more snacks for you?” (???)

“I c-can't accept that!” (???)

The sleeping person suddenly erupted up with their fists in the air. They seemed to have finally woken up.

“I see you've finally woken up, Shishou.” (???)

“.....nh? Oh...so it's the lolicon.” (???)

“Who are you calling a Lolicon?!” (Lolicon)

The lolicon said with a voice so loud that it echoed through the room.

“Nahahahaha! I'm just joking!” (???)

The person laughed happily while shaking their green hair. As that person stretched, the long ears perched on top of their head unfurled demurely until they were fully straight. The girl was a 「Were Rabbit」 with the stature of a grade schooler, who could always be found wearing a dirty white lab coat.

“Geez, in the first place, if that bastard hadn't said such unnecessary things to Shishou, then I wouldn't have had such a title stuck onto me...” (Lolicon)

While dropping their shoulders in a crestfallen manner, that person recalled the one who gave him the Lolicon title and let out killing intent.

“Nahaha! Speaking of that kid, it's been over half a year since he's left, huh?” (Rabbit girl)

At that voice, the person who had, until then, been peacefully cleaning the room stopped and looked down with a lonely look in their eyes.

“Aa mou, that guy isn’t thinking about keeping his promise at all! Look, Muir shouldn’t worry about it either!” (Lolicon)

“U, un……” (???)

Muir Castrea. That was the girl’s name. And the name of the only guy in the room was that of Muir’s guardian, Arnold Ocean.

The two of them were formerly Hiiro Okamura’s travelling partners. And the cause of Arnold’s earlier burst of killing intent was Hiiro himself.

Over half a year ago, the three of them arrived at this place and met the little child wearing the white coat: Arnold’s shishou, Rarashik Fan’naru. It was then that Arnold asked Rarashik to train both Muir and himself.

However, after being told that it would take a considerable amount of time for Muir to become a full-fledged adult, Hiiro decided to leave the two, saying that he could no longer stay in the 【Beastman Capital: Passion】 .

At that time, he said that if he was free after half a year, he would come and meet them again. Since then, however, there had been no word from him. Muir, who had been looking forward to talking with Hiiro after a long time, grew depressed.

Muir had a favorable impression of Hiiro as a person of the opposite gender. During their journey, she had not been aware of it, but when he left, the feeling of wanting to meet him once more grew steadily.

Hiiro’s existence became much bigger within her than she had expected, to the point where she herself was surprised. So, with the prospect of meeting Hiiro after half a year, Muir completely devoted herself to training.

「Become stronger.」

In order to respond to Hiiro’s parting words.

Rarashik started grinning as her eyes turned towards Muir.

“Seriously, that brat really is a sinful guy. I’ve heard that Mimir-sama was charmed by him as well.” (Rarashik)

Mimir was the second princess of the Beast Kingdom. At a young age, an illness had taken away her voice following a high fever. For her, who loved to sing above all else, losing her voice was an ill fate comparable to the despair of death.

However, as she felt that she didn't want to make the people around her sad, she wore a fake smile. That smile, however, was not only ripped away by Hiiro, but what even the best doctors could not fix, Hiiro cured with his 《Word Magic》 in mere seconds.

From then on, Mimir thought of Hiiro as her saviour. She then proceeded to approach him while holding feelings of admiration so strong, they could compare to those of worship. Within those feelings, the faint stirrings of love had formed. One could say that she had fallen in love with him at first sight.

“Muir and Mimir-sama; I wonder who else has fallen for this guy in the past six months. Nahahahaha!” (Rarashik)

Just as Rarashik said these words in an amused manner——

\*crack!\*

Surprised, Arnold looked towards the direction of the sound and saw Muir who had bare-handedly broken the sake bottle she was holding. Moreover, there was not a single injury on her hand.

“Mui, Muir.....?” (Arnold)

“Eh? Ah, umm..... A- I'm sorry! I'll clean it up immediately!” (Muir)

Whether or not she was unaware of what she had done, Muir swepted the broken glass as though nothing had occurred. No, if you looked closer, you could see that there was a faint blush in her cheeks as she appeared to understand exactly why she had done that.

“Nahahaha! Teasing Muir sure is as fun as always!” (Rarashik)

# KONJIKI NO WORD MASTER

---

## Chapter 158

### It's Definitely About Him!

---

"Haah, please go easy on me, Shishou" (Arnold)

"My bad, my bad. In exchange, make me some snacks, 'kay?" (Rarashik)

".....yes, yes." (Arnold)

Arnold rubbed his temples as he helplessly agreed, because defying her was dangerous. At one point, there was an incident where he had promised to make her snacks, but had forgotten to do so. At the time, her eyes had lost all light as she proceeded to spend half a day masquerading her one-sided beating of him as if it were actual combat training.

Arnold also helped tidy up her room. After finally making it somewhat tidy, he asked Rarashik.

"By the way, you told me to wake you up at this time, but is there something you need to do?" (Arnold)

"No, not really. It's just that this tsukemono tastes best when eaten around this time" (Rarashik)

As she said that, she took out a small jar from the alcove slab.

"I was planning on having a drink with this!" (Rarashik)

".....um, Shishou?" (Arnold)

"What is it?" (Rarashik)

"Didn't your head hurt in the morning because of hangovers?" (Arnold)

"Hmph, don't speak so foolishly Arnold. Did you think that something like a hangover could stop me from drinking alcohol?" (Rarashik)

Although she said those words as though they were final with a dangerous glitter in her eyes, Arnold's face simply cramped in exasperation.

Deciding to himself that there was no point in arguing any more, Arnold feigned laughter. At that moment, he heard the sound of knocking coming from the house's door. The three of them tilted their heads simultaneously.

The reason for their surprise was that for the past half-year, nobody had ever to come visit them. Rarashik's interactions with her neighbours were simply that lacking.

Below this house was an enormous space that Rarashik had created, within which there were numerous rooms established. Arnold and Muir lived within one of those rooms, but this was the first time they had ever heard knocking like this.

"Mu.....somehow I have a bad feeling" (Rarashik)



Rarashik spoke while scowling. As she did so, Muir narrowed her cute large eyes, while the ears on her head stood up attentively.

“You shouldn’t say something like that Oshishou-sama. It is our first guest in a while after all” (Muir)

After saying that, Muir replied to the knocking with a, “Ha~i”. Her beautiful silver hair fluttered as she headed towards the door. Seeing that, Rarashik and Arnold quietly watched her.

“Excuse me, but Rarashik-dono should be here, correct?” (???)

On the other side of the door was a beastman with wings growing out of his back. Muir figured that he was a 『Birdman』 based on his appearance alone.

“Hm? This voice....” (Rarashik)

Rarashik murmured in a low voice as her eyes narrowed and gazed over at the person standing in the doorway to confirm their identity.

“Ah, yes. Um.....” (Muir)

Muir moved her body to the side so that Rarashik could see the visitor.

“Hou, this is quite the unusual guest. To think that the famous 《Thunder Lord》 Barid-san would step into a civilian’s house like this” (Rarashik)

Responding to Rarashik’s words dripping with sarcasm, Barid dropped his shoulders with humility.

“Please stop. Compared to you, someone like me is still the same as some youngster. Although I may have risen in status, that is simply because you trained me, is it not?” (Barid)

Muir approached Arnold and asked who their guest was.

“That person is a member of the 《Three Warriors》, Barid-sama, who holds the second title of 《Thunder Lord》” (Arnold)

“Th-th-th-th- 《Three Warriors》!? Th-then isn’t he an important person!” (Muir)

“Young lady, why are you surprised? Isn’t the one over there clearly a great person?” (Barid)

Muir was not surprised at Barid’s words. This was because she was aware of how great a contribution Rarashik had made to the beastmen. After all, the invention of 《Binding》 was praised as one of the beastmen’s greatest, most historic achievements.

“That is exactly why we prepared a dwelling much more suited to someone of your stature, as opposed to this kind of tiny place. Even now, I still don’t understand why you didn’t accept any kind of honour or status, you know?” (Barid)

“Hmph, why do I have to justify anything to you? I like this place. Glamorous jewels or lavish honour and statuses won’t fill up your stomach at all” (Rarashik)

“Ah, but if it’s alcohol, then you’ll accept it right?” (Arnold)

“Of course” (Rarashik)

Readily nodding at Arnold’s comment, Rarashik ate the tsukemono and proceeded to chug down alcohol. Thinking that she somehow resembled Hihiro after all, Arnold gave a wry smile. Especially in how she was faithful to her own desires.

“Rather, you came to talk about stuff like that Barid? Actually, aren’t you in the middle of a war right now? What happened, did you lose?” (Rarashik)

Seeing her talk indifferently as though it were someone else’s affairs, Barid let out a sigh.

“.....actually, it’s about that war. Right now, the King has returned to the castle” (Barid)

“.....hah? Oi oi, did you really lose the war?” (Rarashik)

Unless that was the case, there wouldn’t likely be any other reason why the King would return during wartime. Naturally, if they had won, they would have returned in a much grander manner while notifying the entire town of their success.

“No, we haven’t lost.....yet.” (Barid)

“Yet? .....you mean that even though we formed an alliance with the 『Humas』, the situation is still bad?” (Rarashik)

“It’d be fine if the situation was just bad. After calmly analyzing the situation, at this rate we’ll definitely be defeated. No, we’ve actually already been forced to retreat once.” (Barid)

Rarashik’s eyes widened with surprise at Barid’s words.

“Even with the alliance.....we still had to retreat? After going all the way to invade the Demon Continent?” (Rarashik)

Barid then spoke as he gave a bitter smile.

“Yes. An unbelievable irregular appeared, and everyone was toyed with by that one person” (Barid)

“That person? Oi oi, don’t tell me that you were all cornered to the point of retreat by a single person?” (Rarashik)

“.....precisely.” (Barid)

The room fell silent as though time had stopped. Arnold too was astonished after hearing that story. The war in which they should have had an advantage was overturned due to a single person. After finding such a thing out, anyone would doubt its authenticity.

However, upon seeing Barid's expression, it was hard to think that he was exaggerating or joking around. Everyone in the room understood that he was sincerely speaking the truth.

"Fu~n, and? Did you come to tell me to lend a hand 'cause things got bad?" (Rarashik)

"....." (Barid)

".....haa, you know, Barid. Aren't you aware that I hate being used like this in wars?"

(Rarashik)

"I am aware of that" (Barid)

"Then you know that my answer won't change no matter how much you beg, right?"

(Rarashik)

"Yes. However, I would like for you to at least speak with the King once" (Barid)

"It's a pain, so I don't wanna" (Rarashik)

As expected, after seeing Rarashik deny the King's request for such a frivolous reason, Arnold chilled with fear.

"This time, the war has moved in an unforeseen direction. All because of that irregular."

(Barid)

"Nahaha, for them to make you guys that confused, they must be quite the individual."

(Rarashik)

Seeing her smile as though she were having fun, Barid became slightly sullen.

"Is there something amusing about this?" (Barid)

"It simply means that there's always someone better. After obtaining 《Binding》 you all seemed to be happy, but after this time, you guys understood, right? Even if you have power, opponents against which that power doesn't work exist" (Rarashik)

"That's....." (Barid)

"Just why do you think I developed 《Binding》 ? It wasn't so that you guys could wage war." (Rarashik)

".....I understand that, but-" (Barid)

"You don't understand. Do you remember what you guys first said while celebrating when you finally obtained power?" (Rarashik)

"....." (Barid)

"You guys said, 'Now we can finally defeat the 『Evila』 and 『Humas』 '" (Rarashik)

Probably because it was the truth, Barid didn't object.

“That’s why I quit being a military instructor and distanced myself from you guys. Simply put, I became disgusted with your remarks and compliments” (Rarashik)  
“I-I understand that.....but please, at least this one time, please speak with the King!”  
(Barid)

As he said that, Barid politely lowered his head. Seeing one of the top members of their country, Barid, the leader of the 《Three Warriors》 lower his head so easily made both Arnold and Muir want to disappear as they fidgeted restlessly.

“.....go back Barid” (Rarashik)

Nevertheless, Rarashik struck him with chilling words.

“Rarashik-sama!” (Barid)

“It’s the war that you guys started. Whether you win or lose, wipe your own asses”  
(Rarashik)

“Kuh.....” (Barid)

Deciding that it would be useless to say anything more, Barid turned his back to the three of them while grinding his teeth. Rarashik said one last thing as she saw that he was about to leave.

“Now that I think of it, at least tell me about it. What kind of guy was that irregular?”  
(Rarashik)

“.....I do not know. All I could conclude was that they were simply an abnormal existence. They were a 『Humas』 that used a strange magic” (Barid)

“Hou, a 『Humas』 being the ally of the 『Evila』 ? That’s quite the strange situation. But more importantly, what do you mean by a strange magic?” (Rarashik)

“They used transformation, healing, explosive, and other magics whose origins we couldn’t figure out” (Barid)

At Barid’s words, Arnold and Muir twitched.

“They were able to withstand the King’s attack unharmed using a wall of light, destroy a bridge in a single breath, and even fly in the air.” (Barid)

“O-oi oi, was that really a human?” (Rarashik)

Hearing such a joke-like story, Rarashik’s face cramped. However, Arnold was-  
(I-it couldn’t be.....) (Arnold)

At the answer that had emerged within him, his body involuntarily became hotter.

“Based on appearance, they were human. Based on what the King said, they had black hair and eyes, and wore glasses as well as a red robe” (Barid)

(Hiiro!?) (Arnold)

Arnold screamed within his heart. Meanwhile, next to him Muir may have also reached the same answer as him, as her expression was warped with surprise.

Both of them then glanced at each other in assessment.

“Ah, he also said that he was a boy with an incredibly arrogant attitude” (Barid)

(It’s decideddddd!) (Arnold)

The two of them were certain within their hearts. That the irregular existence that he had spoken of was the Hiiro Okamura that they knew.

“Arrogant? Red robe? Hm? Wait.....a moment?” (Rarashik)

Rarashik also became taken aback as she looked at the faces of the two. And as the three of their eyes met, they nodded in assent: their answers matched.

“That’s all the information I have. Now then, I will be.....” (Barid)

Then, just as he opened the door dejectedly-

“Wait Barid” (Rarashik)

He was called out by Rarashik, and froze.

“Wh-what is it?” (Barid)

Unable to comprehend why he had suddenly been stopped, Barid looked blankly as he asked. As he did so, the corners of her mouth rose as she grinned-

“I’ve changed my mind a bit. Let me meet the King, Barid” (Rarashik)

## Chapter 159

### The Red Robe's Identity ~Arnold's Rampage~

---

Frankly speaking, Muir was surprised. She didn't think that she'd be hearing rumors of that person in such a place after all.

That person.....over half a year passed since she had separated with Hihiro Okamura. Half a year ago, Hihiro had said that he'd come back if he was free.

That's why Muir believed in Hihiro's words and trained desperately so that when the time came, she'd be able to fight alongside him. In order not to become a burden, she had trained hard together with her foster father, Arnold.

While thinking that it would soon be 6 months since their separation, she excitedly waited for Hihiro's return. However, even after the promised 6 months had long passed, he had not contacted them at all.

As for their training, it had ended off at a good place where all that remained mainly centered around self-practice. Thinking that they'd be better off finding Hihiro themselves if he didn't come back on his own, Muir discussed the idea with Arnold.

However, Arnold told her that even if they knew Hihiro's destination, it would be too dangerous to go meet him themselves. That was to be expected. If his destination was as he had told them before, it was likely the Demon Continent.

It was not a place that beastmen like Muir and co. could easily go to. If they were like Hihiro and could use transformation magic, then it'd most likely be fine, but unfortunately, they did not possess such convenient magic.

Arnold had also said that they should just leave such a heartless guy alone. However, Muir knew that he did, truthfully, want to see Hihiro as well.

The reason she knew that was because when she had mentioned going to meet him on her own, Arnold had made a happy-looking face. But in reality, they had no means to do so. That was why they had no choice but to continue staying with their master, Rarashik, and train themselves to reach even greater heights.

At that time, an unexpected visitor appeared. Muir couldn't have possibly predicted that the visitor would have been one of the great 《Three Warriors》 of the

《Beastman Captial: Passion》, Barid. Not only that, but they heard a surprising story from Barid.

Right now, they were at war. That was something that anyone within the country would know. Along with the fact that they had made an alliance with the 『Humas』 for it. However, in that war, the beastmen were forced to retreat by the 『Evila』 .

Furthermore, the cause of that retreat was a single person. A 『Humas』 who was being thought of as a hero by those on the side of the 『Evila』 . Not only that, but that person's features seemed to highly resemble that of a certain person that Muir knew really well.

No, likely, Hiiro was the only one she could possibly think of, who could do such unprecedented feats. Arnold also seemed to have arrived at the same conclusion, as he was displaying a shocked expression. His obviously warped face was then confirmed by Muir.

Then, at last, Rarashik also arrived at the same answer. While she had initially adamantly refused Barid's recruitment for the war, she suddenly changed her mind and accepted his invitation to at least go back and listen to the King's story.

And so, currently, all three of them had followed Barid to 【Passion】's castle, and had arrived at the 《King's Tree》's 《Throne Room》 .

"It was good of you to come, Rara." (Leowald)

The one who was sitting on the throne while speaking was the King of this country, Leowald King. This was not the first time Muir had met with him in person.

Following a series of unexpected events, she had become friends with the Second Princess Mimir. Occasionally, she had been invited by Mimir to play at the castle.

During those times, she and Arnold had met Leowald on numerous occasions. However, even if this wasn't their first meeting, seeing him here on such a formal visit did, as expected, make her nervous.

It seemed that Arnold, who was kneeling next to her, also held similar thoughts, as his nervousness appeared on his face.

However, Rarashik alone kept her usual attitude as she stood right in front of the King.

"It's been a while, Leo-sama." (Rarashik)

"It's good that Rara also seems to be energetic as usual. Also, sorry for suddenly summoning you." (Leowald)

Muir was aware that the two of them had a fairly intimate relationship. When Rarashik was still working as a martial arts instructor, she had taught Leowald.

“No, I actually didn’t have any intention of coming. It’s just that I heard an interesting story.” (Rarashik)

“.....about the Red Robe?” (Leowald)

Leowald’s eyes glinted.

“Yeah, that’s right. After all, it seems like Leo-sama was shown up by that guy.” (Rarashik)

“Gahaha! That’s right! What a pleasant youngster he was!” (Leowald)

“Looks like you’re having fun, Leo-sama.” (Rarashik)

“Yeah, my blood’s boiling for the first time in a while. I had a small battle with him. Undoubtedly, he has the qualities needed to become my rival.” (Leowald)

Upon seeing Leowald’s happy smile, Rarashik shrugged her shoulders.

“I see, seems like that guy’s become liked by a troublesome person.” (Rarashik)

As she said that, Leowald’s eyebrow twitched. Barid, in addition to the other soldiers in the room, froze suddenly, having been caught off guard by Rarashik’s statement.

“.....Rara, do you know? Who exactly that Red Robe is?” (Leowald)

“Yeah, but just in case, I’ll at least ask what his name is. Since it is possible that it’s just a misunderstanding on our part.” (Rarashik)

Although she said that, it could be seen from her expression that Rarashik was confident in her answer. Muir was also confident, but listened carefully in order to reaffirm her answer.

“I don’t know if it was his real name, but he was called Hihiro by the Maou.” (Leowald)

As he said that, the corners of Rarashik’s mouth rose into a large grin. Seeing her expression, Leowald also understood.

“It seems that he’s an acquaintance.” (Leowald)

“Yeah, although if it’s about that youngster, then these two here would be more informed. They were his former travel companions after all.” (Rarashik)

“What!?” (Leowald)

The eyes of everyone in the room widened.

“Is that true, Arnold and Muir?” (Leowald)

As they had introduced themselves when they had met previously, Leowald knew their names.

“ “Yes!” ”



The two of them raised their voices in affirmation at the same time.

"I see! That is quite the coincidence! Do tell some stories about that youngster!"  
(Leowald)

Arnold answered Leowald's request. He spoke about where they had met and what kind of adventures they had gone on together. However, he had, for the time being, attempted to speak in a way that would conceal the details of Hiiro's magic.

Well, as Hiiro seemed to be acting as if he had no intention of hiding it, it might have been okay to talk about his magic. However, as long as he didn't have permission from the person himself, Arnold felt awkward about explaining the details of Hiiro's magic to others.

Even so, it wasn't like Arnold knew all that much about Hiiro's magic anyways. So all he said was that it was an excessively omnipotent magic.

Leowald enjoyably listened to Arnold's stories.

"Hohou, so you came to this country with this Hiiro person. How unfortunate. If we had been able to recruit him at that time, then around now, we would have returned with our heads held high." (Leowald)

It seemed that his assessment of Hiiro was simply that high.

"However, Arnold, having heard your story and seen Hiiro's actions myself, he's likely a user of a Unique Magic. Not only that, but he's human. I'm surprised that he would come to trust beastmen such as yourselves." (Leowald)

His words were only natural. The discord between the 『Gabranth』 and 『Humas』 was considerably higher than that of the discord between the 『Gabranth』 and the 『Evila』. The reason being that in the past, they had been treated as livestock and slaves by the humans.

"That's true. Certainly, there are many things that he says and does that I can't understand at all. However, for better or worse, that guy is straightforward." (Arnold)

"Hou, straightforward, you say?" (Leowald)

"Yes. He's a guy that continues forwards according to what he feels. It's like he doesn't believe in the values of others and their rumors. He's a human who reaches an answer based solely upon what he has directly seen with his own eyes, heard with his own ears, and felt with his own skin." (Arnold)

"Fumu." (Leowald)

"When he found out that I, no, when we were beastmen, do you know what he said?"  
(Arnold)

"That sounds interesting, what did he say?" (Leowald)

“That.....he has nothing to do with it.” (Arnold)

“.....” (Leowald)

“『Race has nothing to do with it. In the first place, even if your race is different, it doesn't change the fact that we're all alive, right? To be honest, I have no interest in it. What's so fun about fighting over it?』 .....it really pulled all the fighting spirit out of me.” (Arnold)

At Arnold's words, Muir smiled while Leowald's face once again broke into a smile.

“Hohou, that's excellent.” (Leowald)

“Heh?” (Arnold)

“Excellent.....that's excellent, Hihiro. This truly makes me want to obtain him by all means.” (Leowald) (TL: Hyu hyu~ another one for Hihiro's harem~)

As Muir became dumbfounded, Rarashik murmured, “Ah, shoot~” as she realized what Leowald was thinking.

“It seems that the youngster has been completely targeted. By that battle junkie.”  
(Rarashik)

“O-Ojisan.....?” (Muir)

When Muir looked towards Arnold anxiously, she noticed that before she knew it, he had brought his hands together in prayer, and said,

“You have my condolences, Hihiro.” (Arnold)

“Wait, Ojisan!” (Muir)

“It's fine, Muir. It'll be a good medicine for that idiot. This is revenge for leaving us without saying anything and breaking his promise with us.” (Arnold)

Upon seeing the obviously evil expression Arnold was making, Muir dropped her shoulders as if she were amazed. While she understood his feelings, she also felt that he had gone a bit too far.

“Hihiro.....?” (???)

As she did so, she heard someone's voice.

“Ooh, what is it, my daughter, Mimir? Your friends have come, you know?” (Leowald)

“Father, um, just now.....I thought I heard Hihiro-sama's name.....” (Mimir)

“Mu? Hihiro? Why do you know Hihiro's name?” (Leowald)

“Ah, eh.....that is.....” (Mimir)

Upon seeing that, Arnold's eyes glinted. Muir's face cramped up, as she thought to herself-

(O-Ojisan, don't tell me.....) (Muir)

Although she thought that and was about to stop him, she was too late.

“Leowald-sama, actually, there is one more thing that I feel you must hear.” (Arnold)

Upon seeing Arnold suddenly making a good face while acting respectfully, Rarashik’s eyes flickered as she froze.

“Wh-what is it?” (Leowald)

“Do you still remember? The incident from half a year ago when Mimir-sama’s voice suddenly returned?” (Arnold)

Realizing that he was planning on blabbing everything like she thought, Muir’s mouth flapped open and closed with shock.

## Chapter 160 Coming to Like Hiiro

---

“There’s no way I could possibly forget. Say, Mimir, since then, have you met with the 『Spirit』 at all?” (Leowald)

“Eh.....I-I haven’t but.....” (Mimir)

Mimir stole a couple glances at Arnold, giving off a feeling of restlessness. As Hiiro had asked her to be quiet about it, she had told them that she had been healed by a 『Spirit』 at that time.

“About that 『Spirit』 , please try to properly recall it. What did it look like? And what did it say to Mimir-sama?!” (Arnold)

“Fu-fumu.” (Leowald)

Although he was confused because of Arnold, who appeared a little excited, Leowald recounted the details of the 『Spirit』 ’s appearance that he had heard from Mimir before.

“If I remember correctly.....he wore glasses, and had a red robe.....hm?” (Leowald)

“Do you see now?” (Arnold)

“.....w-wait a moment.” (Leowald)

Leowald looked at the grinning Arnold, confirming that the conclusion he had just thought of was true. Then, he turned his gaze towards Mimir.

“Mimir, please answer honestly.” (Leowald)

“Umm.....” (Mimir)

After seeing Mimir’s flustered-looking face, Muir became nervous, as she didn’t know what to do.

“The one who healed you was not a 『Spirit』 .....was it?” (Leowald)

“.....” (Mimir)

She kept quiet as she continued to stare at Leowald. It seemed that she kept her mouth closed in order to protect her promise with Hiiro. Arnold opened his mouth in an attempt to help her out.

“Mimir-sama was ordered by Hiiro to keep quiet. That was her promise with Hiiro and it is also a bond that Mimir-sama has been treasuring greatly. That is why she cannot possibly break that promise herself. Therefore, Leowald-sama, I will tell you the truth myself.” (Arnold)

“.....hou.” (Leowald)

“As you may have guessed, the one who restored Mimir-sama’s voice was Hiiro. Rather, I feel that the only one capable of doing that is Hiiro.” (Arnold)

“O-Ojisan! Is it really alright to say that?!” (Muir)

Unable to endure it anymore, Muir involuntarily yelled. However, Arnold shook his head.

“It’s fine already. He clearly isn’t trying to hide his magic anymore. It’s also sad for Mimir-sama if she has to keep the truth from her family forever, after all.” (Arnold)

“Ah.....” (Muir)

After realizing that Arnold was not simply rampaging, but also thinking about Mimir’s circumstances, Muir’s chest became warm.

“Well, honestly speaking, I figured that with this, that guy will get mixed up in some sort of trouble.” (Arnold)

The warm feeling in Muir’s chest chilled at light-speed.

“O-Ojisan.....” (Muir)

Seeing her half-closed eyes glaring at him, Arnold began to spout out excuses.

“N-No, in the first place, it’s entirely his fault! He’s always, always, way too self-centred! His reason for participating in this war is probably because of that, you know? I’m pretty sure that it’s because 【Xaos】 has some delicious food or rare books, right?” (Arnold)

“Uu.....” (Muir)

She couldn’t deny it. Rather, Muir herself also thought that was the case. He was not the sort of heroic person who would move based on a sense of justice. He truly was a person who was faithful to his own desires after all.

However, if it was for the sake of some food or book he was fascinated with; Hiiro would calmly go to dangerous locations or perform some dangerous actions. He would easily bet his own life in these situations for trivial reasons that other people would be completely unable to understand.

Leowald seemed to find the exchange between Arnold and Muir rather interesting, as he heartily laughed with a “Gahaha!”

“That youngster Hiiro must be quite the eccentric individual! You know him too, right Rara?” (Leowald)

“Yeah, he’s an extremely interesting guy.” (Rarashik)

“Hohou, for you to say that much.....umu. Mimir, come here.” (Leowald)

Mimir gave a small twitch. Most likely, rather than choosing to remain silent up until now, she was afraid that she'd be scolded for lying.

Leowald picked her up with his large arms and sat her down on his lap as he pat her head.

"I'm sorry." (Leowald)

"Eh? O-Otou-sama?" (Mimir)

She was surprised as she suddenly received her father's apology.

"I forcibly asked without taking your feelings into account. That's right, to you, he's your benefactor. No, he's your great benefactor. You couldn't possibly break a promise you made to someone like that." (Leowald)

"Otou-sama....." (Mimir)

"However, there's no need to worry anymore. Arnold said this as well, but it seems that your great benefactor is not trying to hide his power anymore. It must have been tough being unable to tell your family the truth up until now." (Leowald)

"Uu.....I-I'm.....very.....sorry....." (Mimir)

Mimir buried her head into Leowald's chest and lightly cried. Leowald gently stroked her head; everyone stayed silent until she finished crying.

(Isn't that great, Mimir-chan?) (Muir)

Muir also watched over the two of them warmly. For a short while, she had been worried, but it seemed that Arnold's actions had led to a good turn of events. However, it was also possible that they would have led to a series of bad events.

(That's why, no meals for Ojisan today!) (Muir)

When she glared at Arnold while thinking that, he let out a small scream and went "Hii!", as he brought his hands together in apology towards Muir. It seemed that he was aware that he had gone a little too out of control.

"Umu, but still, this is quite the problem." (Leowald)

At Leowald's sudden murmur, Rarashik asked,

"What's wrong?" (Rarashik)

"It's just, you know, we said it before too, but right now that youngster is on the 『Evila』's side." (Leowald)

Everyone gasped in realization. Indeed, Hihiro was currently standing as an enemy of the beastmen.

“To think that he would be Arnold’s friend and Mimir’s great benefactor.....muu.”  
(Leowald)

As nobody knew what would be the best thing to say in this situation, they all remained silent.

(That’s right.....right now we’re at war with the Demon Continent that Hihiro-san is in.....) (Muir)

Just as Muir started to become uneasy, her eyes suddenly met with Mimir’s. Mimir too seemed to have had an epiphany as her face became dyed with anxiety.

As they did so, Leowald suddenly clapped his hands together.

“Ooh, if that’s the case, then isn’t it simple?!” (Leowald)

Everyone gave a blank look as they turned their eyes towards him.

“Let’s have that youngster participate in the upcoming duel! No, someone possessing that degree of power will definitely be made to participate. And once we win, we’ll take him!” (Leowald)

“.....duel? What do you mean by duel?” (Rarashik)

“Ohh, now that I think of it, Rara, I still haven’t told you about that yet. For now, why don’t you read this letter?” (Leowald)

After saying that, Leowald took out the letter sent to him by the Maou Eveam from his bosom. Rather than proposing a large-scale battle, its contents suggested that they decide the outcome of the war by having each countries’ strongest members fight each other in a duel.

Taking the paper, Rarashik scanned over its contents. Then-

“.....haha, nahahahahaha! What a foolish Maou! Nahahahaha!” (Rarashik)

“Right? But it’s quite interesting and really is a likeable way of thinking.” (Leowald)

“So it seems. Kukuku.” (Rarashik)

Unable to understand the reason for their laughter, Arnold asked about it and Rarashik explained the contents of the letter.

Both Muir and Arnold were surprised at the contents as feelings of shock ran through them.

(Somehow, it might be my imagination, but this duel.....I wonder why it feels like it’s one of Hihiro-san’s ideas.....?) (Muir) (TL note: Best waifu right here. ED: She knows her man like the back of her little hand.)

In truth, Eveam really had used Hihiro’s idea. As expected of Muir’s intuition.

“So how about it, Rara?” (Leowald)

“No, I understand without you telling me. You want me to participate in this duel, right?”  
(Rarashik)

“Exactly. If it’s this kind of interesting battle, I figured that you’d also want to try participating.” (Leowald)

“That’s true.....I’m interested. I want to see the Maou who’d propose this kind of foolish idea with my own eyes, but above all.....” (Rarashik)

She turned her gaze towards Muir and Arnold.

“I want to try meeting with that brat one more time.” (Rarashik)

“In that case-“ (Leowald)

“Yeah, I’ll participate, but only if you accept my conditions.” (Rarashik)

“.....conditions? Name them.” (Leowald)

“It’s alright, it’s pretty simple. These two.....” (Rarashik)

Naturally, she was talking about Muir and Arnold.

“If you let Arnold and Muir participate as well, then I’ll take up your offer.” (Rarashik)

For a short while, silence reigned over the surroundings. And then-

“ “EHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHH!” ” (Arnold and Muir)

The two of them released a tremendous scream.



# KONJIKI NO WORD MASTER

---

## Chapter 161

### Arnold and Muir, Duel Participation Confirmed

---

Arnold: 「Shit! Mind telling me how it came to this again?」

Currently, Arnold was desperately dodging the sword slash that Beast Kind Leowald had unleashed. Although he has been barely evading it since earlier, if Leowald were to land a decent blow on him, it would undoubtedly become fatal.

Leowald: 「Hora hora<sup>(1)</sup>, what's wrong Arnold?! If that's all you got then I can't bring you along, you know?!」

Without moving an inch from his spot, Leowald swung down a giant sword, worthy of his stature, as he aimed for the Arnold, the one who was right before his eyes.

\*Shubaa-!\*(2)

Accompanied by a noise that sounded like the air had been cut and torn apart, the pressure generated by the sword came flying towards Arnold, as if it was a blade of wind.

Arnold: 「Uooo-!」

Rarashik: 「If all you do is evade, you won't be able to defeat the enemy!」

Arnold: 「E-Even if you tell me tha~a~a~t-!」

While Arnold was fending off Leowald's attacks with full force, he began to resent Rarashik's remarks internally.

At that time, Rarashik mentioned that she would participate in the duel with the 『Evila』

under the condition that she could bring Arnold and Muir. It went without saying that it wasn't merely the two who were mentioned that were surprised. Leowald, Mimiru, and even the all the soldiers present had expressed astonishment.

However, in the midst of this, Rarashik simply spoke the following with a grin.

Rarashik: 『How do I say this, I'm fairly certain that you know that these guys are my disciples. This will probably be a good experience for them.』

Of course, Arnold refused. He mainly expressed his distaste due to Muir's participation. He didn't really mind if he himself had been elected. As he had fought his way up to this point, he was confident that he had grown stronger thanks to the training that he had received.

Although he would be participating, as the opponent's side would obviously have the 《Cruel》, his chances of winning would be considerably low. Yet, even so, if it was for the sake of his country, he would not hesitate to fight.

However, Muir was different. She had yet to fight a full-fledged battle besides her encounters with monsters and Rarashik. Furthermore, she had yet to experience a fight where one would have to risk their life.

It was precisely because of this that this duel was important for her, or so Rarashik had said. However, from Arnold's perspective, it was still too early for her to participate in such battles.

It was needless to say that Arnold was aware that Muir was working hard in order to become stronger. In fact, Arnold thought that Muir had indeed become stronger. Yet, in spite of this, he was still not convinced that he should allow her to participate in such a war.

Muir: 『But, if I go there, then I'll be able to meet Hiiro-san<sup>(3)</sup>, right?』

In the face of Muir's words, Rarashik nodded. And then-

Rarashik: 『Don't you want to show him how strong you've become?』

At those words, Muir's resolve had been determined. Seeing her firm expression, Arnold's shoulders drooped. He did not expect that things would turn out in such a manner.

However, it was not Leowald, but the one who was near him, Barid, who gave a voice of complaint. The contents of such complaint was regarding doubts about Arnold and Muir's strength.

Even if they were Rarashik's disciples, the opponent had requested this confrontation while practically demanding that the Gabranth prepare their best forces. If they were to present half-baked individuals in this duel, the one who would be shamed would be the king himself.

It is precisely because of this that Barid doubted the two's ability. Rarashik and Leowald had also thought that this was natural.

Therefore, Leowald issued a certain condition. He said that he would consider it if they could cause a scratch on his body, even if the wound was a mere scrape.

Following this, as everyone headed towards the square where the soldiers were training, it was suddenly decided that they would hold a sparring match there. Furthermore, the setup was that it would be both Arnold and Muir against Leowald.

Arnold: 「Muir! I'll try to somehow block the next blow so you go on the offensive!」

Muir: 「U-Un!」 [\(4\)](#)

Although both Muir and Leowald's offensive power was tremendous, even after they had been fighting for a long time, the fact that he had not moved from his starting position since the beginning of the match was a tribute to the king's strength. Muir, filled with awe towards such a king, spoke in a voice that attempted to dispel such feelings.

Muir: 「Please take care as well, Oji-san!」 [\(5\)](#)

Arnold: 「Aa!」 (6)

Watching these two, Leowald happily laughed.

Leowald: 「Hohou(7), you're going to try something? Then I guess I should bring my strength up a level, huh?」

Saying this, the large sword that he was holding began to release a fine vibration as it gradually reddened, as if it were being tinged with heat.

Leowald: 「Now, how will you respond to this, you two!? 《Flame Fang》 -!」

As he swung down the large sword that he had raised high in the sky, this time, as if it was wearing flames, a bright red sword blast came flying towards the two.

Arnold: 「Ku-! It's coming-!」

Arnold also began to concentrate power into his large sword. As he did so, the wind began to converge onto the sword.

\*Buuuuuuun.....\*(8)

A sound that shook the atmosphere could be heard coming from Arnold's sword. Following this, he simply turned towards the sword blast and began to assault it.

Arnold: 「Nuooooooooooooooooo-!」

Arnold received Leowald's flying sword blast head on.

\*Gigigigigigigigigigi-!\* [\(9\)](#)

Almost as if two knives had been rubbed together, the noise of impact roared.

Arnold: 「Nugu.....ku-! Uwoo-!」

In order to protect Muir who was behind him, Arnold, who was slightly losing his ground, stood firm so as to ensure that he wasn't blown away.

Leowald: 「Hou, not bad.」

Witnessing Arnold block a blow that he had place a reasonable amount of force into, Leowald narrowed his eyes due to Arnold's unexpected power.

Arnold: 「Doon't.....come.....closeeeeeeeeeer-!」

As Arnold had swung his sword with all his might, he was able to successfully tear through and pulverise the sword blast.

Arnold: 「Now, Mui~~~r-!」

Behind Arnold, Muir was present, her lovely set of Kemono-mimi twitching with a \*pikopiko\*[\(10\)](#). Every time that those ears moved, the crackling resembling a discharge phenomenon occurred.

Muir: 「Go! 《Fangs of Lightning》 -!」

Muir vigorously shook her hands one by one, from bottom to top. As she did so, like how Leowald had launched his sword blasts earlier, a pillar of lightning had been emitted from her hand.

As she had two hands, two columns of thunder had been created. As if to avoid Arnold, the pillars split off to the left and right before rushing towards Leowald, who was in front of him.

Leowald: 「Mu-!？」

As Leowald had instantly understood that Muir was a user of 《Binding》 that possessed the element of lightning, although his thoughts had halted for a split second, his expression soon reverted to normal as he wielded his large sword in an attempt to mow down the incoming thunder pillars.

\*Suka-!\*([11](#))

Although it was thought that he had completely captured the columns of lightning, strangely, as if they had a will of their own, the pillars completely evaded the sword's attack. Following this, a pincer attack came from both sides and-

\*Bachi bachi bachi bachi bachi bachi bachi bachi bachi-!\*([12](#))

-splendidly landed a direct hit on Leowald.

Leowald: 「Mumu-!」

He involuntarily scowled. Muir, who had saw this, smiled with pleasure as she thought that her attack had hit it's mark. However-

Leowald: 「Nuo-!」

\*Bachin-!\*(13)

As Leowald placed all his strength into his entire body, his muscles began to inflate. At the same time, the lightning that had wrapped around his body was blown away.

Leowald: 「Gahaha! I was slightly surprised, but you won't be able to make a scratch on me with just this?」

Certainly, Leowald had not suffered a single wound due to Muir's attack. However, Muir-

Muir: 「No, just this much is fine!」

Leowald: 「What?」

It was then that Leowald had noticed Arnold's imperceptible disappearance.

Leowald: 「Mu? Where did he go?」

As he spoke, he felt a presence in the sky above him. There, the figure of Arnold was present, his large sword being cloaked in wind like what had happened earlier that fight.

Arnold: 「How's this-!? 《Wind Faaaaaang》 -!」

Leowald: 「That lightning was just a distraction! However, I won't let you!」

Leowald also readied his sword by reflex. As the two swords collided, sparks began to fly. Furthermore, due to the two's powers colliding, a small explosion occurred.

Arnold: 「Guwaaaaaa-!？」

Having been blown away by the shock wave, Arnold rolled up to where Muir was standing.

Muir: 「Oji-san!」

Muir rushed over in a split second.

Arnold: 「Itete.....」 [\(14\)](#)

While painfully rubbing his butt that had received a nasty blow, Arnold waited for the smoke before his eyes to dissipate. Following this, a large shadow appeared.

Leowald: 「Fumu[\(15\)](#).....Gahahahaha!」

Leowald was laughing with his large sword slung over his shoulder.

Leowald: 「I guess I slightly underestimated you! You two aren't bad at all!」

It was then that Arnold and Muir both understood why he was laughing.

Leowald: 「Gahaha! To think, not only did you scratch me, but you launched me all the way over here!」

Indeed. From where he was earlier, it was clear that his position had been displaced further backwards. Furthermore, when Arnold and Leowald's swords collided, as his



attack had become a fine blade of wind, he was able to make a scratch on his body.

Of course, if you were looking at it in terms of damage, it would almost be nil. However, it was true that the fine sword had engraved a number of wounds on Leowald's body.

Leowald: 「Furthermore, you only used the elementary 《Fangs》. This is.....they've been honed quite well, Rara.」

While saying this with an elated grin, Leowald shifted his gaze towards Rarashik.

Rarashik: 「Eeh<sup>(16)</sup>, that's because I showed these guys hell everyday. If they weren't able to do this, I would have made them start their training from the beginning.」

At these words, the two's faces grew pale as they felt a chill creeping up their spines. It appeared that their bodies had remembered the contents of their training as they began to tremble.

Leowald: 「Gahaha! Certainly, there are still doubts as to their individual abilities but...I see. We should make sure to properly bring those that shine! That is the the 『Gabranth』 way! Gahahahaha!」

At this, Leowald turned his face towards Barid.

Leowald: 「How's that, Barid? I felt that these individuals had a good amount of resolve, but?」

Barid: 「.....very well. With this, it would not pose a problem if we were to bring them to the duel.」

Leowald: 「-is what he said. However, there is still one week before the duel. Until then, I myself shall train you.」

Rarashik: 「Hou~. So it's been decided, yes?」

Towards Rarashik's question, Leowald nodded vigorously.

Leowald: 「Aa, let's achieve victory together! Arnold! Muir!」

Seeing him once again fearlessly laugh, Arnold and Muir's cheeks twitched.

Arnold: 「T-This turned into something unbelievable, huh.....」

Muir: 「U-un.....but with this, I'll be able to meet him.....right?」

Arnold: 「.....seems so.」

Muir: 「.....although I don't like the enemy's side.」

Arnold: 「That guy doesn't care about stuff like that, right?」

Muir: 「Ahaha, you might be right.」

Arnold: 「Besides, Leowald-sama also said something about bringing Hihiro over to this side, you know?」

Muir: 「F-For some reason, Hihiro-san has become liked by a really amazing person, huh?」

Arnold: 「Seems so. It was kinda unexpected that he was thinking of making Mimiru-sama's son-in-law.....Hii-!」

As Arnold suddenly saw a Hannya<sup>(17)</sup> behind Muir, he raised a scream. Although the person herself was smiling, for some reason, it was a smile that reeked of lies.

Muir: 「Ahaha.....I'm really looking forward to seeing him. Isn't that right, Oji-san?」

Arnold: 「Ah.....un. That's right.」

As Arnold felt a bleak sensation emanating from Muir's voice, he cowered. Although he had an idea about why her attitude had changed, if he was to pursue it, there was no doubt that sparks would fly. Therefore, he had restrained himself from doing so.

Arnold: (Daamn it! Hihiro, you bastard! You better remember this! But, it's true that I'm looking forward to meeting again. Just you wait, Hihiro! I've already decided that I'm going to give your face one good punch!)

He looked up at the cloudless sky. Arnold's thoughts held a strong resolve towards Hihiro, the one who was once his adventuring companion.

## Chapter 162 Triumphant Hiiro

---

The duel between 「Evila」 and 「Gabranth」 was set to take place at the beast continent. Normally, it should have been difficult for either party to travel to the other's continent, but the 『Evila』 readily consented to it.

They were able to go there immediately because they had a method to do so. This method was provided by Hiiro, who had the ability to teleport people. Because the Beast King Leowald knew about this, he was not surprised by their method of transportation.

Both the duel location and method were decided by the beastmen. That being the case, if they still lost despite all that, they wouldn't have the right to make any more complaints. Especially because they were the prideful beastmen. The Demon Lord Eveam took that into consideration as she let the beastmen decide the conditions of the duel.

【Beast Kingdom: Passion】. Located to the east of it were the 【Valaaru Wilds】, the most expansive wilderness of the Beast Kingdom. And within that wilderness, a strange place existed.

There was a crater in that strange place, which seemed to have been created by some enormous object that fell from the sky. The radius of the crater was at least 200 metres. And it was that crater which was designated as the duelling location.

Furthermore, the conditions of the duel set by the Gabranth dictated that both sides would pick an equal number of people, who would then fight within the crater. There would be duels fought one-on-one, but also duels fought two-on-two or three-on-three as well.

One person from each side would be designated as the “King”. That person should be protected while the fight goes on. Of course, if that person were to fall in battle, it would mean a defeat for that side.

Spectators would watch from outside the crater. Of course, in the event that a spectator were to interfere with a duel, the side from which that spectator came from would lose the battle.

To be declared the victor, the opponent's King had to admit defeat or be rendered incapable of combat. This system of duelling was originally used between the

『Gabranth』 in order to resolve the conflicts between beastmen where neither side was willing to give in.

The winner was awarded status and honour, while the loser would lose everything. This method of dueling was called 《Agasshi》 .

Eveam understood the location and the method for the duel from the letter. Because she let the other side determine the duel conditions there were no major issues; however, there was a slight problem.

If it were Hiiro's magic, they would be able to arrive at the duel location in an instant. However, this only held true for places Hiiro had already visited.

Hiiro had gone to 【Passion】 before, but he had never been to the 【Valaaru Wilds】 . That's why it would be convenient for Hiiro to go there at least once prior to the duel.

Thus, when Hiiro was told about the location, he said, "Then I'll head off for a bit", as though he were going for a stroll. After saying that, he instantly disappeared from the room.

Hiiro's destination was 【Passion】 .

"Ugh, it's as large as ever, huh." (Hiiro)

The town's symbol was a large tree, the 《Tree of Beginnings – Aragorn》 . The town spread around this tree with the castle at the centre. Moreover, unlike the towns made by humans, the entire town was made out of trees. Houses were carved out within trees to create living spaces for the citizens.

Within the country was a clear flowing stream , and there, small fishes could be seen swimming freely within. It was a dwelling suitable for the beastmen, who lived together harmoniously with nature.

The royal castle, which was appropriately called the 《King's Tree》 , was where the royal family lived. A large number of gigantic trees surrounded it, giving it the appearance of a fortress.

In the town, many merchants and travellers visited, offering up their prayers to the 《Tree of Beginnings – Aragorn》 . 『Founding Beast King』 Jingwald set the tree as a symbol and ever since the town was built, it had been worshipped as a sacred tree.

A large number of people gathered at the town's yearly festival, the 《Origin Festival》 . In particular, there were many who would bring their children with them. They believed that during the festival, if the children climbed the 《Tree of Beginnings –

Aragorn》 and offered up their prayers, they would be able to receive divine protection from it.

Their wish was for the children to grow up to be strong and fine adults; the 《Tree of Beginnings – Aragorn》 was used to perform rituals similar to Buddhist prayers. Of course, such blessings were limited only to the beastmen's children. In the past, there had been a time when humans who were discovered trying to climb the tree had been executed.

As he looked up at the great tree, Hihiro uttered those words nostalgically. There were various reasons why he decided to come here.

The first was to have them guide him to the duel location. However, even without a guide, if he used the word 『Seek』 he'd be able to find it on his own, so he figured that he'd be asking them to guide him there on the side, as he just happened to be passing by.

The second was that he wanted to see the Beast King one more time. Although they had met once in the past, during the conference he didn't have much time and hence was unable to do much observing.

Moreover, he really wanted to try talking to the king who was willing to decide the future of his race using this kind of duelling method. If you had to describe him using one word, 'idiot' would be the most fitting, but Hihiro could not bring himself to hate such a person.

That feeling may simply have come from the fact that his first travelling companions had been beastmen. They were stupid, but honest. As for the king that ruled over such people, Hihiro felt that he was an idiot, but he couldn't help but have a slightly good impression of such a king.

Lastly, he wanted to fulfill the promise he had made to those companions of his. Although he had honestly forgotten about it until now, he had judged that this was the perfect opportunity to fulfill his promise.

Naturally, those companions were Arnold and Muir. It had been over half a year since he had parted with them. Hihiro was slightly anticipating how much they had grown since then.

Since quite a bit of time had passed since the half-year mark, Hihiro resolved himself for the scolding that he was likely to receive. However, since he had taken the trouble to come all the way here, he figured that he should at least drop by to give them his greetings.

For the time being, Hihiro had used the 『Change』 word to transform into a beastman. Then, Hihiro walked over to Rarashik's house.

He thought that Rarashik's house would be as old and decrepit as before. However, unlike when he last saw it, while it couldn't be said to be in the best condition, it had an ordinary door installed.

Hiiro then concluded that this was probably due to Arnold or Muir fixing things up. He opened the door and casually entered the house. But, there was nobody in the room.

Still, this had been the case before. Inside the house, there was a basement. Figuring that they would all be there, Hiiro was about to head over to the basement when his eyebrows twitched and he stopped moving.

"Hm? Who's there?" (???)

A voice came from behind him. Turning around, he saw the white-robed figure of a little girl with long ears. In her hands was a bottle of alcohol. No doubt, this girl was Rarashik.

"Yo." (Hiiro)

".....could it be that you are.....?" (Rarashik)

At first, she had looked at him as if he were a suspicious person, but soon gave a blank look as she stared at Hiiro.

"It's been a while, Chibi-Usagi." (Hiiro)

After hearing that nickname, she became convinced that it truly was Hiiro.

"It's you, b-brat?!" (Rarashik)

"Who else does it look like?" (Hiiro)

"N-no... it's just that...eh? Seriously?" (Rarashik)

Still unable to believe what she saw, Rarashik became confused. She knew that Hiiro was going to be on the enemy's side for the upcoming duel.

That was why Rarashik was confident that they would only meet on the day of the duel. However, Hiiro suddenly appeared in front of her, in her own house nonetheless. It couldn't be helped that she was surprised.

"The others?" (Hiiro)

Hiiro asked while completely ignoring Rarashik's panicked state.

"Eh? Ah, oh, so that's it. You came here to see them?" (Rarashik)

"Yeah, seeing as I'm here already." (Hiiro)

For a short while, Rarashik's eyes were blinking with surprise, but after letting out a deep sigh, she appeared to have calmed down as she gave a small giggle while smiling.

"I see, you came here to meet them. It is regretful, but they aren't here right now."

(Rarashik)

"They're not?" (Hiiro)

"Yeah, Leo-sama... no, I mean, they've gone out hunting a certain monster due to a command from the Beast King." (Rarashik)

"A command from the Beast King?" (Hiiro)

Why Arnold and Muir would be sent by the Beast King to exterminate a demon was puzzling to Hiiro. He would understand if it were a mission from the guild, but instead it was a rare direct order from the country's head.

"Yeah, it's a test." (Rarashik)

"A test?" (Hiiro)

Rarashik then explained precisely why they were undergoing such a test.

"Hou, so Ossan and Chibi are also going to be appearing in the duel? Additionally, in order to win, they've taken upon a request directly from the king?" (Hiiro)

"Precisely." (Rarashik)

This was completely outside of Hiiro's expectations. He didn't think that they would also participate in the war. The reason being that in the previous war, both of them had absolutely zero desire to fight.

Even if it was said to be for the sake of the beastmen, they were not the kind of people who would voluntarily go to war. In particular, as Arnold had Muir to take care of, it was unthinkable that he would be interested in something like war.

However, upon hearing the details regarding their participation in the war from Rarashik, Hiiro was informed that their true intention was to meet him. When he heard that, he couldn't help but become shocked.

"Well, the upcoming duel isn't just a fight to the death after all. It'll become a good experience for them, and they also said this, you know? That they wanted to show you how strong they've become." (Rarashik)

Hiiro glanced at Rarashik as she said this while grinning and let out a sigh.

"I see. Well, it's their life. They can do what they want, and I don't have any right to be telling them what to do with it after all." (Hiiro)

"Hohou, is that so." (Rarashik)

"If that is the case then it's probably for the best that we didn't end up meeting here." (Hiiro)

".....what do you mean?" (Rarashik)

"Right now I'm your enemy, right? At the very least, if they'll be fighting while carrying



the fate of the country on their shoulders, it'd be better if I didn't meet them now, right?" (Hiiro)

There was a good chance that the resolve that they had finally built up would waver. And if he had to fight them anyways, he wanted to see their strength when they were fighting seriously.

"Fuu~n, well, you do have a point there. However, did you not think that this would happen?" (Rarashik)

"Hm?" (Hiiro)

In a flash, Rarashik instantly appeared behind Hiiro. She wrapped one of her thin arms around his neck while thrusting a scalpel-like blade to his throat with her other hand. Her movements truly were worthy of being said to have been executed with god-like speed.

"If I restrain you here, it might contribute to bringing the Gabranth one step closer to victory.....perhaps?" (Rarashik)

"....." (Hiiro)

"And I also think those guys would want to meet you after all, kozou." (Rarashik)

"....." (Hiiro)

"Oh my? You might have been thinking that you've gotten stronger since the last time we met, but in spite of that, you still can't handle my speed, or something like that, right? Nahaha!" (Rarashik)

She smiled happily, but-

"That's right, I have gotten a bit stronger since then." (Hiiro)

Rarashik's eyes went wide in surprise. That was because Hiiro's voice came from behind her. When she turned around dumbfoundedly to check, Hiiro was leaning casually on the wall with his arms folded across his chest.

"H-How is that possible?" (Rarashik)

Rarashik looked back and forth between the Hiiro who hadn't moved up until now and the Hiiro who was currently behind her.

*Bon!*

"Bugh!?" (Rarashik)

When the Hiiro she had been restraining suddenly disappeared with a puff of smoke, Rarashik fell to the ground.

“O-ow...wha-what just happened?” (Rarashik)

“It’s just a clone.” (Hiiro)

“A-A clone...you say...” (Rarashik)

Indeed, the moment Hiiro had entered the house, he had realized that someone was coming from behind him, and immediately used the words 『Shadow Clone』 / 『影分身』 while hiding his presence with 『Transparent』 / 『透明』.

Incidentally, both of them were Set Words, so he was able to activate them instantly. Rarashik, who entered the house without knowing that, had been speaking to the clone all along.

“With this, I’ve returned the favor from before.” (Hiiro)

Previously, she had taken his back like she did just now in a single instant, causing him to feel a chill down his spine. That was why he had decided that the next time they met, he would return the favour. However, having been able to completely outwit her, Hiiro involuntarily smiled.

“...Haha, seems like this is going to be an even more bothersome duel for the 『Gabranth』 than I thought it’d be.” (Rarashik)

Having caught a glimpse of Hiiro’s true strength, it appeared that she was surprised with the extent of his growth.

“Fuu, that’s fine. No, it’s actually extremely mortifying that you managed to one-up me like that, but I’ll return the favor eventually. Did you just come to meet those guys?” (Rarashik)

# KONJIKI NO WORD MASTER

---

Chapter 163

Hiroyuki charges to Passion

---

Hiiro made an expression which showed that he was convinced with Rarashik's reason for coming here. Seeing as they both had the same destination, the two headed towards the 《King Tree》 together.

She said that she also had some business with the king, but-

“Besides, there's no way I could let myself miss out on such an amusing event, right?”  
(Rarashik)

Her smile was brimming with resolve/resolution. Even Hiiro acknowledged that if she was with him, the talk would go without any unnecessary hindrances and hence permitted her to join him without any words of opposition.

Some soldiers might remember his beast man face, and so he was asked by Rarashik, to wear a hood. Certainly, this way, he might be able to avoid any unnecessary conflicts.

However, upon entering the 《King Tree》, it was natural for others to stare at a person wearing a red robe in a manner that prevented them from confirming his identity.

However, as Rarashik was near him, they judged him to be her companion and so, nobody said anything. Before entering the 《Throne Room》 Rarashik informed one of the soldiers that she was seeking an audience with king.

The soldier bowed towards Rarashik with a nervous expression and entered the 《Throne Room》. After a while, he came back and permitted the two guests to enter.

Rarashik took the lead as Hiiro followed behind her.

(Hou, so this is the 《Throne Room》, huh.....and that is)(Hiiro)

He thought that as his gaze fell upon the majestic throne. Sitting on it was the beast king Leowald, who gazed at the two, with doubtful eyes.

Hiiro's eyes scanned the room thoroughly, assessing his surroundings. Near the throne stood a birdman, whom Hiiro had met once before. He seemed to be on guard against him and was glaring at Hiiro with sharp eyes.

“What's with the sudden visit, Rara?”(Leowald)

Leowald asked to Rarashik, while his eyes were fixed on Hiiro.

“No, it's nothing. I was just thinking of reporting my idiot students' current status and.....I wanted to introduce someone interesting to you.”(Rarashik)

“Hou.”(Leowald)

Everyone focused their gazes on Hiiro. Upon doing so, the birdman, Barid, attempted to approach Leowald in attempt to protect him, but was stopped immediately by the beast king himself.

“.....Is that the one?”(Leowald)

“Yes, I’m sure you’ll be surprised.”(Rarashik)

Leowald glanced at Rarashik, who showed a big smile, and returned his line of sight to Hiiro.

“..... You over there, take off your hood and show me your face.”(Leowald)

Then, just as asked, Hiiro took off the hood. The next moment, the atmosphere chilled. Especially Barid, who had previously met Hiiro in his beast man form, guarded Leowald by positioning himself before him..

“Rarashik-sama, what are you trying to do?”(Barid)

He questioned the woman; bloodlust oozed out of him with every word he spoke. Such a reaction was nothing out of the ordinary. After all, it was Rarashik who had guided Hiiro, an enemy, all the way to the throne room.

But she shrugged her shoulders as she spoke with a smile that remained unbroken.

“Well Hiiro said that he wanted to meet Leo-sama, so I just brought him here. I mentioned this before, right? That this boy was an acquaintance.”(Rarashik)

“B-But still!”(Barid)

Barid’s complaint was natural. Yet, no matter how much of an acquaintance Hiiro was, they were to duel with their respective countries at stake in a few day’s time. Moreover, he was the person they had to be most vigilant towards. Anyone would likely feel that it wouldn’t be too far off to think that Hiiro had come to steal away the life of the king in this instant.

“Calm down. This boy has really come here just to talk.”(Rarashik)

“Wh, Where is the evidence of that!”(Barid)

“After all, he is not someone who would do something that troublesome.”(Rarashik)

“.....Ha? T-Troublesome?”(Barid)

Barid became astonished when he heard Rarashik’s words. And then, a hand grabbed on to his shoulder.

“M, My lord?”(Barid)

“Step aside for a bit.”(Leowald)

“B, But!!”(Barid)

“Move aside.”(Leowald)

Being overpowered by the king’s stare, Barid reluctantly stepped aside. Leowald gazed at Hihiro and,

“It has been a while.....I suppose?”(Leowald)

Leowald asked.

“Aa, without a doubt, it has been a long time.”(Hihiro)

“The 『Evila』 I faced at 【Holy Oldine】 . That was you, right?”(Leowald)

“That’s right. At that time, you attacked me all of a sudden. Are all rulers here that quick to resort to violence?”(Hihiro)

“You bastard!”(Barid [Third wheel])

Barid spread his wings to fly, but was once again stopped by Leowald’s glare.

“Uu.....understood”(Barid[Third Wheel])

After Leowald confirmed that the wings were retracting, he once again looked at Hihiro with an inquiring stare.

“Those who are capable of talking to the king of a country like that are either a big shot or an idiot.....which one are you?”(Leowald)

“Isn’t it obvious that I’m a big shot?” (Hihiro)

Seeing Hihiro reply without a second’s hesitation, Leowald grinned.

“Gahahahaha! I see! This is definitely the same brat from that time! Gahahahaha!”(Leowald)

Seeing their King laugh in such an enjoyable manner, the soldiers’ faces went blank. The tense atmosphere from before vanished as if it was a lie.

“Well then, you certainly do seem to be Hihiro Okamura. However, you’re supposed to be the strongest war potential on the enemy’s side. Do tell me why someone such as yourself would come all the way here.”(Leowald)

“I have many reasons, but there are only two reasons that concern you people. One is to know about the exact location for where the battle will take place.”(Hihiro)

“Nh? You don’t know the battle place? I heard from the Maou that that place was fine, you know?”(Leowald)

While frowning, he asked.

“No, there is no problem with the place itself. I just need to know the exact location, so I came here.”(Hiiro)

“Hou, for what reason?”(Leowald)

“Because I’ll be transporting the guys from 『Evila』 there.”(Hiiro)

That had been written in the letter from the Demon lord as well. That a person from their side would be teleporting them to the battle location on the appointed/promised day. Of course, normally one wouldn’t think that a person capable of doing that would exist.

However, during the conference, Hiiro teleported the Demon Lord and others to the far away demon continent within an instant. That was why they judged that it was possible.

But as Leowald thought of why Hiiro would need to know the precise position of the battle location, it suddenly dawned on him.

“I see, your magic can’t take you to places you don’t know?”(Leowald)

“.....Hou, looks like you can use your head after all. I thought you were a complete muscle head.”(Hiiro)

On Hiiro’s words Rarashik laughed out loud with a pfffft, veins popped out on Barid’s head, and the soldiers gasped in fear. And the most important individual Leowald, was laughing cheerfully as he said,

“Gahahahaha! It is a fitting phrase! Isn’t it Rara!”(Leowald)

“Nahaha! It certainly is!”(Rarashik)

Leoward was laughing excitedly, as if he was having fun. The soldiers were fretting that a fight would break out due to such insulting words towards their king, but felt relieved once they realised their fears were baseless.

“Muscle head, huh! I believe, that was something Rara also used to address me! Gahaha!”(Leowald)[Seriously his laugh is creepy]

“But you really are one!”(Rarashik)

Looking at Leowald not getting even slightly agitated , Barid was baffled.

“I see, I see! So you want to know where the place is so that you can teleport there?”(Leowald)

“Well if I were to give a reason, then that would be the case.”(Hiiro)

“Mu? If you were to give one?”(Leowald)

“Yeah, even if you don’t tell me where it is, I’d be able to find it myself after all.”(Hiiro)

“Hohou, meaning that you have another reason for coming here?”(Leowald)

“Well, I just wanted to talk to you to see what kind of person you are. To learn more about the cheerful king who accepted this absurd duel.”(Hiiro)

“Gahahahaha! From your point of view, it may appear to be an absurd decision!”  
(Leowald)

“.....”(Hiiro)

“However, Hiiro, for us 『Gabranth』, who value power and bonds above all else, this duel is, in a sense, the best method that we could agree with.”(Leowald)

“.....Aren’t you just a battle idiot?”(Hiiro)

“You could say that. But it’s easy to understand. Is that not so?”(Leowald)

“.....I don’t hate it. That kind of easy to understand thing.”(Hiiro)

“Gahaha! I see, I see! So then? You said you wanted to try talking with me beforehand like this, but how was it? Did you learn anything?”(Leowald)

“Well, I guess that I can kind of understand the reason why you’re adored so much by the rest of the beastmen.”(Hiiro)

He was someone whose aura alone revealed him to be different from a normal person. He had a lively way of speaking and a fierce fighting capability. Furthermore, he had that ‘something’ which drew people to him.

Hiiro somehow felt that he could understand why the beastmen relied on Leowald. He had thought of the possibility of a battle occurring without them hearing what he had to say. Hiiro wasn’t so thoughtless as to think that it wasn’t a possibility

However, on the contrary, it looked like not only his power, but also his mind was good. Hiiro made a bitter smile, thinking that Leowald’s charisma was incomparably higher than that of the Maou Eveam’s.

Leowald must have been happy due to Hiiro’s words, as he once again began to boldly laugh.

Taptaptaptaptaptaptaptaptaptapt!



Thereupon came the sound of the footsteps of someone approaching them. Following that, a girl appeared behind Hiiro. She breathed heavily while grasping her chest desperately as she gazed towards the throne.

“I, I’ve heard that Hiiro-sama has come here.....is.....that.....true?”(Mimir)

As she said that, her eyes gradually widened. Her sight focused on a single person.

“.....Hi.....Hiiro.....sama?” (Mimir)

Hearing his name being called, Hiiro lightly turned his face to look behind him. Upon seeing the young girl, he paused to think for a moment. However, when he saw the large blue ribbon on her head, he went, “Oh?” and seemed to recall her as his eyes widened a little.

“You.....aoi ribbon, huh?” (Hiiro)

## Chapter 164 The Doting Beast King

---

If Hiiro recalled correctly, when he had previously come to 【Beast Capital: Passion】 half a year ago, he was able to enter the 【King's Tree】 , where the Beast King lives, through a series of unexpected events. During that time, he had met a lone, young girl while exploring the place on his own.

Her chestnut hair ran down to her waist, and a blue ribbon, which was large enough to be called her 'trademark', rested upon her head. Although she couldn't be said to be tremendously beautiful, her attractive, large, almond-shaped eyes and near-transparent white skin gave off the feeling that she would grow up to become a beauty in the future.

She had communicated with him by writing on something that looked like a board. It seemed that she had lost her voice due to an illness that afflicted her in her childhood.

Although it honestly had nothing to do with Hiiro, he remembered that, somehow, seeing her expression made him irritated. She was living for someone else's sake. That was something that would normally be said to be magnificent.

If she herself had fully desired to live in such a manner, he wouldn't have thought anything about it. However, deep in her eyes, he could detect traces of resignation and bitterness concealed.

And then, when she turned her smile towards him, he noticed that she was faking it, and found it annoying. Although it truly was just a simple whim, he, without thinking about it, restored her voice using 《Word Magic》 .

He had a feeling that it was something that he had to do, but at the same time, he also truly did feel that he wanted to see her real smile.

After healing her, he realized the significance of his actions and thus, after forbidding her to speak of him, quickly left the country. Had he remained there that time, it would have certainly become troublesome for him.

Of course, he had not encountered her after that event. Rather, he had honestly forgotten about that incident until she appeared in front of him just now.

She was wearing a similar blue ribbon to the one she wore the first time he had met her.

"Hi-Hihiro-sama....Hihiro-samaaaaaaaaaaaaa!" (Mimir)

She came running at him with full force, completely unlike a princess. He intended to avoid the incoming body blow, as he expected it would have considerable power, but—

“.....Hm?” (Hiiro)

He found his clothes being gripped by someone.

“C-Chibi Usagi!” (Hiiro)

It was Rarashik. Her lips relaxed into an amused grin, and said-

“It’s a man’s job to shut up and accept a woman’s hug, isn’t it?” (Rarashik)

“What are.....gufu!” (Hiiro)

He could have avoided it in time if his clothes had not been gripped, but as he was unable to do so, he was tackled by the blue ribbon girl, Mimir. The impact of her blow wasn’t something that could be called a mere ‘hug’.

Of course, she did not have the intention to attack Hiiro. It seemed that she was so overjoyed, she simply wished to embrace him.

“Hiiro-samaaaa!” (Mimir)

She rubbed her small head against his chest as her face broke into a smile. Seeing such a scene, everyone became dumbfounded, except for the grinning Leowald and Rarashik.

“Mi-Mimir-sama! Please separate from that person! He is an enemy!” (Barid)

Although Barid gave Mimir a warning, it seemed to not have reached her, as she raised her face and looked at Hiiro.

“Finally.....I was finally able to meet Hiiro-sama.” (Mimir)

“Ugh.....I got it, I got it already, so hurry up and get off of me!” (Hiiro)

As he said that, she tightened her embrace even more.

“I don’t wanna! You’re gonna go off somewhere again, aren’t you?” (Mimiru)

“Hah? What are you saying....” (Hiiro)

“Gahahaha! Hiiro, no matter what you say to Mimir right now, it’s useless! That child has inherited my stubbornness after all!” (Leowald)

Having felt that he saw something rare, Leowald let out a hearty laugh. Even if she was displeased with his words, Mimir gave a sour look and stubbornly held on to Hiiro, expressing her strong desire to continue holding him.

Seeing such a Mimir, Hiiro let out a shallow sigh and swiftly wrote the character  
『Untouchable』 .

*Suka!*

All of sudden, Mimir, who had been clinging to Hiiro, passed through his body.

“E.....Eeeeh!?” (Mimir)

Not only Mimir, but also the rest of the people in the room were so surprised that their jaws dropped.

Hiiro turned back towards Leowald as if nothing had happened. Mimir gave a blank stare as she once again stretched out her hand in an attempt to touch him, but-

*Suka!*

As expected, she couldn't touch him. Even though Hiiro was standing right in front of her, it was as if he were an untouchable hologram.

“Too bad, Blue Ribbon.” (Hiiro)

“Uuuu~ Hiiro-sama!” (Mimir)

Mimir, who inflated her cheeks with displeasure, stretched out her hand over and over again without giving up. However, it was as if she were trying to catch a cloud, as she felt no solid response.

“Hohou, so that is your magic, Hiiro.” (Leowald)

“Did it serve as a good reference, Beast King?” (Hiiro)

The two of them exchanged glances while faintly smiling at each other.

“Fufu, still, I was quite surprised to find out that Mimir had a side like this.” (Leowald)

“.....Ah!.....U-Uhm.....I'm sorry for my discourtesy, Otou-sama!” (Mimir)

After coming back to her senses, Mimir fixed her appearance as she hung her head in shame.

“It's alright, it just goes to show how much you like Hiiro, eh?” (Leowald)

Mimir's face flushed a bright red and it seemed as though steam would start erupting from her head.

“For you, who is usually more mature than anyone else, to lose your composure to this extent....you really are interesting after all, Hiiro.” (Leowald)

“I don't really get it, but it seems.....” (Hiiro)

Hiiro gazed at Mimir's face. Having suddenly been stared at, Mimir's heart thumped as she blushed even more.

“It seems like you have become a bit better at smiling compared to before.” (Hiiro)

Upon hearing Hiiro's words, her eyes widened as she grinned and-

“Yes!” (Mimir)

-answered energetically. It seemed that she was no longer lying to herself. Hiiro once again thought to himself that it had been worth it to take the time to cure her.

“However, Mimir, how did you know that Hiiro had come here? We hadn’t really been spreading the word about it, but...” (Leowald)

At Leowald’s question, Mimir said, “You see.....” while glancing at Rarashik. Following her gaze, they saw that a white figure had appeared on top of Rarashik’s head without anyone realizing it.

Hiiro had seen that figure before. According to Rarashik, the white figure was a 『Spirit』. Hiiro recalled that Rarashik had said its name was “Yuki-chan”. Its appearance was like that of a snow rabbit made by children on a snowy days.

“..... Chibi Usagi, don’t tell me you.....” (Hiiro)

“Nahahaha! Exactly! As soon as we came here, I sent Yuki-chan over to Mimir-sama.

Naturally, it was to inform her about your visit, youngster.” (Rarashik)

“Is that true, Mimir?” (Leowald)

When Leowald asked her, Mimir clearly nodded in affirmation.

“Yes. Although Yuki-chan can’t talk, I had her write the words using ice.” (Mimir)

*I see. So she became aware of my presence thanks to Yuki informing her.* Meaning that when she came running at full speed and hugged me, that was, naturally, Rarashik’s aim from the start.

“You’ve really done it now, oi.....” (Hiiro)

“Nahaha, it’s revenge for earlier.” (Rarashik)

As he thought, the root of this offense was her grudge from him one-upping her at her home. Rather than feeling angry over her unwillingness to let anything go, Hiiro was more shocked as he let out a sigh.

“B-By the way Otou-sama, why is Hiiro-sama here? Based on what Muir-chan told me, Hiiro-sama was, um.....standing on the 『Evila』’s side of the battlefield.” (Mimir)

Her face darkened with anxiety.

“He seems to have come here to talk to me about something.” (Leowald)

“A talk.....with Otou-sama?” (Mimir)

“Umu. Mimir, it’s fine if you stay here, but don’t get in the way, understood?” (Leowald)

“Y-Yes! Thank you very much, Otou-sama!” (Mimir)

After saying that, she bowed. Then, although Leowald had thought that she would move away from her current position, for some reason, she remained standing beside Hiiro.

“Mimir?” (Leowald)

“What is it, Otou-sama?” (Mimir)

“I-Iya, why don’t you come over here?” (Leowald)

“I cannot do that.” (Mimir)

“W-Why?” (Leowald)

“This place is good.” (Mimir)

She said that with an awfully brilliant smile.

“Otou-sama said that it’s fine if I stay here.” (Mimir)

“U-umu...” (Leowald)

Everyone else did, indeed, hear that.

“That is why Mimir will not part from Hiiro-sama’s side.” (Mimir)

Seeing her declare that so distinctly, Leowald judged that even if he said anything else, she would stubbornly refuse to listen. Therefore, he didn’t pursue the matter any further.

“.....I guess that it’s alright. Incidentally Hiiro, what do you plan to do after this?” (Leowald)

“Ha?” (Hiiro)

“After speaking with me.” (Leowald)

“I was thinking of having someone guide me to the duelling location, but do I have your consent for that?” (Hiiro)

“I don’t particularly mind, but even if we didn’t guide you there, you said that it wouldn’t be a problem, right?” (Leowald)

“I guess so. That’s why I figured it would be fine either way. So, frankly speaking, I don’t have anymore business to take care of here...” (Hiiro)

“..... In other words, you plan on going back?” (Leowald)

“Yeah.” (Hiiro)

At that moment, Mimir gazed at him sadly. Even though she had finally met him once more.....it was likely difficult for her to separate from him again.

“You’re not going to go meet with Arnold and Muir?” (Leowald)

“Yeah, I’ve already asked Chibi Usagi, but it seems like it’d be better not to meet them right now. I will set aside our joyous reunion for now.” (Hiiro)

“..... I see.” (Leowald)

Leowald folded his arms and faintly groaned as if he was in deep thought. Hiiro ignored him as he began to focus magic into his fingertips. The people who saw his actions were convinced that he was planning to leave the place.

“It was quite enjoyable.” (Hiiro)

And, just as he was about to write the characters,

“Well, wait.” (Leowald)

At Leowald’s words, Hiiro twitched and stopped moving.

“...What?” (Hiiro)

“There’s no need to rush like that. Just take your time here.” (Leowald)

Mimir, who had been making an uneasy expression, suddenly brightened and stared at Leowald.

“I refuse. There is no reason for me stay here.” (Hiiro)

At Hiiro’s words, Mimir instantly became depressed.

“Hou, I see. Even if we have prepared some entertainment in order to welcome you?” (Leowald)

Hiiro twitched as he heard those words.

“.....entertainment, you say?” (Hiiro)

“Yeah.” (Leowald)

“..... I’ll at least ask. What might that include?” (Hiiro)

Feeling that he had captured Hiiro’s attention, Leowald’s face relaxed.

“Actually, yesterday we were able to get our hands on some 《Aqua Hound Meat》 .....” (Leowald)

“I’ll be troubling you for a while.” (Hiiro)

Hiiro could never forget the name 《Aqua Hound Meat》. The reason being that, after coming to this world, it was the meat dish that had left the greatest impression on him.

Honestly speaking, he had felt that he wanted to eat that meat once more. That meat contained a deliciousness that seemed like it could make you melt with pleasure.

“Ohh, I see, I see!” (Leowald)

Leowald did a small fist pump and winked at Mimir. Indeed, he had intentionally made Hiiro stay for Mimir’s sake. He was a typical doting parent.

Mimir smiled like a blooming flower as she gazed at Hiiro’s face.

“Hiiro-sama, until the promised entertainment is prepared, please talk with Mimir!” (Mimir)

“How troublesome.” (Hiiro)

“Hau!” (Mimir)

Seeing her drop her shoulders as if she had received a large shock, Leowald said-

“I apologize Hiiro, but please do as Mimir wants. In exchange, we will prepare a satisfying meal for you.” (Leowald)

“..... It can't be helped.” (Hiiro)

Hiiro released the effect of 『Untouchable』 .

“Lead the way, Blue Ribbon.” (Hiiro)

“Hiiro-sama.....yes! This way please!” (Mimir)

As she said so, the both of them left the room.



# KONJIKI NO WORD MASTER

---

## Chapter 165

### Hiiro Leaves From Passion

---

“But for him to really be motivated by food, although I have heard about it from Arnold, but.....” (Leoward)

Leoward was told by Arnold that Hiiro is motivated by food and books, but for him to actually take the bait that Arnold set for him is a bit disappointing..

“That is where Hiiro’s Charm is at.....that’s what those idiots were saying.”  
(Rarashik)

Rarashik speaks while shrugging her shoulders.

“But still, is it really alright? To leave Mimir-sama in their hands.....” (Barid)[ET: Leaving the name as it was in chapter 163]

Barid’s anxiety is reasonable. Hiiro is, to put it bluntly, a completely unknown existence. It’s only natural to think that, what if something bad were to happen.

“I did it for Mimir’s sake. Wasn’t she also happy with it, eh?” (Leoward)

“H-However”(Barid)

Rarashik speaks with a smile.

“Calm down Barid. Just like I said before, he ain’t a guy who will willingly put himself into a troublesome situation. And he won’t do something that would make him lose his all food. Well this is all what I’ve heard from Arnold and Muir” (Rarashik)

“I can’t believe it!”(Barid)

“Then go ahead and observe him yourself”(Rarashik)

“That’s what I’m going to do” (Barid)

Saying that, Barid leaves the <<Throne Room>>.

“\*Sigh\* He’s a stubborn guy as always.”(Rarashik)

“Gahaha! Seeing the truth through his own eyes. Isn’t that a good thing, Rara?”  
(Leoward)

“Well, I can’t refute to that” (Rarashik)

Seeing Leoward laughing happily, Rarashik thought about something and then asks.

“Leo-sama, is the reason you stopped the brat only for the sake of Mimir?”(Rarashik)

“Nh? that’s what I said, right?”(Leoward)

“.....I don’t think that’s all, is it?”(Rarashik)

“What you trying to say?”(Leoward)

“By any chance, could you be thinking about pulling the brat to our side or something?”(Rarashik)

“.....”(Leoward)

“Or making it hard for him to fight after letting him have all the taste of this country’s good qualities. Well, that’s only one part of the strategy, I think.”(Rarashik)

Thereupon, Leoward’s cheek slacken.

“No, well, I did have that intention at first”(Leoward)

“.....Then am I wrong?”(Rarashik)

“After talking to the brat, it just seemed impossible to do that.”(Leoward)

“.....”(Rarashik)

“He is pretty frank, for better or for worse . Arnold also said that before.”

“Yes”

“I understand it now. He will move as he wants. No matter what obstacles block his way.”

“.....”

“Right now he is for some unknown reason aiding the 『Evila』 . It is most probably impossible to change it. He himself wouldn’t try to overturn something he has already decided upon.”(Leoward)

“I see”(Rarashik)

“Even if it was due to him being hooked up to the food or books, he won’t change his mind. He is a person who won’t change something of great importance for some other reason.”(Leoward)

“Hoho, so Leo-sama understood him to this extent.....”(Rarashik)

For making a king of a kingdom to say so much about someone, generally is impossible for any person.

“And you know what, Rara? The reason that it’s for the sake of Mimir is the greatest reason of all.”(Leoward)

“.....This foolish doting parent.”(Rarashik)

“Gahaha! That’s the best compliment for me! Gahahahahaha!”(Leoward)

“Knowing it’s you, I thought that you might be thinking of taking him in as a husband for Mimir-sama.”(Rarashik)

“What are you saying, Rara?”(Leoward)

Rarashik judges that her thinking was going too far after seeing Leoward looking at her blankly in amazement.

“Ain’t that a natural thing! Mimir has taken a liking to him a lot! And he also is her benefactor! No wait.....Kukuria also said that she wanted to meet him.....”(Leoward)  
[ET: Really great bastard]

Hearing his words, Rarashik’s mind goes completely blank “What?”

“If Kukuria also likes him, then he will become the husband of both my daughters! Yeah, let’s do that! Gahahahaha!” [ET: HELL WITH HIM!!!!!!]

Seems like her thinking was not far too much but far too less. Rarashik thinks while looking at him with scornful eyes.

(It’s gonna be troublesome for that brat from now on.....really troublesome.)

Thinking about Hiiro’s future, she prayed for him in her heart.

.  
. .  
.

Mimir brought Hiiro to a familiar place. It was the garden where Mimir and Hiiro first met.

It’s appearance was the same as it was half a year ago, but the blue sky can be seen from here, so it wasn’t a bad place.

Mimir moves towards the centre of garden with a happy expression and suddenly starts spinning. She grasps Hiiro and brings him forward and then slowly bows her head.

Hiiro conflicted that why would she do something like that, but the next words cleared his doubts.

“I will say it once more. I am really grateful to you for bringing my voice back that time.”(Mimir)

Tears were flowing from her face while she said that.

“Ah, I’m sorry. I was just so happy to say the words of gratitude to you that.....”(Mimir)

She wipes her tears off and shows a strained smile. Hihiro scratches his his head in embarrassment and slowly stands in front of her.

SFX: Ton.....

He gently with his index finger touches her forehead. Mimir while blushing, touches her forehead a little later.

“Hi-Hihiro-sama.....?”(Mimir)

“I said it before, right? That you owe me this favour and you’ll have to pay it back someday. So don’t forget it till then”(Hihiro)

As if these words won over her heart, she shows her best smile.

“Yes! Someday I will, definitely!”(Mimir)

.  
. .  
.

Barid couldn’t believe the scene that was taking place in front of him. That was because Mimir was showing an expression she has never shown to anyone.

Mimir smiles after Hihiro poked her forehead and said something. Her smile was not a strained one, but it was the one that has the power to fascinate anyone.

In truth, Barid too was fascinated by her smile.

He thought, even though he is the benefactor for Mimir, but Hihiro is not person who is worthy of faith due to him being on the enemy side.

Thanks to Hihiro, the war they could’ve won ended up with them losing. He can’t put his faith in Hihiro like Rarashik or Leoward.

He came till here thinking that he will have to protect Mimir if something happens even if he has to put his life on line, but he was taken aback seeing Mimir’s happy expression.

Right now, they both are enjoying the <<Aqua Hound Meat>>. Seeing the figure of the boy eating it with a happy expression, Mimir keeps on smiling.

No matter how anyone saw it, it was a peaceful scene.

(Just what is he.....?)(Barid)

He can't understand about the boy named Hiiro more and more. Just when he thought for what reason he came in the centre of enemy territory, that turns out to be that he wanted to talk with the King.

And furthermore, he is nonchalantly eating a meal in the enemy's castle.

He is one that surpasses common sense. Whatever he does is something a person with common sense won't do. Barid for the first time thought to peep in someone else's mind.

'There should be a limit to being unusual'. Barid's head was about to go haywire, due to the impossible to understand existence.

But strangely, he feels relaxed by looking at him. His mind says not to drop his guard, but his heart says the opposite.

That might be definitely due him seeing Mimir's smile. And before he knew it, the soldiers who were to escort her as bodyguards were also smiling while eating the meal.

He listens carefully, seems like they are talking about Arnold (mostly bad-mouthing him and telling their personal experience with him).

".....What do you think?"(Barid)

When Barid murmurs as such,

".....Really Fun"(Putis)

From behind Barid, a cute voice came from a small person wearing cartoon costume of a bear.

She is one of the <<Three Beast Warriors>>, Putis.

"Is it.....fun?"(Barid)

Putis replies by nodding her head in agreement.

While they both were looking at each other, Hiiro finishes his food and leaves that place with Mimir. Most probably, they're returning to the <<Throne Room>>

"I will follow them. I leave the observation from outside to you."(Barid)

After taking a glance at her nodding, he leaves that place too.

.

.

Seeing Hiiro who has returned to the <<Throne Room>>, Leoward shows a wry smile.

“Going back already?” (Leoward)

“Yeah, my works all done.” (Hiiro)

Seeing Mimir’s gloomy expression, anyone would try to lend her a hand, but it’s also a truth that they can’t keep Hiiro here forever.

She also knows that. But she is bearing an incomprehensible feeling. She doesn’t know when again they will meet after today.

When she thinks that, it’s natural for her to make a gloomy face. Even the dense Hiiro understands the fact that she is feeling lonely.

That is because he has seen this type of face a lot of times in his travels. But he can’t just remain here always. There is something he has to do, no, he wants to do.

“Chibi-Usagi, tell them that I’m looking forward to meeting them.” (Hiiro)

“No problem, but don’t forget? That I’m also entering the duel?” (Rarashik)

“Yeah, I know that” (Hiiro)

This is because Aquinas was really afraid about her participation in the duel, to an extent that he wanted for Hiiro to help him. That explains that she is a lot powerful.

“Ah, and I already heard about the case in which that old man disclosed a lot about me from Mimir. Looks like he needs a punishment now, so don’t tell him about this matter or else he will run away, okay?” (Hiiro)

“Y-Yeah” (Rarashik)

Rarashik’s cheek cramped upon seeing Hiiro’s evil smile and prays for Arnold thinking his life is soon going to end.

Hiiro sighs on seeing the depressed Mimir.

SFX: Ton.....

Her forehead is once again poked.

“Eh.....?” (Mimir)

“Let me hear your song next time” (Hiiro)

“.....Hiiro-sama?”

“You said it’s your good point, right? Or are you not confident?”(Hiiro)

“N-No! I will keep on practicing! A lot of it for Hiiro-sama!”(Mimir)

“.....is it good to have high expectations?”(Hiiro)

“Y-yes”(Mimir)

Seeing her reply with a happy expression, he turns his line of sight to Leoward.

“Beast King”(Hiiro)

“Yeah”(Leoward)

After they glare at each other for a while,

““Next time we meet a battleground!””

Both say the same words at the same time as if understanding each other.

SFX: Flash!

And Hiiro, uses his ‘Transfer’ words and disappears from that place.

“He went already”(Leoward)

Leoward says as such while facing Barid who is standing in besides him.

“Yes!”(Barid)

“And? How was he?”(Leoward)

“.....no matter what he is, for now he is our enemy.”(Barid)

“Pfft.....for now.....eh?”(Leoward)

Leoward laughs while seeing Barid speaking soft words that he rarely ever speaks.

‘He even changed Barid’ when he thought that his desire for getting Hiiro on their side and as his son-in-law increased greatly.

(I just said it as a joke that I want him as my son-in-law, but looks like I need to think about it seriously now)(Leoward)

His cheek slacken a bit, when he felt excitement in his heart. He also wants to fight with Hiiro once.

(For getting me this excited. Interesting! I’m gonna get you as my son-in-law by sheer strength, Hiiro.)(Leoward)

The Beast King makes a decision in his mind 'It's for this country's sake and for my daughter's sake!!'.



## Chapter 166

### Victorias' Circumstances

---

(Author's Note: Let's slow down the story a bit..... The action scenes and (finally) the duel will happen in the next chapter)

While experiencing the hustle and bustle of 【Victorias】' royal castle, a single young lady was being tormented by her thoughts.

Apparently, during the peace conference, negotiations with the 『Evila』 had broken down. At the same time, she heard that the military higher ups and her father, Rudolf, had gone missing.

Yes, the young lady was the first princess, Lilith. She had not been told all the details regarding the conference.

She heard that even the heroes, whom she was on friendly terms with, were on an escort mission for the conference. That was the reason they weren't at the castle at the moment.

News of the failed diplomacy attempts had been reported. Thus, nobles arrived at the castle one after another, panicking and holding discussions. The faces of the soldiers were also fraught with tension, and their frustration was evident.

Thus, it was then that Lilith was spotted by Vale Kimble: 2nd lieutenant of the 『Humas』 army, the heroes' trainer, and the one who had been assigned to defend the castle walls. Vale then immediately approached her.

“Ah, Lilith-sama!” (Vale)

“Vale-san! Um, is it really true? That..... that father and the other captains are missing.....?” (Lilith)

“Ah, yes.....” (Vale)

Not having any good news to deliver, Vale looked worried.

Upon seeing Vale like that, Lilith felt that something was off; she tilted her head and asked:

“Di, did a problem arise?” (Lilith)

She wondered if there was a problem even more serious than the disappearance of the King.

“Ah, no..... that is.....” (Vale)

Because it was such a difficult thing to say, Vale was hesitant.

“Please tell me!” (Lilith)

Although she was scared, Lilith steeled herself and raised her voice. After seeing Lilith’s resolve, Vale swallowed nervously.

“.....I understand. The truth is.....” (Vale)

The soldiers who came back from the war told Vale about the events that had transpired. The events at the conference, at the 【Demon Capital: Xaos】 ; he himself couldn’t believe his own words as he explained what happened to Lilith.

“Such, such a thing..... that can’t be true.....” (Lilith)

Lilith muttered as she trembled upon hearing what happened.

“.....I know how you feel. However, up until now, there has been no word from the King nor the heroes, so you can’t help but think that perhaps.....” (Vale)

“I, I don’t believe it!” (Lilith)

“Lilith-sama.....” (Vale)

“I mean! Things like father turning into a monster and the heroes dying..... I don’t believe that Taishi-sama would be beaten by the enemy! (Lilith)

Lilith was desperately trying to hold back her tears; Vale, with a painful look, said:

“.....It is with my deepest regrets that I inform you of this.....” (Vale)

Lilith’s face became increasingly pale, and then.....

“Lilith-sama!?” (Vale)

Vale managed to catch Lilith as she fell. It appeared that she could no longer handle the shock and fainted.

It should be noted that Lilith, out of everyone in the country, was the one who worried the most about the King and the heroes. Learning of their situation was a big shock.

Vale, understanding how she felt, worriedly stared at her face.

“Anyone! Is anyone there?!” (Vale)

Hearing his shouts, two maids quickly rushed over. Vale asked them to carry Lilith to her room.

Vale then walked to a different room.

This was the King’s bedroom. Incidentally, it was also the Queen’s. Inside, the Queen was resting on the bed, after having collapsed for the same reason as Lilith.

Vale asked the maid beside the door for permission to enter. She went inside and came out after a while. She then opened the door.

Although he was given permission to speak with her a little, Vale still felt tense as he carefully stepped inside.

Inside the large room was a huge bed, highly decorated as one would expect. He could feel an aura of exhaustion coming from Maris, who was lying on top of it.

“You are..... the one who trained the heroes, right?” (Maris)

Moving only her eyes, a trembling voice came from her slender throat.

“Yes! I am the second lieutenant of the army, Vale Kimble. For seeing me despite the current situation, I give you my utmost gratitude.” (Vale)

“..... How are things going? Do we know the full extent of the situation yet?” (Maris)

She said without any strength in her voice.

“Yes! Because of my impudence, Lilith-sama has also fainted.” (Vale)

“..... Is that..... so. That child has heard as well huh.....” (Maris)

“I deeply apologise, there is no excuse for what I did! As for my punishment.....” (Vale)

“No, it’s fine.” (Maris)

“.....?” (Vale)

Vale believed that he was the cause of Lilith’s’ collapse. Thus, he was surprised when Maris forgave him, even though he was expecting punishment for his actions.

“That child is that man’s daughter. She has a right to know. Although the result of that knowledge left pain in her heart, you did nothing wrong. So please stop worrying about such things.” (Maris)

“The, then...” (Vale)

“It’s that child’s responsibility to overcome such difficulties by herself. It’s alright. She is stronger than I am. She will surely find the correct answer.” (Maris)

“Ha, haa.....” (Vale)

“More importantly, we must discuss what lies ahead. This country has become unstable. We need someone to step up and manage the country. We have no idea when the other countries might attack.” (Maris)

That much was obvious. Certainly it could be said that the country was currently in great turmoil. The King, who was the pillar of support for the country, had disappeared. The heroes, the hope of the country’s citizens, failed to return as well. Moreover, most of the army’s commanders were lost.

Now, the country's war potential had become remarkably small. Rumors were abound between the citizens as anxiety settled in. If this situation were to continue, the other countries might take this opportunity and invade.

That was why there was a need for someone who would rise to the top and bring everyone together. Normally, it would be Queen Maris or First Princess Lilith who would unite everyone. However, their current state prevented them from doing so.

Furthermore, Vale alone didn't have the ability to organize everyone.

"How frustrating", Vale thought. He didn't have the sufficient charisma to attract people in such a way. He himself was aware of that fact.

As Vale was worrying about what to do,

"Is it alright if I rely on you? I think that you, who should be well known amongst the soldiers, would be more capable than I am. (Maris)

As Maris asked him about it, he made an apologetic expression.

"N-no..... I cannot simply....." (Vale)

"Is..... that so? Lilith also made a similar face....." (Maris)

As she smiled bitterly, Vale felt that Maris did not want to suffer the repercussions of their country's actions even though she was the Queen. He thought that this person who was supposed to succeed the king, even for just an instant, should stand up and govern the country, no matter how harsh the circumstances may be.

Moreover, Lilith was Lilith. Although he could understand her position, he felt that her heart was too weak. With the current situation, he thought that she would show more resolution.

"However, it is as expected; if the Queen that supports the country was someone like Lilith, someone greater than myself, the citizens of the country would have peace of mind....." (Maris)

".....I suppose....." (Vale)

At that time, Maris gazed at Vale who looked like he had suddenly realised something.

"What?" (Maris)

"N, no..... I, it's just that, I know of someone who can lead us in this situation." (Vale)

"You know..... someone?" (Maris)

"Yes" (Vale)

".....Is that person trustworthy?" (Maris)

"It is someone you know." (Vale)

At his words, Maris' eyes widened as she realised who he was talking about.

“Bu, but that person shouldn’t be able to come back yet right?” (Maris)

“No, that great person can. That person can’t shut up about this country’s affairs. It’s just a hunch, but soon.....” (Vale)

Just then, one of the maids drew close to Maris and whispered something into her ear. Then, with medicine in hand and a smile she said,

“Speak of the devil and he shall appear.” (Maris)

“Cou, could it be, my Queen?” (Vale)

“Yes, that person is right outside this room. He has my permission to enter.” (Maris)

At her words, the maid walked towards the door. The two then gazed towards it.

And at the appearance of that person, both of their faces showed expressions of relief.

“Please excuse my intrusion. Nn? What, Vale is here as well?” (???)

That person was Judom Lankars, the Guild Master.

(Author’s Note: I wrote a special work for Christmas so look forward to that as well. I’m dying due to the large number of characters. The chapters will be divided between Christmas Eve and Christmas Day)